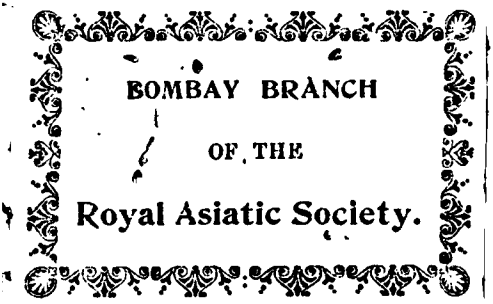
00029993

947.76
Kin /Inv
29993



Digitized with financial assistance from
Hemendra Kothari
on 06 November, 2019

THE

INVASION OF THE CRIMEA.

Map N° 1 Frontispiece

THE

INVASION OF THE CRIMEA:

ITS ORIGIN,

AND

AN ACCOUNT OF ITS PROGRESS

DOWN TO THE DEATH OF

LORD RAGLAN.

By A. W. KINGLAKE.

29993 ac

ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY LIBRARY OF THE BOMBAY BRANCH

VOLUME VIII.

FROM THE OPENING OF PÉLISSIER'S COMMAND TO THE DEATH OF LORD RAGLAN.

55-a-27

WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS
EDINBURGH AND LONDON.
MDCCCLXXXVII.

The Right of Translation is reserved.

947.77
K111/I111
29993

00029993

CONTENTS OF VOLUME VIII.

CHAPTER I.

THE NEW FRENCH COMMANDER AND THE PROSPECTS OF VIGOROUS ACTION WHICH HIS LEADERSHIP SEEMED TO BE OPENING.—THE STRENGTH OF THE BELLIGERENTS.—THE PROBLEM AWAITING SOLUTION.—THE RESOLVES OF PÉLISSIER.—THE IMPENDING STRIFE BETWEEN HIM AND THE EMPEROR.

I.

PAGE

Pélissier, ... 1

II.

Accord between Pélissier and Lord Raglan, ... 4
Full discretion demanded, ... 5
Prospect of the two generals being able to act in full concert, 5
Concord also to be expected with the Sardinian contingent, 6
And with Omar Pasha, ... 6

III.

Strength of the Allies, ... 7
Of the Russians, ... 7

IV.

The problem to be solved by the Allies, ... 8

V.

Pélissier's resolves, ... 10
Prospect of violent strife between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier, 13

CHAPTER II.

NEW COUNTER-APPROACHES AND CONSEQUENT FIGHTS ON THE WESTERN FLANK OF SEBASTOPOL.

I.

PAGE

The Cimetière Ridge, ... 15
Measures for securing it taken by the French and the Russians, . 16

II.

Todleben's project, ... 16
And Khrouleff's, ... 17
Both the projects adopted, ... 17
And executed in the night of the 21st, resulting in, . . 17
The Cimetière counter-approach, ... 17
And the Bay-head entrenchment, ... 17

III.

Pélissier, ... 17
His resolve to attack the counter-approaches on the night of the 22d, 18
Preparation on both sides for the night encounter, . . . 18

IV.

Strength of the troops about to be engaged, ... 18
Attack and capture of the Bay-head counter-approach, . . 19
The Cimetière counter-approach, ... 19
Power of the Central Bastion to take part in the fight, . . 19
Attack and first capture of the Work, ... 20
Its recapture, ... 20
The Central under fire of the French siege-guns, ... 20
Third capture of the Cimetière counter-approach, . . . 20
Fourth capture of the Work, ... 21
Fifth attack on the Work, ... 21
And its recapture by the French, ... 22

V.

Course afterwards taken by the French, ... 23

VI.

Signals from the Volokoff tower, ... 2
Their effect on Prince Gortchakoff's determination, . . 2
His decision, ... 2
Night of the 23d; the Cimetière counter-approach carried by the French, ... 24
And transformed into a siege-work, ... 2
Losses on each side, ... 2

CHAPTER II.—*continued.*

VII.

PAGE

Ground on which the sacrifices made by Pélissier were justified, . 25

CHAPTER III.

PÉLISSIER FIRMLY PURSUING HIS CHOSEN PLANS OF ATTACK IN DEFIANCE OF LOUIS NAPOLEON.

Impending strife between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier, . . 26
The Emperor, ... 26
Pélissier, ... 26
Marshal Vaillant, ... 26
Pélissier's determination to renew the attack upon Kertch, . . 27
General Niel at the Conference, ... 27
His written protest, ... 27
21st May. Pélissier to Minister of War, ... 27
22d May. Same to same, ... 28
Louis Napoleon to Pélissier, ... 29
Louis Napoleon again to Pélissier, ... 30
Pélissier to the Minister of War, ... 30
Louis Napoleon to Pélissier, ... 31
Pélissier to the Minister of War, ... 31
Position and lamentations of General Niel, ... 32
Niel's entire loss of power, ... 33
Antagonism between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier, . . 33
Pélissier's five resolves, ... 34
Louis Napoleon opposed to each of them, ... 34
Pélissier's resistance, ... 34
His method, ... 35
Occupation by the Allies of fresh ground towards the Tchernaya, . 35
Pélissier having his way, ... 36
Allusion to the Directory of 1796-97 and the great Buonaparte, . 37

CHAPTER IV.

THE RENEWED EXPEDITION TO KERTCH, WITH ITS SEQUEL IN THE SEA OF AZOF, AND ON THE CIRCASSIAN COAST.

I.

Relevance of some previous statements to the subject of this second Expedition, . . 38
Composition of the armada, . 39

CHAPTER IV.—*continued.*

	PAGE
Its course,	40
The strength of Baron Wrangel,	40
The predicament in which he was placed,	40
His resolve,	40
The power to which he succumbed,	[illegible]
Baron Wrangel's retreat,	42
Unopposed landing of the troops,	42
Sir George Brown's measures on shore,	43
Baron Wrangel's destruction of his Coast batteries,	43
Retreat of Russian troops,	43
Destruction of food by Baron Wrangel,	44
The squadron of Kertch,	44
M'Gillop's exploits,	44
The fate of the squadron,	45
Disembarking operations,	46
Channel into the Azof found and buoyed,	46
Miranda reaching the entrance of the Sea of Azof,	46
Advance of the land forces through Kertch,	47
To Yeni Kalé,	47
Disorders that followed the invasion,	47
The limited authority of Sir George Brown,	48
Kertch,	48
Its prayer to Sir George,	48
His rejection of their entreaties,	49
Disorders on the march,	49
And in Yeni Kalé,	49
Cessation of all misconduct of the English troops,	50
Measures taken by Sir George for the maintenance of discipline,	50
Their result,	50
The Tartars in Kertch destroying and plundering,	50
The measures taken by Brown and by the people of Kertch,	51
Failure of the measures taken,	52
Continued disorders in Kertch,	53
The committers of outrage,	54
Further continuance of the disorders in Kertch,	54
Lord Raglan's indignation,	54
His approval on 31st May of Brown's measures,	54
His completed criticism averted,	54
Sir George not blamable for omitting to repress the disorders of the French,	55
Because virtually unable to do so,	55
Comment on Sir George's course of action with respect to the disorders in Kertch,	55
Friendly disposition of some of the Tartars,	55

CHAPTER IV.—*continued.*

PAGE

Sufferings entailed on the sick and wounded Russians by the pillaging of the hospitals, ... 57
Letter on their behalf from Baron Wrangel, ... 57
The meeting at Yeni Kalé, ... 58
Results of the Kertch expedition, ... 58
The main object gained, ... 59

II.

The Allied Admirals entering the Sea of Azof, ... 60
Captain Lyons of the Miranda then taking the command of the united flotilla, ... 60
Nature of the operations undertaken in the Sea of Azof, . . . 60
Fate of the four surviving war-ships of the Kertch squadron, . 61
Unchallenged mastery of the Allies in the hitherto 'closed' sea, . 61
Access thus obtained to the interior provinces of Russia, . . 61
As, *e.g.*, to the country of the Don Cossacks, ... 61
The seat of industry that Lyons disturbed, ... 62
His task not one leading to battle, ... 62
His task against vessels found at sea, ... 63
And those that had fled towards land, ... 63
26th May. Operation off the Spit of Berdiansk, ... 63
The wrecks of the four war-steamers that had escaped from Kertch, 64
27th May. Off the town of Berdiansk, ... 64
28th May. Lyons engaging the port of Arabat, ... 64
Plan of summoning the authorities, ... 64
The rejections they elicited, ... 64
These compared with the acts of the authorities professing defiance, 65
Operations at Genitchi, 29th May, ... 65
1st to 3d June. Operations at Taganrog and the mouths of the Don, 67
The good seamanship manifested by the French and the English, . 72
5th June. Operations at Marionpol, ... 72
Operations at Gheisk, 6th June, ... 73
9th June. Operations on the shore of Kiten Bay, ... 73
Losses of the Russians, ... 74
Of the Allies, ... 74
Causes of their immunity, ... 74
The object of the Allies, ... 75
This in great measure baffled, ... 75
Greatness of the havoc, ... 75
Many of the destroyed vessels Greek, ... 75
The bearing of this circumstance on the Czar's sense of dignity, . 76
The moral stress put on Russia by taking the Sea of Azof, . . 76
Did the Czar's incapacity to defend his subjects tend at all to shake their old loyalty? 76

CHAPTER IV.—*continued.*

III.

PAGE

Attack on Soudjak-Kalé and Anapa recommended, . . . 78
Troops despatched for the purpose, ... 78
Fall of Soudjak-Kalé, ... 78
Attack of Anapa peremptorily forbidden by Louis Napoleon, . 79
Pélissier's determined resistance to the prohibition, . . . 79
Lord Raglan's censure on the French Emperor, . . . 80
Fall of Anapa, ... 80
The enemy's forced abandonment of the whole Circassian coast, . 80
Troops left to guard the Straits, ... 80
The rest brought back, ... 80

IV.

A contrast, ... 81
General results of the Kertch expedition, ... 81
These not attained by surprise, ... 8[illegible]
Nor (in the main) by defaults of Russian commanders, . . 8[illegible]
The phenomenon (so far) left unexplained, ... 8[illegible]
The true explanation, ... 8[illegible]
Lyons the originator and eager advocate of the Expedition, 8[illegible]
Carrying with him Admiral Bruat and Lord Raglan, . . 8[illegible]
Pélissier, ... 84
His propulsion of the measure against the will of his Emperor, . 8[illegible]
Effect of the success on the mind of Louis Napoleon, . . 8[illegible]
On the camps of the Allies, ... 8[illegible]
On the Russians, ... *86*
The stress it put on their Czar, ... 86

CHAPTER V.

OPENING OF THE THIRD BOMBARDMENT.—VICTORIOUS ASSAULTS ON ALL THE COUNTER-APPROACHES BY FRENCH AND ENGLISH TROOPS.—CONCLUSION OF THE THIRD BOMBARDMENT.

I.

Resolve of Pélissier to attack the counter-approaches in the Karabelnaya, ... 87
The concord between Pélissier and Lord Raglan, . . . 87
The shield this afforded against Louis Napoleon's interference, . 88
The vain resistance of Niel, ... 88
The French Emperor's prohibition, ... 89
Persistence of Pélissier, ... 89
The contemplated attack, ... 90

CHAPTER V.—*continued.*

II.

PAGE
Resources and preparatives of the garrison, ... 91
Resistance to Todleben, ... 91
Its consequence, ... 91

III.

Bombardment of the 6th of June, ... 92
Pélissier warmly greeted by the English troops, . . . 93
Significance of their cheers, ... 96
The bombardment continued at night, ... 93
Bombardment of the 7th of June, ... 94
Effect of the bombardment, ... 94
The fire of the English guns, ... 94
Crippled state of the enemy's works concerned in opposing the French, ... 94
The less injured state of those opposing the English, . . 95
The time for the bayonet come, ... 95

IV.

Plan and preparatives for the assault, ... 96

V.

Attack and seizure of the two White Redoubts, . . . 97
Seizure and abandonment of the Zabalkansky battery, . . 98
The Russians throwing forward two battalions of their Moroum regiment, ... 98
Movement by Colonel d'Orion under Bosquet's orders, . . 98
His overthrow of the two Moroum battalions, . . . 99
400 Russians surrendering, ... 99
French soldiery far out in front, ... 99
Fruitless advances of Russian troops, ... 100
Their reported achievements, ... 100

VI.

The Kamtchatka Lunette to be attacked by the French, . . 103
5.30 P.M. The French troops harangued by Bosquet, . . 103
Their advance in a state of warlike effervescence, . . . 104
The Vivandière, ... 104
First capture of the Lunette by French troops, . . . 106
Impetuous advance of the French on the Malakoff, . . . 107
Their retreat when attacked in strength by General Khrouleff, . 107
Khrouleff's recapture of the Kamtchatka Lunette, . . . 108

CHAPTER V.—*continued.*

PAGE

General Bosquet's measures, ... 108
Second and definitive capture of the Lunette by the French, . 109
The Malakoff judged by Todleben to be in imminent danger, . 109

VII.

'The Quarries,' 110
The enemy's measures of defence, ... 111
The great and exclusive advantage about to be enjoyed by the enemy, ... 112
Lord Raglan's dispositions for the attack, ... 112
Advance of our storming-parties, ... 113
Their seizure of the Work, ... 113
Capture of the collateral entrenchments, ... 113
Flight of the defenders, pursued by our troops, ... 114
Our men in the extreme front, ... 114
The tasks yet awaiting our people, ... 115
Major Armstrong, ... 115
Colonel Campbell's command, ... 115
Colonel Grant's meeting with Colonel Tylden, ... 116
The great strain put on the powers of those who remained, . 116
Colonel Tylden, ... 117
Thornton Grant, ... 117
Elphinstone, ... 117
Captain, now General Viscount Wolseley, G.C.B., . . . 117
Contests maintained by infantry between two opposite batteries, . 119
Boudistcheff's attack, ... 119
Alternations, ... 119
The English driving the Russians back into their fortress, . . 119
Attack made by the Volhynia regiment, ... 120
Its progress, ... 120
And final discomfiture, ... 120
Conditions under which our troops fought, ... 120
Colonel Shirley, ... 121
Another Russian column advancing to attempt the recapture, . 121
Prostrate state of most of our men, ... 121
Show of resistance attempted by some officers and men, . . 122
Its effect, ... 122
The Russian column faltering and coming to a stop, . . 123
And falling back, ... 123
The English at break of day still retaining their hold, . . 123
The share Fortune had in bringing about this result, . . 123
Execution meanwhile of the needed works, ... 124
Colonel Campbell, ... 124
Captain Wolseley, ... 124

CHAPTER V.—*continued.*

VIII.

PAGE
Killed, wounded, and missing, . . 125
Spoils, ... 125

IX.

The Allies on their advanced front, ... 125
Change experienced by the garrison and inhabitants, . . 126

X.

Result of the Third Bombardment, ... 126

CHAPTER VI.

THE SIEGE AND DEFENCE CARRIED ON TO THE CLOSE OF THE FOURTH BOMBARDMENT.

I.

Continued strife between the French Emperor and Pélissier, . 127
Louis Napoleon unaware of the way in which his plan had collapsed, ... 131
How the Emperor (against his own wishes) prevented all recourse to field operations, ... 131
Course taken by Pélissier, ... 133

II.

The affliction endured by Pélissier, ... 133
Its apparent effect on his judgment during nearly eight days, . 133
Changes during the interval undergone by Pélissier's mind, . 134
10th of June; apparent accord between Pélissier and Lord Raglan, 134
Pélissier, however, soon refusing to assault the town front, . . 135
His removal of Bosquet from command in the Karabelnaya, . 136

III.

Designed movement on the Tchernaya, ... 137
Main design of the Allies against the Karabelnaya, . . . 138
Their plan of a preliminary bombardment, . . . 138

IV.

The fourth bombardment, . . 138
Reply of Russian batteries, . . 140

CHAPTER VI.—*continued.*

PAGE

This regarded by the besiegers as weak, ... 140
The effect like that of a stratagem, ... 140
The Allies lulled into a faith that Sebastopol was ready to fall, . 140
Exultant opinion in camp, ... 141
The force of this belief, ... 141
Its impact on the troubled mind of Pélissier, . . . 142
Lord Raglan sharing the belief of the camp, . . . 142
But not moved towards changes of plan, ... 142

V.

Morning of Sunday the 17th, ... 142
Pélissier at the English headquarters, ... 142
Concerted plans of the two commanders, ... 142

VI.

Pélissier's sudden change of purpose, ... 143
Not imparted at the time to Lord Raglan, ... 144
Its purport, ... 144
Its bearing, ... 144
Question why Pélissier thus acted, ... 146
His change imparted to our Chief Engineer, . . . 146
And by him to Lord Raglan, ... 147
Lord Raglan's determination, ... 147

VII.

Night of the 17th of June, ... 148
Movements of English and French troops, ... 148
These movements described by the enemy, ... 148
Bombardment at night by vertical fire, ... 148
The enemy repairing and even augmenting his batteries, . . . 149

CHAPTER VII.

EIGHTEENTH OF JUNE.—ABORTIVE ATTACKS OF THE ALLIES ON THE KARABELNAYA DEFENCES. — THE VICTORIOUS OPERATION EFFECTED BY GENERAL EYRE.

I.

The infantry of the garrison preparing to fulfil its task, . . 150
General Khrouleff, ... 150
The nature of his task, ... 150
The garrison made aware of the besiegers' designs, . . . 151
And preparing accordingly, ... 151

CHAPTER VII.—*continued.*

II.

PAGE
Pélissier's dispositions, ... 151

III.

Post chosen by Lord Raglan, ... 153
Midnight at the French headquarters, ... 153
Pélissier's personal movements, ... 153
What he saw and heard before sunrise, ... 154

IV.

General Mayran's premature attack, ... 154
Pélissier vainly launching his signal, ... 156

V.

General Brunet's attack, ... 156

VI.

General d'Autemarre's attack, ... 157

VII.

The bearing of the hindrance encountered by d'Autemarre on Lord Raglan's course of action, ... 161
Motives tending to govern Lord Raglan's decision, . . . 161
His resolve, ... 163

VIII.

Measures for assaulting the Redan, ... 163
The two columns under Campbell and Yea, ... 164
Sir George Brown in the immediate command, . . . 164
But Lord Raglan present in person, ... 164

IX.

The column led by Campbell, ... 164
No means enabling the column to reach its chosen point of attack, 165
Advance of the covering party, the Engineers, and the bearers, . 166
But not of the 'main column,' 166
The fire encountered, ... 166
The ladder-party, ... 167
Gerald Graham and the sailors, ... 167
Murray mortally wounded, ... 167
Interposition of Colonel Tylden, ... 167

CHAPTER VII.—*continued.*

PAGE

Resulting in a move towards the salient of the Redan, . . . 168
Intensity of the fire confronted by Tylden, ... 168
Who was quickly struck down, ... 168
Course taken by Gerald Graham, ... 168
Disappearance of the Rifles, ... 168
Non-appearance of the 'main column,' 169
What remained in this part of the field, ... 169
The ladder-party brought under shelter, ... 169
The 'main column,' 169
The obstruction diverting it from the assigned course, . . 169
Course taken by the column, ... 170
Its actual and relative position when emerging, . . . 170
Campbell's previous words to Graham, ... 171
His vain expectation of a fight, ... 171
Todleben's policy, ... 171
General Campbell killed, ... 171
Colonel Shadforth killed, ... 172
Courses that might be taken by the 57th men, . . . 172
The Artakoff Battery, ... 172
The Riflemen quitting their ground, ... 173
And forming up with some men of the main column and others, . 173
The united force moving against the Artakoff Battery, . . 173
Their subsequent course, ... 173
Lord West acceding to the command, ... 174
The resources at his disposal, ... 174
His reluctance to believe that he was powerless to execute an attack, 175
His direction to Gerald Graham, ... 175
State of the 'ladder-party,' 175
Its numerical strength, ... 176
The ladder-party brought out over the parapet, ... 176
Without waiting for the covering line of skirmishers, . . . 176
And afterwards brought back under the parapet, . . . 176
The admiration and approval bestowed on Graham and the sailors, 177
The sole means at Lord West's disposal, ... 177
His vain efforts, ... 178
Orders sought and obtained, ... 178
From Sir George Brown, ... 179
The accidents which marred the advance of the column saved our troops from great sacrifices, ... 179
Losses, ... 179

X.

An impatient lieutenant of Sappers, ... 180
Allusion to his subsequent career, ... 181

CHAPTER VII.—*continued.*

XI.

	PAGE
Troops assembled and launched for attack on the eastern flank of the Redan,	181
Composition and number of force under Yea,	181
Strength of the column moving with him,	182
Advance of the column,	182
The works it confronted,	182
The fire incurred by this column,	182
The remains of the Riflemen coming up to the Abattis,	185
And clinging to the ground they had won,	185
Under a searching fire,	185
'The Engineer officer' at the Abattis,	185
The state of the 'ladder-party,'	186
Duty of 'the Engineer officer,'	186
Approach of Colonel Yea,	186
Is accosted, but killed,	187
Captain Jesse, too, accosted and killed,	187
A like fatality overtaking others,	187
Order given by 'the Engineer officer,'	187
What to expect from the despatch of fresh troops,	188
The duty of an officer in command,	188
But on whom had the command devolved?	188
A'Court Fisher,	188
The course he took,	189
Withdrawal of the remains of the troops,	189
Just praise bestowed by the authorities on A'Court Fisher,	189
The loss of Colonel Yea,	189
And of other officers and men,	191
Advance and subsequent retreat of the supports,	191

XII.

Fire drawn on our trenches,	192
And especially on the spot where Lord Raglan was posted,	192
His directions to the staff,	193
His commanding Engineer torn from his side,	193
Others stricken,	193
The conditional measures,	193

XIII.

The bombardment ordered by Lord Raglan,	194
Its effect,	194
Losses resulting from the assaults on the Redan,	194

CHAPTER VII.—*continued.*

XIV.

PAGE
Prospect opened by the success of the fire from the siege-guns, . 195
Lord Raglan and Pélissier in communication, . . . 195
The two chiefs together, ... 195
Messages from d'Autemarre, ... 196

XV.

Continued operations of d'Autemarre's troops, . . . 196

XVI.

Pélissier, ... 199
His resolve to abandon the struggle, ... 200

XVII.

The movement on the Tchernaya, ... 201

XVIII.

The attack led by General Eyre, ... 201

XIX.

Losses sustained in the engagements of the 18th of June, . . 204

XX.

The high merit of the Russian defence, ... 205
Prince Gortchakoff's statements, ... 205

XXI.

Pélissier's explanations, ... 207
The real cause of his failure, ... 207
Todleben's comments, ... 209

XXII.

Costliness of General Eyre's victory in proportion to the advantages gained, ... 211

CHAPTER VIII.

SEBASTOPOL AFTER THE ENGAGEMENT.—GENERAL TODLEBEN WOUNDED.—HIS DEFENCE OF SEBASTOPOL.

I.

The veil between warring armies, ... 212
Between Sebastopol and its besiegers, ... 212

CHAPTER VIII.—*continued.*

PAGE

The garrison. Its achievement, ... 213
Its actual state of feeling towards the close of the engagement, . 213
The Czar's infantry in grave need of encouragement, . . 215
Whence apparently the fabrication of the 18th of June, . . 215
Thanksgivings, ... 216
Just right of the garrison to indulge in self-gratulation, . . 216

II.

Todleben wounded, ... 217
And removed from Sebastopol, ... 217
The part he still took, ... 217
The way in which, until wounded, he had brought his power to bear, ... 217
The difference caused by his removal, ... 218
No thanksgivings thenceforth for the Russians, ... 218
But approaching defeat in the field, ... 218
The position Todleben had held in Sebastopol, ... 219
And in the war generally, ... 220

III.

The glory attaching to the early defence of Sebastopol, . . 224
This kept veiled from the Russians themselves, ... 224
Words recalling the early defence of Sebastopol, ... 227
Inferences to be drawn from the early defence of Sebastopol, . 229
Defence of Sebastopol after the 17th of October, . . . 230
Todleben, ... 230
His superlative part in the war, ... 230
The maxim twice over refuted by the early defenders of Sebastopol, 231
His personal glory dissevered from the subsequent reverses of Russia, ... 232

CHAPTER IX.

PÉLISSIER AFTER HIS DISCOMFITURE.

The distressing position in which Pélissier stood, . . . 234
Increased means of acting against him acquired by the Emperor, . 235
Pélissier's strength in adversity, ... 235
The resources he disclosed, ... 236
Opportunities and successful endeavours of the English Government to check the Emperor's interposition, ... 236
Bosquet brought back to his former command on the Heights, . 237
And his opinion adopted by the Chief, ... 237
His resolve, ... 237

CHAPTER IX.—*continued.*

	PAGE
And brought to bear with effect,	238
Danger of the strife between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier,	238
The happily exerted qualities of Marshal Vaillant,	238
The power he wielded over the Emperor,	239
His tone towards Pélissier,	239
Success of Vaillant's efforts to prevent a rupture,	241
His endeavours to solace and pacify Niel,	241
Long concealment of the truth by the French Government,	241
Pélissier,	241
His distinct individuality,	241
His great worth as a statesman upholding the great Alliance,	242
And resisting his Emperor's interference in the conduct of the war,	242
As a commander in war,	245

CHAPTER X.

LORD RAGLAN: HIS (OF LATE) SMOOTH RELATIONS WITH THE HOME GOVERNMENT.—THE AFFLICTION HE SUFFERED FROM THE DISAPPOINTMENT AND LOSSES SUSTAINED ON THE 18TH OF JUNE.—HIS VITAL STRENGTH APPEARING TO GIVE WAY.—HIS GRIEF AT THE LOSS OF GENERAL ESTCOURT.—A SLIGHT AILMENT AFFECTING THE CHIEF.

I.

The Home Government co-operating harmoniously with Lord Raglan,	248

II.

Lord Raglan afflicted by the disappointment and losses sustained on the 18th of June,	253
Lord Raglan's vital strength seeming to give way,	254
The strain that had been put upon him,	254
What within less than a year he had endured and achieved,	254
Yet this only one epoch in a glorious life,	259
The belief that care had been sapping his vital strength,	260
The change in his outward appearance,	261

III.

Lord Raglan afflicted by the death of General Estcourt,	261

IV.

23d June. Lord Raglan unwell,	262
But not prevented from transacting laborious business,	263
And not confined to his house,	263

CHAPTER XI.

CONTINUING SIEGE OPERATIONS.

PAGE

The French sapping more closely up to the works in the Karabelnaya, 265
And preparing to establish new batteries on ground commanding the Roadstead, ... 265
The English strengthening their hold of ground captured by Eyre, 265
And afterwards handing it over to the charge of the French, . 266
Continuance of the mining and counter-mining operations, . 266
The moral effect attributed by the Russians to their vigorous counter-mining, ... 267

CHAPTER XII.

LORD RAGLAN'S INSISTENCE ON CHANGES IN THE PLAN OF THE SIEGE.

Memorandum of the 21st of June, ... 269
Sent to the French Headquarters, ... 269
Objection to plans involving attacks on the Great Redan, . . 270
More especially if the Flagstaff Bastion were not to be also assailed, 270
Assaults on the Redan from a distance out of harmony with the new French design, ... 271
Despatch of the 23d of June, ... 271
Interview between Pélissier and Lord Raglan fixed for the 24th of June, ... 272
Abrupt cessation of the light shed by Lord Raglan's despatches, . 272
Niel's Note of the 26th of June, ... 273
Degree of importance attaching to this Note, ... 274
The negotiation making way, ... 275
And on foot till after the 28th, ... 275
Presumption that in this matter Lord Raglan must have seen his way, ... 275
Circumstances now enabling Lord Raglan to act on Pélissier cogently, 275
Circumstances tending to show that Lord Raglan in this matter had before him a fair prospect of success, ... 276
But not (in his place) any other, ... 277

CHAPTER XIII.

THE DEATH OF LORD RAGLAN.

The last despatch of Lord Raglan, ... 278
His illness, ... 278
His faintly uttered words to General Airey, ... 279

CHAPTER XIII.—*continued.*

	PAGE
His last hours and death,	280
Expression of his countenance after death,	281
Generals and Admirals next day in the chamber of death,	281
Pélissier's agony of grief,	282
Official announcements and condolences,	282
Private letter of condolence from the Queen to Lady Raglan,	285
The void caused by Lord Raglan's death,	287
This acutely felt by the officer who succeeded to the command,	287
Immediate evil to our army resulting from Lord Raglan's death,	288
Abrupt abandonment of the negotiation he had opened with Pélissier,	288
Loss of weight in Anglo-French council, resulting from the death of Lord Raglan,	289
The sorrow of our troops,	290
The example of Lord Raglan chosen as a guide,	290
Grief of Admiral Lyons and our seamen,	290
Feeling of the Sardinian army,	291
And of Omar Pasha,	291
Pélissier's celebrated General Order,	291
Feeling of the French army generally towards Lord Raglan,	292
The mortal remains of Lord Raglan conveyed with military honours to the Bay of Kazatch,	295

APPENDIX.

NOTES TO CHAPTER I.

1. Allies of the Sultan,	301
2. Feared to displease,	301

NOTES TO CHAPTER II.

1. Once more recaptured the work,	301
2. By first reducing the Malakoff,	302

NOTES TO CHAPTER III.

1. Investing the place,	302
2. With scorn, and with victory,	303

APPENDIX—*continued.*

NOTES TO CHAPTER IV.

		PAGE
1.	Destroyed them,	303
2.	For the protection of their lives and property,	303
3.	The piteous screaming of women,	303
4.	Meant to defend the place,	304
5.	That that last vessel perished,	304
6.	Harm to the town,	304
7.	To refrain altogether from sending it,	304
8.	His sovereign's imperious mandate,	304
9.	Proved able to set him aside,	305
10.	Protest against every such measure,	305

NOTES TO CHAPTER V.

1.	Havoc and ruin,	305
2.	Accepted the Prince's bold story,	305
3.	Respecting Skariatine, see Note in the Appendix,	306
4.	Will attempt a recapture,	306
5.	To retake the counter-approaches,	306
6.	Had been definitively won,	306

NOTES TO CHAPTER VI.

1.	Nothing that the Emperor ordered,	307
2.	By orders of the English Government,	307
3.	Might be well carried into effect,	307
4.	Of all the projected assaults,	308
5.	Confined to only a few score of men,	308

NOTES TO CHAPTER VII.

1.	Scarce exceeding, he thought, 150,	308
2.	A grape-shot striking his forehead,	309
3.	By a wisely designed cannonade,	309
4.	Only some 2000 strong,	309
5.	These engagements of the 18th of June,	309
6.	Were thrown back into the Ditches,	310

NOTE TO CHAPTER VIII.

1.	By their sacred costumes,	312

APPENDIX—*continued.*

NOTE TO CHAPTER X.

PAGE

1. Harmonious concert, ... 312

NOTES TO CHAPTER XIII.

1. Grace and perfect clearness of style, ... 312
2. Was no worse, ... 312
3. Appeal to Heaven, ... 313
4. Fresh disappointments and losses, ... 313
5. On board the Cafadoc, ... 314

ADDENDUM TO THE INKERMAN VOLUME, recording part taken in the battle by Captain, afterwards General, C. Morris, R.A., . 315

INDEX TO THE WHOLE WORK, ... 317

ILLUSTRATIONS.

Map I. Sebastopol, with the Eastern Counter-approaches, *Frontispiece*
,, II. Scene of the Fight maintained by Pélissier after acceding to the supreme command.—The Counter-approaches towards the Cemetery down to the 22d of May, . . . *to face* page 14
,, III. The Kertchine Peninsula, . . . ,, ,, 40
,, IV. The Sea of Azof, and neighbouring Lands, . ,, ,, 60
,, V. The Engagement of the 7th of June, . . ,, ,, 96
,, VI. Abortive Attacks of the 18th of June on the Karabelnaya Enceinte, . . . ,, ,, 154
,, VII. The Russian Position attacked and carried by General Eyre, on the 18th of June, . ,, ,, 202

FROM THE OPENING OF PÉLISSIER'S COMMAND TO THE DEATH OF LORD RAGLAN.

CHAPTER I.

THE NEW FRENCH COMMANDER AND THE PROSPECTS OF VIGOROUS ACTION WHICH HIS LEADERSHIP SEEMED TO BE OPENING.—THE STRENGTH OF THE BELLIGERENTS.—THE PROBLEM AWAITING SOLUTION.—THE RESOLVES OF PÉLISSIER.—THE IMPENDING STRIFE BETWEEN HIM AND THE EMPEROR.

I.

CHAP. I. Pélissier.

On the 19th of May, the command of the now great French army was assumed in due form by Pélissier. This short, thick-set, resolute Norman had passed his sixtieth year; but the grey, the fast whitening hair that capped his powerful head, and marked the inroads of Time, wore a strange, wore an alien look, as though utterly out of true fellowship with the keen, fiery, vehement eyes, with the still dark and heavy moustache, with all the imperious features that glowed, or seemed to be glowing in the prime,

CHAP. I. or fierce mid-day of life. His mighty bull-neck, strongly built upon broad, massive shoulders, gave promise of hard, bloody fights, gave warning of angry moods, and even of furious outbursts.

He however, it seems, could at pleasure unleash or control his fierce rage, thus treating wrath as a power that he knew how to wield, and not suffering the strong, useful demon to have a real mastery over him. He was capable of choosing and loyally pursuing a policy. He had Norman-like gifts that well fitted him to throw his antagonists in many a wrestle for power, and to make him a chief strong in war. His accustomed manner of speech, though so forcible, and so freely unbridled as to be in a sense dramatic, was after all—not a mask, but—the genuine, though boisterous utterance of a violent, absolute man. When first meeting in conference one who, though only then commanding a corps, still expended a huge force in speech, Lord Raglan was apparently startled, if not even a little repelled, and could not help telling his Government that Pélissier 'talked a good deal'; but he even then said, that the general so eager to speak seemed also eager to act, and he happily found before long that the Norman was 'as good as his word.'

In one respect, it is true, Pélissier's demeanour and speech tended strongly to mislead an observer; for, whether owing to whim or to exuberant strength, he greatly liked putting on what—apparently by a sort of convention—is accepted as the 'roughness of camps,' though all the while in reality he was

a man of high cultivation, and, moreover, one versed in those duties—the duties, I mean, of 'staff' service—which try the brain-power of officers engaged in the business of war. With the aid of such training as this, he had become fully capable of having or quickly acquiring the kind of statesmanship needed by one in the exalted position of commanding a splendid French army assembled in the enemy's presence, and, for instance, understood, to begin with, how best to maintain honest concert with the English allies at his side.

Without speaking except by mere reference of his achievements in Algeria, or recurring by more than allusion to even the caves of the Dahra, or repeating what already we have seen of his victorious self-assertion maintained against what was then lawful authority, one can say of this stubborn commander that, whether pressing hostilities by a normal exertion of power, or straining his warlike prerogatives to a questioned extreme, or bringing new life to an army benumbed by want of sound leadership, he never ceased to disclose a strong and persistent will.* He was specially apt for those trials which have to be borne by a general engaged in an obstinate siege, since he knew how to make cruel sacrifices for the attainment of many an object small enough at first sight in itself, yet forming one in a series of steps leading up to the end.

* A passing mention of the 'caves of the Dahra' appears *ante*, vol. ii. pp. 8 and 9. The last allusion in the above sentence is to Pélissier's wilful and victorious course of action, recounted *ante*, vol. vii., chap. vii., pp. 202 *et seq.*

CHAP. I.

He was by nature so manful, and—with justice—reposed in himself so unstinted a confidence, that—now in his sixty-first year—he could not apparently learn to become a respecter of persons set up in authority over him, and indeed had the air of regarding them with feelings scarce short of disdain. Untainted by any complicity in the plot of the 2d of December, and brought honestly up to the front by the strength of his warlike repute, he, when only commanding a corps, had been bold enough, as we saw, to begin protecting the army from Louis Napoleon's strategy;* and there well might be good hope that now, with his vastly extended power, he would firmly pursue a like course. Thus the man and the occasion were meeting. What France beyond all measure needed for the honour of her arms was a general (otherwise competent) who could and would push on the war without deferring unduly to her troublesome Emperor, and Pélissier fulfilled the condition.

II.

Accord between Pélissier and Lord Raglan.

Upon acceding to the command, he thus addressed the War Minister:—'I have already seen Lord 'Raglan. Upon our general course of action we are 'in perfect accord. In common with the whole 'army I have entire faith in the future. I thank 'the Emperor for the confidence he reposes in me. 'I have measured the extent of my great duties; but 'in order that I may fulfil them with success for

* See *ante*, vol. vii., his letter of the 5th of May, p. 279.

'any length of time, you must ask the Emperor to 'give me the latitude and freedom of action that are 'indispensable under the conditions presented by this 'present war, and especially necessary for preserving 'the close alliance between the two countries." *

CHAP. I.

Full discretion demanded.

Whilst Pélissier and Lord Raglan agreed on the questions then needing solution, there was also a well-founded hope that such differences of opinion as might afterwards spring up between them would be easily prevented from marring their power to act in due concert. To begin with, the new French commander, when acceding to power, seemed to hang on the words of his English colleague with an eagerness and a kind of devotion that he rarely if ever vouchsafed to any one other man; but, if swayed and won over (as indeed all men more or less were) by the personal ascendant of Lord Raglan, Pélissier had moreover convictions in harmony with the feelings he showed. He had the wisdom—State wisdom—enabling him to see the vital conditions on which the blessing of concord could best be attained and secured.

Prospect of the two generals being able to act in full concert.

Lord Raglan, we know, on the other hand, was richly endowed with the faculty—the noble, the generous faculty—which enables one man to appreciate the rights, the fair claims, the natural feelings of others. From the first, he had well understood that, supposing the French army to be ably and honestly led, its chief (from the nature of things) might fairly claim more sway in council than one who only commanded a much less nu-

* Rousset, ii. p. 183.

CHAP. I.

merous force; and common-sense also showed that in conference between the two chiefs, he to whom any project might tender what men call 'the 'labouring oar', would have a better right than his colleague to govern the joint resolve. Thus, for instance, Lord Raglan conceived that (along with the Ottoman army) French cavalry and other French troops might advantageously operate from Eupatoria against the enemy's rear; yet, because the proposal was one which sought to choose a new enterprise for some of Pélissier's troops, he, Pélissier, had a right to expect that any distaste for the measure which he might avow would be suffered, as of course, to prevail.

Both the chiefs, one may say, on the whole understood the true kind of relations that ought to be subsisting between them; and the time had now seemingly come when, unless our French allies should be hampered by the interference of Louis Napoleon, the armies of the two Western Powers might be acting as though they were one.

Concord also to be expected with the Sardinian contingent;

The spirit of concord thus ruling the French and the English headquarters carried with it the co-operation of the Sardinian contingent (placed, we saw, under Lord Raglan's guidance), and was destined besides to ensure the willing aid of the Ottoman forces in the Crimea; for by use of his mighty ascendant at Constantinople, Lord Stratford would soon be restoring the good-humour of Omar Pasha, and inclining him to act in smooth concert with the English allies of the Sultan. (1)

and with Omar Pasha.

III.

Exclusive of non-combatants, the forces that might thus be expected to act together harmoniously in the south of the Crimea comprised (with the 'Corps of Reserve'*) 100,000 French, 28,000 English, 15,000 Sardinians, and 45,000 Turks, making together 188,000 men.† Strength of the Allies;

To—not merely collect and despatch from afar, but to—throw forward into the presence of a distant enemy, and firmly establish in front of him 188,000 good troops, whilst also supporting this host by fleets of great strength that held absolute command of the seas, and could cover the landing of troops on any chosen part of the coast—this was bringing to bear on Sebastopol a mighty exertion of power; and, on the other hand, it would seem that in the whole of the Crimea, exclusive of its Kertchine Peninsula, where 9000 troops were assembled, the enemy could now only reckon some 80,000 infantry, with 12,000 cavalry, and 214 pieces of field artillery.‡ of the Russians.

* Which had partly come up from Constantinople, and would be all on the Chersonese within a few days.

† Niel's calculation, given by Rousset, ii. p. 190, but with a correction adding 3000 to his estimate of the English combative force. The 'Situation' of the French army (20th May 1855, Niel, App., p. 491), puts its gross numbers at 120,096, and shows a strength of 100,426 'disponibles.' With their 'indisponibles,' the French in round and gross numbers had 120,000, the English 32,000, the Sardinians 17,000, and the Turks, under Omar Pasha, 55,000—making up altogether for the Allies a gross number of 224,000 men.

‡ Todleben, ii. p. 258.

CHAP. I.

IV.

The problem to be solved by the Allies.

So, if only the Allies at this time had been free from the knot which still tied them to their siege of Sebastopol, they would seemingly have been able at once to reinvade the Crimea, to fasten upon it in strength from east to west, and with ease, or comparative ease, to reduce a fortress so weak on its northern front as to be there almost powerless against them, whilst lying besides at their mercy, because altogether cut off (by the supposed reinvasion) from its vital communications with Russia by either the land or the sea. But no such freedom belonged to the powerful yet fettered Allies. They had not yet expiated the fault of sitting down as besiegers before the south front of Sebastopol. Irresistible reasons, we know, forbade them all thought of enduring that their siege-works or their ports of supply should fall into the enemy's hands.* Yet, fitly to guard these possessions was a task, as we saw, ascertained to require 90,000 men, of whom all were perforce to be French, or French and English combined.† Hugely changed by this exigency, the problem no longer asked simply how best to conquer Sebastopol, but how best to do this concurrently with the furnishing of 90,000 men for another imperative task.

To answer the problem thus put, widely different solutions were offered.

* As shown *ante*, vol. vii. p. 278. † See *ante*, vol. vii. p. 288.

With the bulk of the 98,000 men that would still be left after furnishing the guard of 90,000, and also leaving a garrison at Eupatoria, it was possible to undertake field operations which might force the enemy to relax his hold of Sebastopol; but every such project involved a more or less widened severance of the Allied forces.

It also was possible to avoid all such severances by simply pressing the siege, and this plan had the evident merit of compressing, as it were, into one the heavy task of defence and the less heavy task of conquest; so that under a project thus ordered, the whole mass of the 188,000 men (saving only a garrison for Eupatoria) might be kept together in an assembled state. To accept that alternative, however, was to make a distressing choice, for it involved the continuance of a siege to be pressed at cruel sacrifice of life against the now immensely strong front of an uninvested fortress, with all Russia at its back; and it sanctioned what, under one aspect, might pass for a huge waste of power, since, as long as the siege might endure, an enormous proportion of the 188,000 Allies, though gathered and ready for battle, would still be so circumstanced on the Chersonese and the neighbouring plain as to be able to do little or nothing towards bringing the strife to a close.

V.

Pélissier's resolves.

Yet with all its repulsiveness Pélissier preferred this last plan. He declined to undertake operations against the Russian field army, whether hazarded (as the Emperor urged) by effecting an advance from Aloushta, or attacking from ground further west, or again (as Lord Raglan had counselled) by directing a movement from Eupatoria against the enemy's rear. He determined to go on waging war against the south side of Sebastopol by the simple, though bloody expedient of resolutely pressing the siege; and, finally, he meant or desired that, till after the end of this siege, the bulk of the four Allied armies should remain held together like one. It is true that (in concert with Lord Raglan) Pélissier determined to resume the Kertch expedition, and (for many good reasons) agreed that—employing for the purpose their cavalry, and other bodies of troops not engaged in the work of the siege—the Allies should take ground to their right in the valley of the Tchernaya; but the first of these operations was to be one of only brief duration, and the other one harmonised perfectly with that part of Pélissier's design which required—however anomalously—that, although so placed and confronted as to be unable to bring the enemy to the ordeal of a general action, the bulk of the vast Allied army should still for the time remain concentrated. Having laid it down peremptorily in his letter of the 5th of May that

the field operations imagined against the enemy's rear must all be put off till the fortress should be reduced to a strict defensive, the new French commander now carried his principle further, and declared that the Allies must adventure on no such enterprises until after effecting the conquest of the whole south side of Sebastopol.

Though immediate resort to the field operations had been urged—was still urged—by the Emperor, Pélissier extended no mercy to any such projects, denounced them as 'widely eccentric,' called them even in his scorn mere 'adventures,' and declared that, instead of the knowledge required for the invading the mountainous region of the Tchatir Dagh with an enemy gathered behind it, there was hardly any knowledge at all, not even any trustworthy map.

Pélissier laid it down that the conquest of the south side of Sebastopol must be effected by grappling fast with its defences, and carrying them one after the other at all costs. Exactly as Lord Raglan had counselled, Pélissier, to begin with, insisted that all those counter-approaches in the Karabel Faubourg to which Canrobert had so long been submitting must be forcibly wrested from the enemy.

In this stern design against the 'South Side' there was nothing that allured (like a battle) the rapt imaginations of men by opening a vision of glory attainable perhaps before sunset after going through only the ordeal of fights fought out in hot blood. Far from thinking that the path he had chosen was an easy or a swift way to victory, Pélissier saw in it a

CHAP. I.

course beset with evils and troubles, one involving cruel sacrifices, and after all, not even promising to compass without further efforts that long-pursued object of objects for which the Allies were in arms. It was only from that future campaign which would open, he took it for granted, after the fall of the 'South Side' that Pélissier hoped to educe a not unworthy result. What he said for his plan of first pushing war to extremity against the 'South Side' was simply this:—that its execution, however difficult, however costly of life, was still in his judgment 'possible.'*

In a powerful letter addressed to General Bosquet, Pélissier declared his resolves, and did this, one may say, in the language of one who gives final judgment, as though it were matter of course that what he (in accord with Lord Raglan) had determined to do must and would be accordingly done. He did not, he could not say that his plans had been approved by his sovereign, nor again did he—even for form's sake—write any word tending to show that his resolve would be submitted to the Emperor. On the contrary, he wrote as a man whose word was perforce to be law. 'I am firmly determined,' he said, 'not to launch into the unknown, to avoid adventures, and not to act without knowledge of what I 'am doing, or without the documents and the information necessary for the rational leadership of an 'army.' Speaking of the counter-approaches in the Faubourg still held by the Russians, he said in four

* Rousset, ii. p. 184 *et seq.*

words: 'We must have them'; and then, after giving his reasons for this decision, he said: 'All this 'may be painfully difficult, but it is possible, and to 'undertake it I am irrevocably determined. Such also is the opinion of the other Commanders-in-Chief.'*

Here then was the will of Pélissier declared to be fixed as Fate.

Prospect of violent strife between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier.

On the other hand, Louis Napoleon was violently, indignantly adverse to all these resolves; and it might seem that the authority of an absolute sovereign would perforce govern one of his generals; but the Emperor, as we know, always lived under that peculiar dread of offending his army which from time to time overrode what—only the moment before—had been his settled decisions, and was destined to involve him in ruin, along with not only his 'Empire' but even that very army which he had feared to displease.(2) He apparently knew or believed that, to depose Pélissier would be giving offence to his army on the Chersonese, and to his army in Algeria, but also—this above all—to his sensitive army at home; and accordingly we shall soon have to see him commanding, commanding, commanding, without being therefore for a moment obeyed, yet may, after all, not find him ready to vindicate his outraged authority by any ulterior steps. There are signs that Marshal Vaillant the Minister of War perceived, nay recognised this as the actual state of what purported to be the governing power;† and perhaps some such light

* *Ibid.*

† See *post*, chap. ix., Vaillant's use of the impersonal 'on.'

CHAP. I.

reached Pélissier; for whilst steadily setting at nought the Emperor's orders, he had the air of obeying some esoteric authority which showed him his path of duty—which taught him that he—he alone—must bear the whole burthen of commanding the French in this war, and could not hope to excuse himself for any disastrous fault by alleging instructions received from his sovereign Louis Napoleon.

Be all this as it may, the French Emperor at the time we have reached was about to be plying his distant and strong-willed general with censure, with indignant reproaches, with peremptory words of command; so that, whilst we are observing the conflict between the Allies and the Czar, we also shall have to be witnessing the interior strife going on between Napoleon the Third and Pélissier.

The Emperor, as we saw, had in Niel a delegate long since established at the French Headquarters whose obedience to his master was supported by his own real convictions, and a strenuous desire to press, to force their adoption on him who now ruled the French army; but it would seem that this aid on the whole did not bring a real strength to the Emperor; for the presence of a general undertaking to criticise and even oppose the measures of the Commander-in-Chief was beyond measure exasperating to the fiery Pélissier, and by acting thus on his temper may plainly have strengthened his will.

Scene of the Fights maintained by Pélissier after acceding to the supreme command

The counter-approaches towards the Cemetery down to the 22nd of May.

CHAPTER II.

NEW COUNTER-APPROACHES AND CONSEQUENT FIGHTS ON THE WESTERN FLANK OF SEBASTOPOL.

I.

THE march of the siege where it threatened the western front of Sebastopol was all at once brought to a crisis which called on the new French commander to open his reign with some fights.

The Cimetière Ridge.

General Todleben had already established a chain of lodgments extending along the Cimetière Ridge; and the French on their part by this time had brought their approaches close up to the southernmost wall of the graveyard from which the ridge took its name.

Now, because having relative height, and besides running parallel with the enceinte of Sebastopol at a distance of but 500 yards, the Cimetière Ridge thus held lightly by the enemy's lodgments, and thus approached by the French, was a position of great military value. If seized by the French, it would enable them to operate formidably against the Central Bastion; whilst again, if the fortune of

CHAP. II.

war should leave it in Todleben's power, he might be expected to plant on it batteries destructive of the French approaches, and indeed, one may say, would be able to stop the advance of the siege as then pressed against western Sebastopol.

Measures for securing it taken by the French and the Russians.

It might well have been therefore conjectured that, to secure the advantages offered, one or other of the opposing forces would very soon pass into action; but what happened was that they both by chance took their measures on the same night—the night of the 21st of May. It was then that our Allies pushed forward a trench by which they hoped in due time to be able to envelop the lodgments. It was then that the Russians began their boldly imagined enterprise.

II.

Todleben's project;

General Todleben in truth had projected a new and great counter-approach which was to establish a fortified 'Place d'armes' on all the great tract of ground which divided the enceinte of Sebastopol from the furthest or western slopes of the Cimetière Ridge. He at once, to begin with, would carry a trench along the front of most (not quite all) of the Cimetière lodgments, and besides, at its southern extremity, would connect this new counter-approach with the enceinte of Sebastopol by a gabionnaded way.

General Khrouleff too had his project, and desired

CHAP. II.

that some lodgments established near the head of the Quarantine Bay should be also connected by trench-work. The chiefs in Sebastopol saw that plans such as these were well calculated to provoke bloody fights, and might entail heavy sacrifices; but —although not unanimously—the proposals of both Todleben and Khrouleff were adopted by a Council of War.

and Khrouleff's.

Both the projects adopted;

Accordingly, in the night of the 21st of May, the two systems of projected trench-work were successfully executed, and, before morning came, the 'two 'chains of lodgments' had been already fore-trenched by continuous lines of defence. The Cimetière trench alone could hold two battalions of troops; and its southern extremity was now duly linked to the fortress by a well-covered line of way.

and executed in the night of the 21st, resulting in;

The Cimetière counter-approach;

and the Bay-head entrenchment.

So, at dawn on the 22d, our Allies saw the fortress expanding, nay already expanded, before them; since, where yesterday there had only been strings of the lodgments our people called 'rifle-pits,' there now ranged — however deficient in point of room and solidity — continuous lines of defence which 'an-'nexed,' as it were, to Sebastopol a new, and great tract of ground.

III.

Pélissier;

Now Pélissier—intent on the Faubourg—had no mind to carry Sebastopol by breaking in through its town front; and he well may have seen with regret that this Russian challenge invited him to conflicts

CHAP. II.

his resolve to attack the counter-approaches on the night of the 22d.

on ground lying far from the principal path by which he would march to his object; but alive to the value of a mighty diversion, he, at this time, was plainly resolved that, short of storming Sebastopol, he would always carry on the 'old siege'—the siege of Sebastopol town—with unrelenting vigour; and perhaps, after all, he may even have hearkened a little to that fiery temper, to that warlike spirit of his which threatened him with the pains of self-scorn, if he brooked any counter-approaches. At all events, he determined that on the following night—it was only at night that he could act so close under the guns of Sebastopol—both of these two new counter-approaches should be resolutely attacked. The Russians became aware of the onslaughts impending, and on each side the day of the 22d was passed in preparing for the strife, but especially in making beforehand such use of the artillery power as—in one direction or other—might help to govern the issue. For example, the French siege-guns raged against the Central Bastion, because the work was so placed that—not silenced perhaps by the darkness—its guns might interpose in the fight.

Preparation on both sides for the night encounter.

IV.

Strength of the troops about to be engaged.

It was with bodies of infantry some 6000 strong on each side that the French and the Russians respectively undertook to contend for the mastery of these two counter-approaches. General Paté, with

under him General Beuret and General Motterouge, was to be in command of the French undertaking these night attacks. CHAP. II.

At about half-past nine in the evening, General Beuret led out a force of between three and four battalions against the counter-approach near the head of the Quarantine Bay, and wrested it without serious difficulty from the very few Russians who were there for the moment in charge; but the enemy soon brought up some troops fully equal in strength to the French, and then there ensued a hard fight, the ebb and the flow so alternating that for a time, not computed by any at less than two hours, the issue seemed hanging in doubt. The French however at length made good their ascendant, drove the enemy out of the work, and—reversing its parapet—soon made the entrenchment their own. Attack and capture of the Bay-head counter-approach.

But the principal seat of the conflicts ordained to be raging this night was the counter-approach which had fastened along the Cimetière Ridge. The relative position of this encroachment was such that, if Russian, the forces defending it would lend their flank to French troops advancing from the nearest approaches, and would stand in great danger of being completely rolled up; whilst, supposing its defenders to be French, they would be lining a rampart that fronted in what was—for them—the wrong way. The Cimetière counter-approach;

The Central Bastion with its adjoining batteries was so circumstanced that it could not but be a partaker in the fights for this counter-approach, Power of the Central Bastion to take part in the fight.

CHAP. II.

and was therefore, of course, a fit prey for such of Pélissier's siege-guns as might be able to ply it with fire.

Attack and first capture of the Work;

At half-past nine o'clock in the evening, battalions commanded by Motterouge advanced on this counter-approach; and, the Work being then only occupied by about 70 men, was easily seized by the French, who thereupon established themselves in front of the lodgments, thus covering those of their working parties, which had begun to transform the entrenchment; but 'formidable masses of Russians' (it is Pélissier who speaks) came up from the ravine below, and, fighting with an extraordinary obstinacy, proved able to recapture the Work.

its recapture.

The Central under fire of the French siege-guns.

Then the French artillery raged with so great a power against the batteries of the Central Bastion and the adjacent works that they were, some of them, silenced, and all, it seems, brought to a nearly helpless condition; but Todleben in person came up to the Bastion, caused the dead and the wounded gunners to be replaced by fresh men, caused the choked embrasures to be cleared, and in short restored to the batteries some at least of their fighting capacity.

Third capture of the Cimetière [illegible]nter-approach;

Then, however, advancing once more with numbers increased, and with resolute purpose, the French threw their strength on the flank of the counter-approach, swept the enemy out of its precincts from end to end, and drove him down the acclivity of the Zarogodnaia Ravine. The Russian losses were heavy, and included General Adlerberg, who was killed.

CHAP. II.

Then Colonel Gardner (an officer of the Russian Engineers *) disclosed an inborn capacity for swaying an infantry fight. Despatched with a fresh battalion, he rallied the fugitives scattered in the Zarogodnaia Ravine, restored them to order, inspired them with fresh warlike ardour, and intrepidly led the whole body, then gladly accepting his guidance to another attack on the Cimetière counter-approach, and delivered this return onslaught with so great a vigour that the French once again were driven out of the Work, and even pursued in their flight along the trench they had opened on the night of the 21st.

fourth capture of the Work;

Without waiting for the need that might be occasioned by the next alternation of fortune, General Khrouleff reinforced his battalions whilst still victorious with a fresh body of troops not less than 600 strong.

Not shaken, however, in purpose, the French brought up their reserves — troops including the Voltigeurs of the Guard — and executed a determined attack on the long-disputed counter-approach. The onslaught, however, was met with strenuous resistance, with strenuous counter-attacks; and the strife that resulted was maintained on each side with rare obstinacy. 'The bayonet *mêlées*,' says Pélissier, 'were terrible. Two other battalions of Voltigeurs 'of the Guard, the 9th Chasseurs à pied, and the '8th of the Line, were called to the ground.'

fifth attack on the Work;

* I felt prone to infer from his name that this brilliant officer must be of Scotch or English extraction; but I learn that he was of Teutonic descent, and born in one of the Baltic provinces. He, however, was thoroughly Russian.

CHAP. II.

The strain put on the French raised a need for, as sea-captains word it, 'All hands!' Till now, held in readiness to 'transform' the entrenchment when captured, the men of their 'working-parties' were swift to lay down their tools, to stand to their arms, and thenceforth—not sparing their labour—to labour only as combatants. To the Russians new fire was imparted by the example of some freshly acceding troops which—panting to show their true quality after having been under a cloud—fought on and on and on with a zeal and a courage that won the hearts of their comrades.

The fierce, bloody, hand-to-hand strife was from time to time interrupted when—receding perhaps a few feet—the masses in conflict sometimes left open spaces between them great enough for exchanges of fire; and then of course for a while their cartridges blazed through the darkness, but again and again the closer fighting recurred, and again and again was maintained by French and Russians alike with a valour that seemed nearly equal. Preceded as we have seen by four conflicts, and no less a number of captures alternately changing the ownership of the hotly contested prize, this the fifth of the fights for the counter-approach was, it seems, the most stubborn of all, and already the night was far gone, when the French at last made good their mastery, overthrew all the Russians before them, and once more recaptured the Work. (1)

d its apture the rench.

V.

When this combat had ended, the night was already far spent, and the French soon perceived that they had not time left for the process—impossible without cover from darkness—of securing themselves in their prize against the guns of the fortress. Therefore, after first doing their best to ruin or damage its trench-work, they withdrew from the counter-approach thus long and fiercely contested, but not without a firm purpose on the part of their chiefs to attack it again the next night.

Course afterwards taken by the French.

VI.

On the 23d, the Russians learnt from deserters that the Allies had received great reinforcements, and their watch-tower (Volokoff) began to make signals. These signals announced that bodies of troops had been seen landing at Kamiesh, but they also declared that on the previous evening and afterwards in the early morning that followed, other bodies—apparently from ten to fifteen thousand—had been seen to be there embarking.

Signals from the Volokoff tower;

This last announcement gave rise to various conjectures; and, amongst them, to one which suggested that the Allies might intend to effect a landing on some part of the coast, with a mind to operate thence against the Russian field army. Prince Gort-

Their effect on Prince Gortchakoff's determination:

CHAP. II.

chakoff, on this ground, considering that he ought to concentrate troops on the 'Old City Heights,' and in the neighbourhood of Mackenzie Farm, reckoned also that, if doing so, he would not be able to replace any further heavy losses which the garrison might sustain by drawing troops from his field army. He therefore resolved to abandon this difficult struggle —already so costly to life—for the Cimetière counter-approach.* To make sure before yielding, however, that the French remained firm in their purpose, he left two battalions in the Work with orders to fall back when gravely attacked, and he directed that the troops thus withdrawing should not be supported by others.†

his decision.

Night of the 23d; the Cimetière counter-approach carried by the French;

On the night of the 23d, the French renewed their attack on the Cimetière counter-approach; and, though meeting, it seems, more resistance than Prince Gortchakoff had consented to sanction, they very soon made good their conquest. Then reversing the parapet, and making the other fit changes, they so well transformed the work that what had been a counter-approach stretching out like a shield to cover the heart of Sebastopol was, before morning dawned, a new parallel confronting the Fortress, and established moreover on heights so near and commanding that siege-guns there planted might shatter some all-precious links in the enemy's chain of defence.

and transformed

* This decision of course gives support to those of the Allies who desired a resort to field operations.

† These directions were made an 'order of the day.'

The conquest was thus complete, but it cost the French dear. Altogether, in killed, wounded, and prisoners, they lost 2303,* and the Russians 3061.† Losses on each side.

VII.

The losses thus incurred by the French made a heavy addition to those they before had sustained when—with similar objects—assailing the obstinate Sousdal Counter-guard; and, it having been long since determined that the real attack on Sebastopol should be made through the Faubourg, an adverse critic might say that Pélissier was making his sacrifices in the wrong part of the field. Pélissier, however, was one who accepted the teachings of science, and authoritative science assured him that, whatever might be his design for ultimately attacking the fortress, he perforce must uphold the ascendant of a firm, unrelenting besieger, and uphold it along his whole front by all the fighting required for securing the end thus enjoined. Still, observers with minds not high-strung, and not sufficiently braced by the cogent precepts of Vauban, might well feel pain in reflecting that all these distressing sacrifices offered up on the west of the Chersonese could be only indirectly conducive to what had become the real object—the object of reducing Sebastopol by first reducing the Malakoff.(2) Ground on which the sacrifices made by Pélissier were justified.

* Niel, pp. 255, 357.

† Todleben, ii. pp. 246, 249.

CHAPTER III.

PÉLISSIER FIRMLY PURSUING HIS CHOSEN PLANS OF ATTACK IN DEFIANCE OF LOUIS NAPOLEON.

CHAP. III.

THE fighting thus brought by the French to a victorious issue was induced, as we saw, by the stress of the enemy's challenge, and could not have well been arrested by any orders from Paris; but Pélissier had already made choice—made choice, as he stated, 'irrevocably' of a well-defined plan of attack; and this, it was only too certain, his sovereign would forbid, or obstruct.

Impending strife between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier.

The Emperor.

There followed sharp strife. On the one side, contended an Emperor—an Emperor armed by new laws with authority to direct from afar the commander-in-chief of his army, and not only served by the magic of the electric wires, but also by a strong, zealous envoy established at the seat of war.

Pélissier.

On the other side, he who contended was only a general; but the general was Pélissier; and already we know the strength of his fiery, resolute nature.

Marshal Vaillant.

Marshal Vaillant, the chief of the War Department, placed 'absolute' confidence in Pélissier; but not being the Minister of a constitutional State,

CHAP. III.

he could hardly exert his official power in any strong, peremptory way. He however did good, immense good. Marshal Vaillant had not passed in the world as a gentle, complaisant man; but he acted in this conjuncture with propriety and excellent sense, striving always to moderate, and turn away the wrath of the disputants, and entreating the angry general to soften his letters in form, yet not wishing, it would seem, that in substance Pélissier should yield to the Emperor.

Pélissier's determination to renew the attack upon Kertch.

So early as the day when Pélissier announced his accession to the command at the English Headquarters, he freely declared himself minded to renew the attack upon Kertch; and this design was matured at a conference held the next day. General Niel being one of those present, stated fully the grounds upon which he thought fit to oppose the measure; but his counsel produced no effect.*

General Niel at the Conference;

his written protest.

Strong, however, in his natural self-confidence, and besides in his conviction—his really well-founded conviction—that in this he represented the Emperor, Niel addressed to the French commander a deliberate remonstrance in writing not only against Pélissier's refusal to sanction any field operations for the purpose of investing Sebastopol, but also against his resolve to concur with Lord Raglan in sending a new expedition to Kertch; but Pélissier growing savage upon this provocation made haste to accentuate the language in which he conveyed his resolve, and by telegraph at once said what follows to the

21st Ma
Pélissier
to Minis
of War.

* Lord Raglan to Secretary of State, Secret, May 22, 1855.

CHAP. III.

Minister of War: 'The march of two *corps d'armée*, 'one from Aloushta on Simferopol, the other from 'Baidar on Baktchi Seräi, is big with difficulties and 'risks. It is the Kabyle country over again, and 'unknown. The direct investment effected by 'carrying the Mackenzie Heights would cost as 'dear as the assault of Sebastopol, and the result 'would be very uncertain. I have come to an 'understanding with Lord Raglan for the carrying 'of the counter-approaches, for the occupation of 'the ground on our right home down to the 'Tchernaya, and finally for an operation against 'Kertch. Our allies attach great importance to the 'measure, and I acknowledge that the operation is 'a good one. All is advancing: the movements 'are already in progress.'*

22d May. Same to same.

The next day, Pélissier addressed to Marshal Vaillant a letter in which he requested that 'suffi-'cient latitude' should be granted to him; but—read with the context—those words carried mockery rather than prayer; for an earlier part of the letter made it plain that the wilful general had already seized and used the broad freedom for which he professed to be asking. He already had written thus: 'Lord Raglan has asked me to renew the 'operation against Kertch, to which the English 'army and Government and the two fleets attach 'so high a value. It has seemed to me that it 'would be good policy in reference to the future 'of our operations concerted with the English to

* Telegram of the 21st May.—Rousset, ii. p. 191.

CHAP. III.

'make a beginning of my relations with them by 'an act which would heal the wound they received 'from the recall of the former expedition, would 'end the very grave trouble which it brought upon 'the relations between the French and the English, 'and restore that harmony which is in one word 'the great necessity of the time. The expedition 'has therefore been determined upon, and the troops 'embark to-day.'*

Accentuated by such an announcement this language might well be astounding to the Emperor Louis Napoleon, since he not only found himself extruded from the command of his army in the Crimea, but even, as we saw, overruled in a matter concerning high policy, and the maintenance of friendship with England. He by telegraph said to Pélissier on the following day: 'I have confidence 'in you, and I do not pretend to command the army 'from hence.† Still, I must tell you my opinion, and 'you must respect it. It is absolutely necessary to 'make a great effort and beat the Russian army in 'order to invest the place. To be looking for space 'and for grass does not now suffice.‡ If you scatter 'your forces instead of drawing them together, you 'will do nothing decisive, and besides, will lose pre-'cious time. The Allies have in the Crimea 180,000 'men. With such a force anything can be done;

Louis Napoleon to Pélissier.

* Ibid.

† This disclaimer was retracted by even the two next sentences, and again by the Emperor's two next messages to Pélissier.

‡ This taunt was in allusion to Pélissier's plan of taking ground to the Tchernaya.

CHAP. III.

'but it is necessary to manœuvre, and not take the 'bull by the horns. To manœuvre, is to threaten 'the weak sides of the enemy. It has seemed to 'me that the weak side of the Russians is their left 'wing. If you send 14,000 men to Kertch, you 'weaken yourself uselessly. It is confessing that 'there is nothing serious to be attempted; for one 'does not willingly weaken one's self on the eve of 'a battle. Weigh all that carefully.'*

Louis Napoleon again to Pélissier.

The next day, Louis Napoleon wrote thus to Pélissier:—'The course to take is easily indicated: '1st, to defeat the Russian army in order to invest 'the place; 2d, the place being invested, to take 'Sebastopol; 3d, the place being taken, to evacuate 'the Crimea, and blow up the fortifications, or leave 'there only the Turks. The means of arriving at 'this result are of course more especially within 'your province, and I leave you free in your choice 'of the means; but, as for the general course of 'action, you must follow the precise orders that I 'give you. They moreover are orders similar to 'those which Lord Raglan has received. . . . I 'explain to you, General, what are my views and 'my intentions. I reckon on your experience, your 'talents, and your patriotism to carry them into 'effect, and force Lord Raglan to help you.'†

élissier the inister of War.

The Emperor had hardly despatched this letter when he found laid before him this telegram of the previous day from Pélissier to the Minister of War: 'A strategic discussion by telegraph with all the

* Rousset, vol. ii. pp. 192, 193. † Ibid., pp. 211, 212.

'reasons for and against such or such a plan seems to me impossible. The detailed reports that I send you by every mail will convince his Majesty, I hope, that if I have not applied his plan, this is because it does not seem to me possible to do so immediately without danger.' CHAP. III.

Louis Napoleon to Pélissier.

Thereupon the enraged Emperor telegraphed to Pélissier: 'It is no question of discussion between us, but of orders to give, or to receive. I did not say to you, "Execute my plan;" I said, "Your "plan does not seem to me adequate." It is an absolute necessity to invest the place without loss of time. Tell me what means you will employ to attain the object.' *

Pélissier to the Minister of War.

Though Pélissier was himself, as we have seen, a fiercely choleric man, he yet seemingly knew how to meet the angry raging of others with a manful composure. In answer to the Emperor's missive, but addressing himself, as usual, to the Minister of War, Pélissier fenced briefly enough with the imperial notions by reverting to the arguments he had used in his famous letter to Canrobert, † and added, 'My first duty was to restore that understanding [with the English] which had been greatly compromised. I have completely restored it. I can't specify future operations without exposing myself to the risk of having my words falsified by the course of events. Be trustful. Let his Majesty also deign to be the same.' ‡

* Ibid., p. 212.

† See *ante*, vol. vii. p. 279.

‡ Rousset, p. 213.

CHAP. III.

Position and lamentations of General Niel.

When the Emperor thus found himself baffled in all his persistent attempts to direct a campaign from the Tuileries, it was natural of course that his emissary should fall from the height he had reached in the palmy days of the 'Mission.' General Niel soon began to write piteously of the treatment he was receiving from the fiery commander-in-chief: 'At a meeting which took place yesterday he, 'Pélissier, ordered me to be silent with a harshness 'not to be characterised, because I spoke of the 'dangers attendant upon vigorous actions attempted 'by great masses at great distances. We were in 'presence of English officers. I saw his anger, and 'determined at all costs to avoid a scene which 'would have made my relations with him impossible. 'This morning at a similar meeting General Beuret 'of the Artillery, for making a perfectly innocent 'observation was so grossly ill-treated that his eyes 'filled with tears, and he asked me whether he could 'remain with the army. . . . Here is now a 'man who is going to become a raging mad-'man.* . . . The English have drawn him, 'Pélissier, to them, and he has adopted their system 'of war—a system, in my opinion, the most impru-'dent of all,—which consists in pushing straight 'forward from the old positions.'

After expressing the grief inflicted upon him by the change of plan, and showing that Pélissier was angry with him for writing letters to the Emperor, General Niel continued :—

* 'Fou furieux.'

CHAP. III.

'The army in the Crimea is excellent, and asks 'but to fight. What is wanting to the army is a 'chief to lead it. God grant that the army may 'have one!'*

Niel's entire loss of power.

Under the vigorous sway of Pélissier, Niel retained not so much as a shred of the baneful power he had wielded in General Canrobert's time.

Niel had aided his sovereign in doing grievous harm to the French and their allies by paralysing their action against Sebastopol; but it must not be imagined that he was only a servile man striving for mere obedience' sake to execute the will of his sovereign. On the contrary, his ceaseless insistence on the policy of completely investing Sebastopol by means of field operations was the natural and direct result of his own strongly rooted opinion.

Antagonism between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier.

To thoughtful men rendered anxious (as was, we know, Marshal Vaillant) by the antagonism of opinion established between the Emperor and Pélissier, any hope that this gulf-wide difference might be treated as a 'misunderstanding' removable by patience and words could hardly have failed to prove welcome; but no such outlet lay open. Each, Emperor and General alike, asserted his strongly fixed will with so great a precision that the antagonism between the two men became, and remained, clear as day. Upon all the five questions that had to be solved, their two judgments,—I might say, their

* Rousset, pp. 209, 210.

CHAP. III.

Pélissier's five resolves;

'decisions' (for each of them thought to be master), —were, not simply differing, but opposite. Pélissier determined—determined, as he said, 'irrevocably'—that by stress of close siege operations he would carry the south of Sebastopol. He determined that, till after achieving his purpose against the 'South side' of Sebastopol, he would order no field operations with a view of investing the place.(1) He determined that, without more delay than was needed for due preparation, he would attack and reconquer every one of the counter-approaches to which Canrobert had submitted. He determined that, with troops not required for the toils of the siege, he would occupy ground extending to the left bank of the Tchernaya. He determined that, along with the English, he would renew the Expedition to Kertch.

Louis Napoleon opposed to each of them.

To every one of these measures the Emperor opposed his authority. One or other—the Emperor or the General—would have to give way, or else to be forcibly vanquished.

But which?

There are signs, though not proofs that the need of arresting wild, hazardous efforts to direct a campaign from the Tuileries was felt to be painfully cogent by more than one man in authority; but, whether he acted in circumstances implying something like concert, or was singly obeying the call of a duty he owed to his country, or whether again he was ruled by the sheer force of judgment, or in part by temper or temperament, Pélissier at all events guarded France, and the honour of her army, from

Pélissier's resistance.

CHAP. III.

the meddling hand of a sovereign who, not being either a trained, or by natural gifts a born soldier or even a soldier at all, and not acting under the guidance of any responsible Ministers, still supposed himself fitted—by wisdom—to conduct from Paris a war carried on under novel conditions against the empire of Russia; and how, when driven to words, Pélissier used them as means which helped towards averting the mischief we have partly been able to see; but it was not by words alone that he kept the perturber at bay. He often used 'golden' silence, and from time to time answered with deeds more convincing than all worded arguments.

His method.

With before him his Emperor's message decrying any resolve to take ground towards the Tchernaya, Pélissier promptly made bold to set the measure on foot; and—concurrently with troops of all arms supplied by the other allies—he carried it into effect. It was on the 25th of May, at the close of a march begun before midnight, that, supported by not only English and Ottoman forces but also by the newly acceding Sardinians (whose appearance and bearing seemed excellent), two French divisions under Canrobert (the late commander-in-chief) moved down to the Tractir Bridge, and—after sweeping the enemy from the opposite bank of the Tchernaya—took up a position which, starting from the base of the steep at the right rear of the Inkerman battle-field, extended thence down to the river.

Occupation by the Allies of fresh ground towards the Tchernaya.

And again, when Pélissier saw that imperious words from the Tuileries were condemning the

CHAP. III.

movement to Kertch, he none the less ordered or suffered the denounced expedition to sail, and hold on in its prosperous course.

Pélissier having his way.

On all the five warlike resolves he had made in the teeth of his Emperor, this stronger, more hot-headed man was destined to have his way.

Pélissier had a great, mighty will; but he seemingly gathered new strength, as strong-willed men oftentimes do, from what some would call 'the dark 'passions'—from anger, from hatred, from scorn.

In writing to the Minister of War, Pélissier did not even deny himself the luxury of a little sharp satire directed against the Emperor. He contrasted the strategical dreamer in Paris, his 'general maps' and his 'geometric lines,' with the real commander engaged at close quarters against the real enemy and on the real ground. Whilst persevering in absolute, explicit resistance to the Emperor upon every question then raised, he coolly said that he would separate himself from the Emperor's views as little as possible, and besides, wrote almost as one who belonged to a constitutional State, saying that he hoped to justify the confidence reposed in him by—not the Emperor but—the Minister to whom he was writing.* Towards the end of one letter he wrote:—'I feel my shoulders strong enough for the burthen 'with which I am laden, but I shall carry it all the 'better if feeling that I have a certain freedom of 'action.'

By the stroke of Fate thus oddly busied with its

* Rousset, p. 218.

last impish freak of inversion, a metamorphosed 'Napoleon' was all at once left in the plight of that unhonoured Directory of 1796 and the following year, which thought it could dictate in war, or dictate at the least in State policy to the great Buonaparte, and was answered from over the Alps with resistance, with scorn, and with victory.(2)

CHAP. III.

Allusion to the Directory of 1796-97 and the great Buonaparte.

CHAPTER IV.

THE RENEWED EXPEDITION TO KERTCH, WITH ITS SEQUEL IN THE SEA OF AZOF, AND ON THE CIRCASSIAN COAST.

I.

CHAP. IV.

In even its stage of preparatives, the second armada despatched to open the Cimmerian Bosphorus, had already by fortunate accident achieved a great good, and apparently saved many lives. That which—signalled from the Volokoff tower on the 23d of May—put a stress on the enemy's counsels, and brought him, however reluctant, to accept defeat from the French, was a movement of vessels and troops going on in the port of Kamiesh for some purpose he could not divine. The activity he then thought mysterious was the stir of embarkation importing a renewed expedition to Kertch.

Relevance of some previous statements to the subject of this second Expedition.

Much of what I premised when recounting the abortive Expedition begun on the 3d of May must be now borne in mind, or recalled by those who would have clear ideas of the subsequent invasion

pushed home through the Kertchine Peninsula to the shores of the Sea of Azof.* CHAP. IV.

In the interval between the two expeditions, the Russians had mounted some guns on the Cheska Spit, and had also continued their efforts to block the way through the Straits by sinking vessels charged with explosives; whilst also it is true on the other hand that (designing them for garrison purposes) the Allies brought with them, this time, a body of 5000 Ottoman troops, and varied by other less changes the original structure of their armada as prepared for the first expedition; but in other respects, speaking generally, the conditions attending this second advance, and any attempt to oppose it resembled those we saw operating nearly three weeks before, when—not having been yet overtaken by Canrobert's words of recall—the armada had sighted Cape Takli, and was smoothly approaching the coast.

The renewed expedition embarked in the evening of the 22d and the morning of the 23d of May. The attendant fleets English and French were commanded, the one, by Admiral Lyons, the other, by Admiral Bruat.

Composition of armada.

Commanded by Sir George Brown, the land forces of the Allies were, this time, 7000 French under the immediate command of General d'Autemarre, 3000 English, and 5000 Turks under Redchid Pasha (in all 15,000), having with them five batteries, a

* See especially *ante*, vol. vii. pp. 252-257.

CHAP. IV.

few Engineers, and (for escort duty) a body of some fifty English hussars.

Its course.

Soon after daylight on the 24th of May, the armada gained its place of rendezvous off Cape Takli, and then at once moved on at speed towards the bay of Kamish Boroune, in which the troops were to land.

The strength of Baron Wrangel.

The strength of Baron Wrangel was still, as before, a little short of 9000, and included nearly 3000 cavalry.

The predicament in which he was placed.

Judging roughly of the numbers against him, Baron Wrangel considered himself placed in exactly the same predicament that had threatened him on the approach of the First Expedition.

His resolve.

As before, so also, this time, and still for the same cogent reason, he judged that he could not defend that precious chain of coast batteries which had given him his control of the Straits. He succumbed to the power (of which the world will learn much in times yet to come)—the power an armada can wield when not only carrying on board a force designed for land-service, but enabled to move—to move swiftly—whether this way or that, at the will of the chief, who thus, so to speak, can 'manœuvre' against an army on shore with troops not yet quitting their ships. The power would be one of great cogency, under many conditions, but especially so if it happen that the defender of the coast has in charge two highly valued possessions divided the one from the other by several miles of ground.

The power to which he succumbed.

Of those two tracts of ground far disjoined from

THE
KERTCHINE PENINSULA.
SEA OF AZOF
C. Kara-Bouroun
C. Ak-Bouroun
KARASSOU
ARABAT
ARABAT BAY
THE SIVASH
KARASSOU-KELETCHI
SULTANOVKA
KERTCHEN
KERTCH
YENI KALE
C. Tachli
C. Tuzla
TAMAN
BAY OF TAMAN
THE KHOLOPENI AND AKBOURUM BATTERIES
Barracks
Cape Akbourum
Cape St Paul
THEODOSIA
C. Ak-Bouroun
C. Ak-Kaya
C. Tash-Kitchka

each other which Baron Wrangel, if able, would have anxiously sought to defend, the one towards the east comprised the Coast batteries fraught with the absolute control of the Straits, and its retention he might well deem momentous, since only to that very end was he there with horse, foot, and artillery; but then he could not forget that the command of free access to the Isthmus and the roadway along its whole course was something more than 'momentous' to him and his forces—was in truth rather what men call 'vital,' because involving his all-precious communications with the main army under Prince Gortchakoff to which he belonged, and the Government of the country he served.

In common land-warfare, a distance of some seventy miles between two tracts of ground that have to be guarded may not be a circumstance hampering to plans for defending them both; but it grievously baffled resistance to squadrons with troops on board, and propelled by steam-power at a rate vastly greater than any that battalions of Foot can attain by marching and countermarching along the weary miles of a road. To mistake a feint for the opening of a real attack might be to incur a disaster; yet how to distinguish between the two operations by merely watching ships out at sea? The Allies made no feint; but by simply advancing straight forward to what, as we know, was their object, they did not prevent Baron Wrangel from thinking that the movement was or might be a feint; and, although resting simply on inference, his belief was no whit less distracting than a feint really made. The sight of an

CHAP. IV.

armada approaching the landing-place of Kamish Boroune did not even for an instant make Wrangel believe himself safe against a descent on the shore some seventy miles to the westward, because he well knew that a signal run up in a minute by one of the flag-ships might, like magic, arrest and reverse the whole eastward movement, and swiftly send back the armada to waters off the known landing-ground in the neighbourhood of the town Theodosia, where its presence would all at once challenge his command of the Isthmus, and with it, the very existence of all the force under his orders.

Baron Wrangel's retreat.

It was under these painful conditions—conditions deserving the study of any maritime Power which has coasts at home to defend or coasts abroad to attack—that Baron Wrangel abandoned his defence of the Coast batteries, determined to have them destroyed, and drew off to Sultanoffka at first, but afterwards towards the great Road — the Imperial Road through the Isthmus which connected him with the main Russian army.

Unopposed landing of the troops.

Accordingly it was without opposition, though not of course without guarding against any chance of attack, that (under the cover of guns disposed on board the steam frigates and other less vessels) the Allied troops with horses and batteries and all their train of appurtenances began to fill the boats of the squadrons, and move towards the landing-place chosen in the bay of Kamish Boroune. Under the immediate direction of Admiral Houston Stewart (whose arrangements were held to be perfect) the

process continued all day and throughout the following night without being delayed or obstructed by any kind of mishap. The French and the English infantry were the first to land, and Brown placed them in position, the French on the right, the English on their left, and provided that, when disembarked, his Turks should take the ground he assigned them in support to the other allies. Soon afterwards, General d'Autemarre at the request of Sir George moved forward towards the Coast batteries established near the Cape of St Paul.

Sir George Brown's measures on shore.

Exactly as he had intended to do when the first expedition was threatening, Baron Wrangel soon began to destroy his Coast batteries by blowing up their magazines and spiking their guns. Beginning with those near Cape Paul, the Baron went on—at intervals—with this work of destruction, and by his orders sooner or later, though not with precipitate haste, and not in every case with such promptitude as to prevent the discharge of some shots, his Coast batteries were, all of them, ruined.

Baron Wrangel's destruction of his Coast batteries.

Followed by the gunners of the Paul batteries then already destroyed, that part of Baron Wrangel's land-force which he called 'the Detachment of 'Kertch' retreated in a westward direction by the great Theodosia Road. These, however, with most of his troops in the east of the Kertchine Peninsula were soon gathered round Sultanoffka (where headquarters at first were established), but his ultimate current of retreat was towards the all-precious Isthmus. The small garrison of Yeni Kalé was left to escape by sea.

Retreat of Russian troops.

CHAP. IV.

Destruction of food by Baron Wrangel.

Whilst making free havoc of his master's batteries, the Baron likewise sought to destroy all such other Government property as he could not remove, and besides, every sort of possession thought likely to serve an invader. He destroyed more than four million pounds of corn and half a million pounds of flour.*

With the singular keenness these people seemed almost always to show when destroying the possessions of their own fellow-subjects, some Cossacks alertly spread out over part of the steppe, and hastened to burn down the farmsteads.

The squadron of Kertch.

With respect to the Russian war squadron assembled in the bay of Kertch, Baron Wrangel, it seems, did not order Rear-Admiral Wulff, who commanded it, to undertake any defence of either the town or the Straits, nor even to oppose any craft whether English or French trying singly to push through the Straits; but he desired that, before making off, the vessels composing this squadron should take on board Government property; and from this cause it happened that they were not all moved out from the bay at an earlier time.

M'Gillop's exploits.

One of these small vessels of war, that is, the steam-schooner Argonaut, had at length got her cargo on board, and was already making off for Yeni Kalé, when Lieutenant M'Gillop (commanding a gunboat, the Snake, not employed in the landing of troops) conceived the idea of trying to stop her flight.

* More exactly, 4,166,000 lb. of corn and 508,000 lb. of flour. The figures are taken from entries made in the Russian Government books.

CHAP. IV.

Dashing past some guns not yet destroyed, he first opened fire on the fugitive Argonaut, and then also on the war-steamer Goëts, which the Russian Admiral Wulff had sent out to aid her, and then also on a third war-steamer, the Berdiansk, which by that time had come out from the bay with all the archives and chests of the local administration on board. The commander of the Berdiansk did all he could to quicken her speed; but M'Gillop by the exceeding skill and rapidity of his movement outmanœuvred the fugitive, and—firing with shell—undertook to bar the passage against her. Two of her men were wounded by explosions effected on board her, and her commander convinced himself that she could not make good her escape. He therefore ran her on shore, and burnt her with all her cargo on board. The other two vessels (the Argonaut and the Goëts) which M'Gillop had engaged, were also, it seems, prevented by his skilful manœuvres from making good their escape, and the enemy with his own hands destroyed them. (1) The Snake was struck by a shot which passed through the vessel, but she did not lose a man. Altogether, as may well be supposed, M'Gillop's exploit was enchanting to the numbers of eager seamen collected on board the two fleets.

The fate of the squadron.

Rear-Admiral Wulff, the same day, burnt down other vessels belonging to his unhappy squadron, and went on with the work of destruction till out of the fourteen vessels which had composed it there remained, it seems, only four. The four vessels

CHAP. IV.

preserved were all of them, however, war-steamers, and comparatively powerful.

With these, at 7 o'clock in the evening, Rear-Admiral Wulff moved out through the Straits, and got off into the Sea of Azof; but the escape, if so one may call it, brought, after all, only a respite soon followed by utter destruction.*

Disembarking operations.

The Allied navies toiled all night long at the work of landing not only men, but horses, guns, stores of all kinds, and had hardly completed their task, when at 4 o'clock on the morning of the 25th, Captain Lyons of the Miranda despatched Mr George Williams, the master of the ship, with orders to endeavour to find and buoy a channel through the Straits.

Channel into the Azof found and buoyed.

This service the skilled, fearless officer achieved in the ship's gig and cutter under fire from the Russian battery still left on the Cheska Spit, 'and between 'exploding and burning vessels which had been sunk 'in the fairway and set on fire by the enemy.' By the channel thus found, Mr George Williams passed through the Straits, and was the first officer of the Allied forces to enter the Sea of Azof. At 10 o'clock the same morning Mr Williams returned to the Miranda, and reported to his Captain that he had found and buoyed a channel of 16 feet. Captain Lyons immediately weighed, accompanied by the other vessels under his orders, and with these before long reached the goal of long expectation—the entrance of the Sea of Azof.

Miranda reaching the entrance of the Sea of Azof.

* See *post*, p. 61, and pp. 63, 64.

CHAP. IV.

Advance of the land forces through Kertch,

At 6 o'clock in the morning of the same auspicious day, Sir George Brown pushed forward the land forces, and marched upon Kertch, a remarkably clean well-built town of about 12,000 inhabitants. In 'ordinary column of route' the Allied forces marched through the place, maintaining a great regularity and committing not the slightest disorder. Sir George felt it his duty to destroy an iron foundry which had cast guns and shot for the Czar; but no other harm was done at that time in the town.

It was many days later that under a strong sense of duty and with great reluctance Sir George Brown destroyed a great quantity of corn provided for the enemy's troops.

to Yeni Kalé.

The Allied troops continued their march, and by one o'clock reached Yeni Kalé.

Disorders that followed the invasion.

This otherwise well-omened enterprise against the Kertchine Peninsula was unhappily marked by a stain which, though hardly discerned at the time by the more Western nations of Europe, must not be here screened from the light. The invasion gave rise to disorder, and disorder was followed by crime.

For this the Allies, as I think, became justly open to censure, and the subject, though painful, is one that must not be shunned.

We cannot excuse the Allies by alleging that stir of the blood which comes with the clash of arms; for, whether in the process of landing, or in taking their rest on the shore, or in afterwards pursuing their march, the invaders from the first to the last

CHAP. IV.

encountered no sort of resistance; nor again can our country at once deliver herself from the charge by saying (as with truth she could say) that few, very few of our people were guilty of disorderly acts, and none of violent outrage; for he who commanded the troops of the three invading nations was an Englishman, and accordingly England stands challenged to answer the question which asks how the conquerors wielded their power.

The limited authority of Sir George Brown.

In fairness towards the memory of Sir George Brown, it must always be borne in mind that of the 15,000 men he commanded 3000 only were English, the rest consisting of French to the number of 7000, and of 5000 Turks; that except by making representations to General d'Autemarre he could not interfere with the discipline of the French troops; that, when busied in mischief, the soldiery of our excited Allies could be hardly restrained by their officers; and finally, that the traditions and instincts of the Frenchmen, the Turks, and the English collected under Sir George were far from being the same, or even indeed at all similar on the theory of licence in war.

Kertch.

Upon seeing the approach of the armada, the people of Kertch had been frightened, and the bulk of them fled from the place, taking refuge in the neighbouring villages.*

Its prayer to Sir George.

When Sir George Brown marched through the town on the morning of the 25th, he was met by a deputation of the principal inhabitants then left in

* Todleben, vol. ii. p. 283.

CHAP. IV.

the place, including the consuls for Austria and Naples. They declared to Sir George that the Russians had all of them fled from the town without leaving there any authority that could shield its deserted inhabitants from foes they described as 'the Tartars'—men intending to come down upon them from the near country-side; and they implored Sir George Brown to leave some troops in the place for the protection of their lives and property.(2) This Sir George refused flatly to do, protesting that he was not Governor of the country; and for any other protection than such as might be rendered appropriate by the conduct of his troops, he told them they had no claim upon him. Recommending the deputation to form a municipal council which might administer the police of the town, he continued his advance on Yeni Kalé.*

His rejection of their entreaties.

In the course of the march 'our allies,' as Sir George Brown distinguished them, spread out over the country for miles, and busied themselves with the 'sport' of shooting pigs, sheep, fowls, ducks, and—supremely amusing!—tame geese. Such indulgence on the part of invaders might perhaps be called trivial, but it weakened the bonds of discipline. After occupying Yeni Kalé, our allies, Sir George says, 'broke away in their old style;'† and, most of the inhabitants having fled, forced open the houses, and not only gutted the town, but set it on

Disorders on the march;

and in Yeni Kalé.

* Sir George Brown at Yeni Kalé to Lord Raglan, 27th and 28th May.

† From one 'Peninsular officer' to another this phrase expressed a good deal.

CHAP. IV.

Cessation of all misconduct of the English troops.

fire in two places. Unhappily, some of our soldiers —not any, however, of those who were under the eyes of their officers—permitted themselves for a while to follow the example in part, and prove guilty of conduct pronounced to be far, 'very far from 'blameless;'* but though erring on that first afternoon, when the instinct of 'sport' was awakened, they did not again go astray.†

Measures taken by Sir George for the maintenance of discipline;

The next morning Sir George Brown concurred with General d'Autemarre in appointing a French officer to act as commandant of Yeni Kalé for police purposes, with support from an English provost-marshal and assistants, and having at his disposal three companies of infantry, two French and one English.

their result.

Commanding the means thus provided, the French, says Sir George, showed great zeal in repressing the sins of the Turks; but for the task of restraining their own men, the French officers seemed wholly powerless. It was 'pitiable,' wrote Sir George, 'to 'see their faces' when asked to undertake such a duty.‡ The Turks were not undeserving of the keen efforts made to restrain them. They, day after day, proved guilty of committing horrible outrages.§

The Tartars in Kertch destroying and plundering.

On the same day, the 26th, a second deputation from Kertch came before Sir George Brown at Yeni Kalé, informing him that the dread expectation of the day before had become a reality, that the town was in a state of anarchy, and that 'the Tartars,'

* By Sir George.—Ibid. † Ibid.
‡ Ibid. § Sir George to Lord Raglan, 29th May.

CHAP. IV.

The measures taken by Brown and by the people of Kertch.

as they called them, were plundering and destroying everything. In the face of this appeal, Sir George again refused to give the place any garrison; but a vessel of war at his instance was promptly moved into the bay. The unfortunate people of Kertch found means to arm for their protection a body of fifty men of various nationalities; and this small improvised force proved firm and courageous in dealing with isolated outrages committed by stragglers, as for instance when they promptly shot down several Turks whilst resisting attempts to arrest them for knocking out the brains of a child;* but —weak in numbers—these guards did not seemingly try—and so far as I know, were not ordered —to drive out the plundering Tartars.

When the Kertch deputation had left his head-quarters, Sir George was informed that some boats'-crews, both English and French, had been getting into the town, and doing there even more mischief than the people called 'Tartars.' He therefore determined to send—on the morrow—an infantry regiment accompanied by twenty Hussars to the Quarantine Station near Kertch, with orders to send detachments patrolling into the town, and, if possible, to restore order by giving countenance and support to such provisional authority as might be established. †

On the same day, however, Sir George received a letter from Captain Loaring, commanding the Furious —the vessel sent into the bay—which stated that

* Ibid. They, it seems, killed one, and seriously wounded the rest.

† Sir George to Lord Raglan, 27th and 28th May.

CHAP. IV.

the uproar in the town was worse than ever, and called for immediate assistance.

Sir George thereupon sent off a body of twenty Hussars with orders to go to Kertch, and there 'see 'what was the matter'; but he had conceived the idea that the attack by the so-called 'Tartars' was almost 'a revolt of the Tartar population' with which he ought not to meddle, and this so much the more since he thought that the aggressors—described to be 'Tartars'—were—not enemies to the Allies but—their friends, who indeed more than once had captured and brought in Russian prisoners from even great distances; and he determined not to interfere 'further than to protect the weak from outrage.' *

The exception, it seems, applied only to the case of an outrage attempted in sight of the Hussars when patrolling; for in any larger sense 'to protect 'the weak from outrage' was substantially of course the same thing as maintaining peace in the town, and that last course of action was one which Sir George had resolved not to take. 'I distinctly said,' he informed the inhabitants, 'that they must take care 'of themselves, and were not to look to me for pro-'tection. . . . I declined to furnish any guards.' †

Failure of the measures taken.

Sir George Brown's expedient of patrolling into the town twice a-day from the precincts of the Quarantine Station must have brought fitful intervals of relief to the fear-stricken people of Kertch, who at each of the times for patrolling, and whilst

* Sir George to Lord Raglan, 27th and 28th May.

† To Lord Raglan, 10th June.

in sight of the horsemen, might believe themselves safe for at least a few minutes, or perhaps half an hour, but the measure did nothing towards either expelling the Tartars or putting an end to their outrages. All that seemed to be needed for restoring order was the voice of authority, and authority resting on force—for the 79th was at hand—Sir George Brown amply possessed; but for reasons we have heard him disclosing he resolved not to use the spell.

Continued disorders in Kertch.

Most of the houses deserted by Russian occupiers —and these formed the main part of the town—were plundered and gutted;* as were also indeed, we are told, nearly all of the other buildings.† From some houses the roofs were torn off, and their timbers used for firing. The hospitals even were pillaged.‡

Sir George Brown had at one time agreed with General d'Autemarre to place a guard over the Museum in Kertch; but he afterwards abandoned the project, because convinced that, if small, the guard might not be secure; and that one of sufficing strength could hardly be spared for the purpose.§ The Museum thus left to its fate was gutted, was plundered; and, unless General Todleben erred, or for once wrote in irony, the plundering of the institution was perpetrated by hunters after 'antiquities' —men who also, he says, pushed their search down to even the tombs of the dead.‖

* Sir George to Lord Raglan, 4th June.

† Todleben, vol. ii. p. 284.

‡ Ibid.

§ Sir George Brown to Lord Raglan, 10th June.

‖ Todleben, vol. ii. p. 284.

CHAP. IV.

The committers of outrage.

By whom were these outrages perpetrated? They were perpetrated, it would seem, in the main by the native marauders called 'Tartars'; but in part by 'boats'-crews' from both fleets, and in part too by straggling soldiers — some French and some Turkish—who, despite the commands of their officers, had found their way into the town.

The commander of the expedition proved happily able to say that amongst all the 'stragglers' engaged in these crimes and outrages not one English soldier, as far as he knew, had been seen.*

Further continuance of the disorders in Kertch.

So late as the second week of June, when Sir George Brown at length was preparing to quit the invaded peninsula, he still could not say that in Kertch the reign of disorder had ceased. People there, he indeed plainly wrote—so late as the 10th of June—were 'in terror of their lives for the Tartars.'*

Lord Raglan's indignation.

Lord Raglan heard with warm indignation of the earlier disorders afflicting a part of the conquered territory; but when he had read the two first of Brown's letters on this painful subject, he thought well of the orders Sir George appeared to have given,

His approval on 31st May of Brown's measures.

pronouncing them to be 'very good'; and accordingly he cherished a hope that they 'would prevent 'all further excesses';‡ but the hope, we know, was

His completed criticism averted.

not fulfilled; and a criticism rendered complete by basing it on the later as well as the earlier letters was averted by the stress of events.

* Sir George Brown to Lord Raglan, 10th June.

† To Lord Raglan. If not strictly orthodox English, Brown's use of the 'for' is good Scotch.

‡ Lord Raglan to Sir George, 31st May.

CHAP. IV.

For not having repressed the disorders of the French troops, Sir George Brown, in common justice, could hardly have been treated as answerable by even the strictest of judges; for, although he indeed on this subject could freely make representations to our Allies, his authority as the chief in command did not otherwise include any power to meddle at all with the discipline of General d'Autemarre's troops;* and the expedient of remonstrating against their offences with either General d'Autemarre himself or any other French officer was a tender matter, and dangerous, whilst also in general likely to prove, as we have seen, wholly barren. Sir George did not of course deserve blame for omitting to use a power with which he was not really armed.

Sir George not blamable for omitting to repress the disorders of the French;

because virtually unable to do so.

The Quarantine Station of Kertch was not only well separated from the rest of the town, but so spacious as to be capable of holding some 5000 men; and Brown's plan of posting in it a foot regiment with a score of Hussars was good so far as it went; but in mercy to the unfortunate inhabitants, no less than for the advantage of the invaders, it ought to have been rendered effective by establishing authority in the town, and promptly restoring order.

Comment on Sir George's course of action with respect to the disorders in Kertch.

It is true that Sir George's idea of regarding the violent Tartars as people in arms against Russia was not without a semblance of warranty; for the coming of War—beloved War—to their long-conquered,

Friendly disposition of some of the Tartars

* Instructions of 2d May incorporated by reference with those of the 21st.

CHAP. IV.

Czar-ridden steppe had roused in these men grand emotions deriving from the blood of their ancestors; so that—touching, pathetic recurrence to forefathers great in the saddle!—a band of them, all poorly armed, yet mounted, every one of them, on ponies, if not bigger horses, came riding over the steppe, came enlisting themselves, they imagined, for war to the knife against Russia, with before them the rapturous prospect of recovering their old independence. They were men in a dream, but their dream was coherent, and not altogether unshared by the English commander. As already they had given an earnest of their simple, rude 'foreign policy' by bringing in Russians as prisoners to the camp of the invader, so now—in arms, and on horseback—they offered him a warlike alliance with the once mighty Golden Horde.

Sir George apparently thought they might prove to be in some sort the Spaniards, or even the tried Portuguese of his early and glorious days; but ought he to have purchased the friendship of even the Golden Horde at so heavy, so painful a cost as that of allowing a town within easy reach of his camp to lie seething day after day, and even week after week, in the agonies of a slow doubtful strife with bands of men—not perhaps murderous, but—intent on destruction and pillage?

The enemy's forces had vanished without attempting resistance; and, there being therefore no prospect of fights on the Kertchine Peninsula, it is hard to see how an alliance with its Tartar inhabitants could be

of more worth to the invader than peaceful, friendly relations with a well-ordered seaport town (lying midway between his headquarters, and his works near Fort Paul) which was yearning to receive at his hands the blessings of protection and government. If only for the sake of withdrawing irresistible temptations to crime from the reach of the Allied forces, there was seemingly reason enough for repressing disorder in Kertch; for the town, as we know, was within a short walk from the camps, within a pleasant row from the ships, and could not but prove attractive to many young soldiers and sailors when known to be in the throes of a conflict involving such tumult as would offer them adventures and licence.

Sufferings entailed on the sick and wounded Russians by the pillaging of the hospitals.

From the pillaging of the hospitals at Kertch, from the flight of the Russian inhabitants, and finally from the state of anarchy which long afflicted the town, it resulted that the sick and wounded Russians who had been brought thither from Sebastopol were exposed to the sufferings caused by not only want of appliances, but also want of due care.*

Letter on their behalf from Baron Wrangel.

It was in favour of those hospital patients that, when about to retreat, Baron Wrangel had addressed an appeal to the commander of the invading force, recommending them to his kindness and humanity;† but of course, when taking that step, the Baron had assumed that the Allied troops would be in the occupation of Kertch, and in point of fact, as we have learnt, no such occupation took place. It was

* Ibid. † Ibid.

CHAP. IV.

therefore antecedently probable that the letter would find no recipient, and I am led on other grounds to believe that it never in fact reached Sir George.* Whether brought to its destination or not, the letter remained unanswered.

It would be miserable to have to believe that any English commander proved deaf to such an appeal; and this all the more since we know that the Russians were habitually treating our prisoners of war in their hospitals with careful and generous kindness.†

The meeting at Yeni Kalé.

By one o'clock in the afternoon Sir George Brown reached Yeni Kalé (at the mouth of the Straits), where the admirals joyously greeted him.

First results of the Kertch expedition.

The first gains that accrued to the Allies from their newly acquired dominion in the Kertchine Peninsula were:—

1. The capture of all the enemy's Coast batteries in the neighbourhood of the Straits, and of the 62 guns which had armed them — guns throwing a weight of metal which reached in one salvo to 2376 pounds.‡

* There is no mention of it in the correspondence; and Sir George was so full a writer that the absence of any such mention is scarce short of actual proof that the letter was never received.

† Lord Raglan to Secretary of State, 19th May 1855, a published despatch, p. 167 in Sayer's Collection.

‡ Todleben, vol. ii. p. 269.

2. The capture of guns not in battery, amounting with the 62 above mentioned to upwards of one hundred, many of them of the largest calibre and of the best construction.*

3. The ruin of the squadron of Kertch — ruin prompt as regarded the fate reserved for ten of its vessels, and, as to the four still afloat, ruin only staved off a few hours. The squadron thus brought to destruction by the hands of its own people carried guns of which three were 68-pounders, but the shot it threw in one salvo had only a weight of 1026 pounds.†

4. The acquisition by the Allies of several enemy's merchant-vessels, and of vast quantities of corn which the captors either appropriated or destroyed, and of 17,000 tons of coal secured for the use of their squadrons.

5. The destruction by the enemy himself of a vast amount of property belonging to the Russian Government, and conducive to its service in war.

6. But the great advantage of all was of course the one sought from the first by those who had planned the expedition—the opening of the Straits of Kertch, and the free way thus won to the Sea of Azof with all the consequential results of which we are going to hear.

The main object gained.

These advantages were, all of them, gained without the loss of a man.

* Sir George Brown to Lord Raglan, 27th May, correcting his former despatch.

† Todleben, vol. ii. p. 267.

CHAP. IV.

II.

The Allied Admirals entering the Sea of Azof.

A few hours only had passed after the opening of the Straits, when a joint flotilla of French and English steam-vessels with the two Admirals on board moved out into what till that day had been the 'closed' Sea of Azof, and so, as it were, took possession of the waters then all at once added to the dominion of the Maritime Powers.

Captain Lyons of the Miranda then taking the command of the united flotilla.

On the same afternoon, the flags of the Admirals were hauled down, and the command of the flotilla then passed to Captain Lyons of the Miranda, the son of our naval Chief, for he was the senior officer; but the immediate command of the vessels which composed the French part of the flotilla belonged to M. Sédaiges, an excellent chief of whom the senior (Lyons) wrote always in terms of warm praise.

Nature of the operations undertaken in the Sea of Azof.

The operations that followed must not of course be regarded as so many acts of proud war undertaken in pursuit of a conquest, but rather as measures required for enforcing those new rights of ownership which the passage of the Straits had conferred. The task of Captain Lyons in the Sea of Azof and the tangible part of its shores was analogous to that of a colonel or major-general who, having been appointed the governor of a lately conquered province, must bring it under subjection to the newly acceding authority.

Still, it seems fit on public grounds to show how a sea newly opened in what till the day before had

THE SEA OF AZOFF
AND NEIGHBOURING LANDS.

Scale.

been the interior of Russia was taken in hand by the squadrons.

Fate of the four surviving war-ships of the Kertch squadron.

The shoal at the mouths of the Don forbade hope of flight for all vessels with more than a small draught of water; and the sight of hostile flags in this sea—so lately a sure sea of refuge—sufficed to make the enemy's Admiral run ashore, and burn down his four surviving war-steamers—surviving, as we saw, out of that which, until dispersed by M'Killop, had been 'The squadron of Kertch.'

Unchallenged mastery of the Allies in the hitherto 'closed' sea.

After this hastened act of despondency the Russians had no vessel left with which to watch, much less oppose the advance of their naval invader. Young Lyons found himself master—the undisturbed unchallenged master—of what a few hours before had been a fast-closed Russian lake surrounded on all sides by Russian provinces, and affording them a natural outlet, a privileged highway of their own.

Access thus obtained to the interior provinces of Russia; as, *e.g.*, to the country of the Don Cossacks.

Long accustomed to have it imagined that they could not be assailed with impunity in the trunk of their empire, Russians bitterly felt the sharp thrust which a new irresistible power was now — with strange ease—driving home. How deep the thrust went, people easily saw when observing that the easternmost of the provinces coerced by the Maritime Powers, and unable thenceforth to send out so much as a sail or a boat from the mouths of its own famous river, was the one that furnished to Russia her Kozaks, or 'Cossacks of the Don'—men deemed so transcendently Russian that—although, as I think, without justice — the figurative diction of many

CHAP. IV.

(including the great Napoleon) has made the name of their race an equivalent for Russia herself. By the French more especially, who had heard what their mothers could tell them of 'The Cossacks! 'the Cossacks! the Cossacks!' there well might be felt strange emotions when — along with a now friendly England — outstretching the long naval arm, and touching the westermost nests of that once notorious horde which, however disregarded as combatants, had as plunderers startled the France of an earlier and horrible time. Those were men who, not quitting their saddles, would trot up the stairs of the palace or the house they were going to despoil, and ride straight into a drawing-room on horses well used like themselves to the piteous screaming of women.(3)

The seat of industry that Lyons disturbed.

What Lyons disturbed on the Sea and the shores of the Azof was a vast seat of industry, but industry plainly devoted to the business of war. The shipping engaged, it is true, was but lately the shipping of commerce bearing corn to foreign ports; but it had been brought into the service of the Czar for commissariat purposes, and was busied in transporting supplies for the use of Prince Gortchakoff's army. To this end alone were corn-stores lining the beach, and unarmed vessels plying in hundreds. It was the right and the duty of Lyons to destroy, if he could, the foundations of all this hostile activity.

His task not one leading to battle.

The Allies having no troops on board, and the enemy having no war-ships, there could not of course well take place any great engagement between them; and no one reading what follows must hearken at all

for a battle, but rather think of the task committed to some naval officer who is ordered to tear out the nest of inveterate contrabandistas, and seize their forfeited goods.

His task against vessels found at sea;

With regard to those unarmed vessels busied in the transport of food that could be caught by war-steamers at sea, the task of course was an easy one; but Lyons and M. Sédaiges, and the officers and crews of both the united squadrons, agreed to make it easier still. At the sacrifice of their pecuniary interests, they agreed to forego their clear right of bringing the craft before prize courts, and to substitute destruction for capture.

and those that had fled towards land.

It was only when applied to those vessels which had fled towards the land for shelter, or else to the ranges of corn-stacks and other Government property disposed on some parts of the shore, that the task of destruction left room for the skill and the daring of seamen.

26th May. Operation off the Spit of Berdiansk.

From an anchorage it found off the lighthouse on the Spit of Berdiansk the united flotilla commanded the harbour as well as the beach; and —covered by the fire it delivered—the boats of both the squadrons effected a landing under Commander Sherard Osborn. The men who had landed destroyed the vessels in port, and afterwards other craft found at a distance of nearly four miles. They also burnt a Government store.

Several steamers detached from the squadron were meanwhile chasing such vessels as could be descried out at sea.

When off the beach of Berdiansk, Captain Lyons —

CHAP. IV.

there found run on shore, and burnt down to the water's edge, those four Russian steamers of war which had escaped—for a while—from Kertch with their leader Rear-Admiral Wulff. It is dismal, after all, to be seeing the very, very end, and last obsequies of even an enemy's squadron. The unhappy Rear-Admiral's flag was still flying from the wreck of the Moloditz.

The wrecks of the four war-steamers that had escaped from Kertch.

27th May. Off the town of Berdiansk.

From a position commanding the town and also the beach some small-armed men and marines from both of the squadrons were landed under Commander Lambert, and they destroyed many vessels as well as some Government corn-stores. Steamers also meanwhile intercepted the craft that were seeking to escape by flying for the mouths of the Don.

28th May. Lyons engaging the port of Arabat.

From a position off Arabat, Captain Lyons engaged the fort and blew up a caisson of ammunition. The vessels caught outside the Straits were all destroyed.

Plan of summoning the authorities.

In so far as they could without derogating from the performance of their duty, Captain Lyons and M. Sédaiges were intent on the avoidance of measures that might harm the peaceful inhabitants in either person or property; and, before undertaking to execute the works of destruction ordained at Genitchi, at Taganrog, at Marionpol, and at Gheisk, they summoned the authorities in each place to surrender the vessels and the Government property which they meant to destroy; but in every instance (except that of Gheisk) they were met by what, judged from its words, was a thoroughly decisive

The rejections they elicited.

refusal, and driven therefore to execute the forcible measures required for enabling them to compass their object.

These compared with the acts of the authorities professing defiance.

Judged, I have said, from its language; but, none must therefore imagine that the acts of these men in authority corresponded with their words of defiance. Because valiantly sounding, those words were perhaps for the moment delightful to the ear of the much-deceived Czar, but we shall see that they were not followed up by the manful resistance they promised. Of all the three local commanders who successively hurled defiance one certainly attempted resistance, but only of the most feeble kind, which did not cause a loss to the Allies of so much as even one life; and the other two, when danger came, simply marched off their troops, without fighting, to distant places of safety.

Operations at Genitchi, 29th May.

Genitchi was a town on the straits called after its name which connect the Sea of Azof with the inner waters of the Sivache. Apprehending that, if the Allies should prove able to enter those waters, they might operate against his communications by the north of the Crimea, Prince Gortchakoff but a few days before, had not only reinforced the garrison of Genitchi, but had also sent into the place a new governor, Colonel Prince Lobanoff-Rostoffsky, with instructions to organise the defence of the Straits. When the new governor found himself summoned to abstain from all defence of the vessels and Government property at Genitchi, he rejected the demand in high-spirited language, which, supposing it

CHAP. IV.

about to be followed by corresponding action, was right and becoming; but the sequel of his warlike response seems beyond measure strange. Though he did not recall the defiance, Prince Lobanoff-Rostoffsky 'not choosing to expose his troops to useless 'losses, withdrew them to a distance of five versts 'from the town;'* thus leaving the unarmed inhabitants to face the dangers created by him who had rejected the summons, and to see a chief follow up his proud words of defiance by marching off the whole garrison to a place of safety!

It may well have been fitting to refuse the demanded surrender, or—under a contrary view—to withdraw the troops without fighting; but how the man could—with honour—adopt both the courses of action, and leave unarmed people to suffer for all his vainglorious words, I have not been able to see.

By shelling a part of Genitchi, the squadrons opened a way through the Straits for the boats sent in under Mackenzie. The lieutenant and his men soon pushed through to the place of imagined safety which the fugitive vessels had reached, and set fire to them all (they were 73 in number) as well as to the great stores of corn there collected by the Russian Government.

The boats had returned to the ships, when men saw that other, though more distant, vessels were within reach, and that—turned by a change of wind—the fire was losing its hold on the range of the enemy's corn-stores.

Thereupon Lyons resumed his fire on the place,

* Todleben, vol. ii. p. 289.

and once more sent in the boats under Lieutenant Mackenzie, who destroyed the more distant vessels which had previously escaped destruction.

The service of landing on a part of the beach out of gunshot from the squadron, and there re-firing the corn-stores in the teeth of the Russians there seen to be gathered, seemed one of a desperate kind; and, supposing the enterprise to be attempted by a considerable body of men, it promised to involve a painful sacrifice of life; but three fearless officers—Lieutenant Buckley of the Miranda, Lieutenant Burgoyne of the Swallow, and Mr John Roberts, gunner of the Ardent, volunteered to achieve the object with their own unaided hands; and, Captain Lyons accepting their offer, they not only accomplished the task, but then happily made good their way back in spite of all the Cossacks endeavouring to cut them off from their boat. That day, 90 merchant-vessels and corn-stores supposed to be worth £100,000 were destroyed.

1st to 3d June. Operations at Taganrog and the mouths of the Don.

Those shoals off the mouths of the Don which had forbidden all hope of escape for the enemy's squadron of Kertch, now seemed to be defending Taganrog and the adjacent shore from the enterprises of Captain Lyons and M. Sédaiges; for in even its 'Inner' roadstead, the flotilla of the Allies (as a whole) was kept far out at a distance of nearly 10 miles from the shore.*

* At first only 8½, but increased to 10 miles by a change of wind and a consequent fall of 3 feet in the depth of the water.

CHAP. IV.

There existed, however, some channels lying open to the incursion of vessels with a very light draught, such, for instance, as the English Recruit or the French Mouette; and although, as might well be expected, the enemy had taken good care to remove the lights and the beacons, it was possible for the skill of the seamen to re-discover (by sounding) the veins of deeper—though still shallow—water that found their way through the shoal.

This Taganrog, we know, was a place where the vast supplies brought down the Don lay stored on the beach; and the problem requiring solution asked how to effect the destruction of these warlike treasures whilst defended from naval aggression by a shoal ten miles broad, and by more than 3000 troops.

The resources for this purpose owned by Lyons and M. Sédaiges consisted only as yet of those vessels both few and small which, like the Recruit and Mouette, could make their way over the shoal. They brought with them, of course, their ships' companies, each including its share of marines, but had otherwise no troops on board.

In the night of the 1st of June, Lieutenant Day found a channel for his craft, the Recruit—a vessel that drew little water — and, the next morning, going on board her, Captain Lyons reconnoitred the town.

Since (with only the stated exceptions) the vessels composing the squadrons were—because of the shoal—lying off the town and port of Taganrog at a distance of nearly ten miles, the question was how,

without them, to provide such a fire as would cover the landing of men. The seamen bent their minds to the problem; and Commander Cowper Coles of the Stromboli contrived a raft which would pass over the shoals with a gun of 42 cwt. well planted in battery; whilst Lieutenant-Commander Horton of the Ardent imagined, and constructed with hammocks, what the men called 'a bed'—a bed so disposed on board the pinnace of his ship, that it furnished the needed support for a 32-pounder in action. Due experiment afterwards proved that the raft and the pinnace thus planned would, each of them, answer its purpose; and, with only those means of attack which have now been sufficiently indicated, the French and English captains agreed that their endeavours to burn down the stores which the Czar had collected at Taganrog should begin the next day, the 3d, at 3 o'clock in the morning.

But at sunset—despatched opportunely by Admiral Lyons—there hove in sight three river-steamers, light enough to move over the shoal, and carrying each one or more guns, with also twelve launches withdrawn from the line-of-battle ships. This welcome reinforcement supplied the exact means of action required for closing upon the enemy's stores in spite of the shoal which protected them.

From the way in which these welcome means were about to be used, it resulted that launches and other less boats would, this time, be expected to render the same kind of service as that which a fleet any day undertakes when, by pouring down fire on

CHAP. IV.

a beach, it covers a landing of troops. The measureless inferiority of any mere boats as compared with a man-of-war was to be compensated by the power they had of coming to much closer quarters with an enemy arrayed on the shore.

On the morning of the 3d of June (after duly concerting his measures with M. Sédaiges) Captain Lyons, on board the Recruit, advanced to an anchorage only 1400 yards from the mole-head, having with him the other light-draught vessels, both English and French, which were all of them towing their launches. On board one of the French light-draught vessels thus brought through the shoal to the front M. Sédaiges was present in person.

With the boats all collected astern of their vessels, Captain Lyons and M. Sédaiges awaited the Governor's answer to their summons.* The answer came after a while from General Krasnoff—an answer importing that he rejected the terms, and that having troops at his disposal, he meant to defend the place.(4)

Then down ran the flag of truce which, since the despatch of the summons, Captain Lyons had shown from the mast-head of the little Recruit, and off moved the launches and boats which till then had been lying astern. Cowper Coles of the Stromboli commanded them, and in company with them, under the immediate orders of Captain Le Jeune, the French boats also moved forward. When all had reached the chosen position, the tow was cast off, and 'the

* What the terms of each summons were has been before shown. See *ante*, p. 64.

'boats' heads,' as Lyons expressed it, 'pulled round 'to the beach.' If borrowing land-service diction, one might say, I suppose, that from column the boats opened out into line. They began to deliver their fire against the enemy's troops, now seen to be on the alert, and desiring, if they could, to defend the vast range of the Government stores.

CHAP. IV.

The Russian troops or their leaders appeared to understand very well that, in order to defend the stores, they must come down towards the beach in the teeth of the fire from our boats; and, though feebly, they made several efforts to effect this advance. From time to time some of the bolder of them came down near to the Government stores, but never in numbers sufficient to make good their attempted defence; and accordingly it resulted that, from the first to the last, the enemy remained fended off from the strip of ground under dispute.

By thus fending off the Czar's troops, Captain Lyons and M. Sédaiges laid open a way for the second stage of their enterprise.

With a separate division of light boats carrying rockets and one gun on board, Lieutenant Mackenzie covered the approach of Lieutenant Cecil Buckley, who in a four-oared gig, accompanied by Mr Henry Cooper, boatswain, and manned by volunteers, repeatedly landed and fired the stores and Government buildings. By 3 o'clock in the afternoon, all the long ranges of stores of grain, planks and tar, and the vessels on the stocks, were in a blaze, as were also the Custom house and other Government buildings.

CHAP. IV.

The destruction included a Russian war-schooner, with also a Russian guardship; but it was by the enemy's own hands that that last vessel perished. (5)

The good seamanship manifested by the French and the English.

So great was the skill exerted by the seamen both English and French, that though operating for three days amid shoals of vast extent, they did not from the first to the last encounter a single mishap.

From the feebleness of the Russian defence it resulted that the Allies were enabled to achieve their whole object without either inflicting any serious loss, or themselves losing even one life. They only lost one marine wounded; the Russians losing one soldier killed, and twelve more or less slightly wounded. The enemy's rejection of the summons had been proudly, defiantly worded; but the sacrifice it involved was left to fall much more severely on hapless non-combatants than on that newly reinforced body of from three to four thousand soldiers which had feebly resisted the landing, and had hardly, if at all, interfered with the steady work of destruction effected under their eyes.

Of the peaceful inhabitants eleven were killed, and forty-seven otherwise stricken.*

The defence from its weakness afforded of course a poor sequel to those high-toned words of rejection with which the summons was met, and seemed even to annul the whole warrant for a course of proceeding which subjected the peaceful inhabitants to losses of life and property. None could say that the vic-

* Todleben, vol. ii. p. 291.

tims were sacrificed to the exigencies of a valiant defence. CHAP. IV.

Marionpol was a place on the only highroad then left to the enemy for effecting his communications between the country of the Don and the Crimea; and Colonel Kostrukoff, there commanding, affected to defy the summons brought him from Lyons and M. Sédaiges; but the Allies quickly landed some men, and thereupon the whole garrison, consisting of some hundreds of Cossacks, was at once marched off without fighting to a place of safety. The town thenceforth remained for five hours in the hands of the Allies. The Allies took care to destroy the great stores of grain in the place, but did no harm to the town. (6) 5th June. Operations at Marionpol.

At Gheisk, the authorities yielded to the exigency of the summons, and a vast quantity of hay and corn was destroyed. Operations at Gheisk, 6th June.

By a skilful manœuvre of his vessel, the Ardent, in deep water found near the shore, Lieutenant Horton proved able to land from Kiten Bay Mr Roberts the gunner; and he with but two men to aid him destroyed sacks of flour collected for embarkation to the number of about 30,000. 9th June. Operations on the shore of Kiten Bay.

It was not within the time limited by the bounds of this Narrative that Sherard Osborn and Hewett

CHAP. IV.

completed the work of destruction or obtained (as they did before long) the control of the Arabat Spit—that singular natural causeway thrown up between the two seas which, with scarce room for anything else, still carried the imperial post-road a distance of some eighty miles, and therefore seemed precious to Russia.

Losses of the Russians;

From all these operations recounted in the Sea of Azof, there resulted a loss to the enemy's combative forces of a few score men killed or wounded, and to

of the Allies;

the Allies a loss of two men wounded.

Causes of their immunity.

This happy immunity from serious loss proved superbly the seaman-like qualities of young Lyons and M. Sédaiges and the officers and men acting under them — sailors charged with duties which aimed at firm repression, not conquest, and at what was rather forcible government than flagrant war between equals. The immunity, we can see, was obtained by unfailing presence of mind, by a naval skill ever ready for each successive emergency, and withal by the well-applied daring of particular men. Thus, when Lieutenant Cecil Buckley and John Roberts (gunner) at Genitchi, and Cecil Buckley again with Henry Cooper (boatswain) at Taganrog volunteered to undertake special services of a hazardous kind, they effectually compassed their objects, but they did something more. By dispensing with the aid of numbers, they plainly averted the evil of having to risk many lives.

The Allies put themselves to the pain of destroy-

ing these vast stores of food, because they had ventured to hope on what at the time seemed good grounds that the check which their measure imposed on the flow of supplies to the enemy would impair, if not bring to an end, his protracted defence of Sebastopol; but Russia, as was afterwards known, had already provisioned her army engaged under Gortchakoff for the whole of the then pending year, and was not therefore brought to extremities by losses which rather affected the great reserve magazines than any immediate wants.

The object of the Allies.

This in great measure baffled.

The havoc, however, was great. In the first four days of the operations in the Sea of Azof, it already included the destruction of 246 vessels, a number soon augmented to one which our admiral pronounced to be 'nearly 500'; and on the 2d of June (a day long antecedent to the close of the destructive operations) he officially stated that the destructive operations conducted in the Sea of Azof had already overtaken a quantity of flour and corn which, if added to what was destroyed by the hands of the Russians themselves (as shown by their Custom-house books, would have furnished rations for four months to an army of 100,000 men.*

Greatness of the havoc.

Of the vessels destroyed very many were Greek; and supposing, as I do, that the Czar was not without just, kingly pride, this bare fact must have touched to the quick his sense of honour and dig-

Many of the destroyed vessels Greek:

* Admiral Lyons to Lord Raglan, 2d June 1855.

CHAP. IV.

nity. He had welcomed these gifted people, then warmly disposed towards his cause, making use of their toil and their property in what I have—not wrongly—called the interior of his empire, and yet there, even there, he had found himself unable to shield them from the power of his naval invaders.

the bearing of this circumstance on the Czar's sense of dignity.

The merely physical losses sustained by the Czar were as nothing when put in comparison with the moral torture applied by carrying a naval invasion straight into the trunk of his empire.

The moral stress put on Russia by taking the Sea of Azof.

If—fermenting in the midst of a people good, kindly, humane, and still (in the mass) truly loyal—an outburst of truculent doctrine has of late seemed to hedge round the Czars with assassins instead of adorers, it does not of course at all follow that the origin of this hateful wickedness can safely be traced up to causes in force at the time of the war; but in spite of its Byzantine taint, what people call the 'Czar-worship' is not, after all, quite so slavish, so utterly abject a posture of trembling humanity as many believe when they hear of the grandiose prayers and thanksgivings which Moscow offers up to its idol. Much, in that respect, like other loyalty to other sovereigns the 'worship' of the Czar rests in part on the floating idea that its votaries are accustomed to form of his power—his genuine power on earth, and, not least, his power to defend them from enemies with whom he has quarrelled.

Did the Czar's incapacity to defend his subjects tend at all to shake their old loyalty?

In so far as the creed was thus based, it lay open of course to a shock, when young Lyons (with Captain Sédaiges) began to touch the empire at home.

CHAP. IV.

The Miranda had broken a spell. Till she passed through the Straits with her following on the 25th of May, the Azof had been a real province—a sea-clad province of Russia; and, for men on its shores to be witnessing the severance of such a possession from the Czar's inner territories, to be under a ban for the crime—the strangely new crime—of being his faithful subjects engaged in his actual service, to see how Russian commanders with infantry under their orders comported themselves in those hours when mass after mass of carefully harvested wealth was in course of being burnt to the ground because it belonged to their sovereign, but moreover to know that the Czar's lieutenants (including Prince Lobanoff-Rostoffsky) were men who could act in the way we were painfully forced to observe,—all this, if at first only startling, may perhaps have begun before long to disenchant some of the votaries who long had been steady enough in the practice of humble Czar-worship.

It was natural that the change should be slow. Men might long go on dimly imagining that their old faith was sound; but, whether conscious or not of the change coming over their minds, they were plainly dragged far on the road which leads from darkness to light when forced to see, as they did from the shores of the Azof, that their Czar, if, as always, divine, was still for the moment at best an unsuccessful Divinity.

In proportion to its disturbing effect on the mind of the humble Don Cossack, or any other poor shores-

CHAP. IV.

man, the loss of the Sea of Azof was tormenting of course to his rulers, and all the more since they knew that its severance from the Czar's dominions was so far definitive that perforce it would have to be borne, until the Invaders at last should choose to grant Russia a peace.

III.

Attack on Soudjak-Kalé and Anapa recommended.

The forces, both naval and military, which had opened the Straits of Kertch lay assembled at no great distance from Soudjak-Kalé and Anapa, then held by Russia on the Circassian coast; and a prompt attack on these strongholds was eagerly counselled by Lyons.

Troops despatched for the purpose.

First, Lord Raglan, then General Pélissier, adopted our admiral's project; and, to carry it into effect, a body of three thousand infantry—two-thirds of it French, one-third English—with a detachment of English artillery and fifteen 32-pounder battering guns was quickly despatched to Sir George Brown.

Fall of Soudjak-Kalé.

Divining apparently the purpose of the Allies, General Khoumatoff determined that, without awaiting the expected attack, Soudjak-Kalé should be abandoned, and accordingly on the 28th of May, after first destroying its batteries (which comprised sixty guns and six mortars), the garrison withdrew from the place, but Anapa still held out; and upon the reduction of this latter and much greater fortress the desire of the Allies became concentrated.

CHAP. IV.

All at once, under orders from Paris, the attack upon Anapa by either French ships or French troops was forbidden in terms the most peremptory that language could furnish.

Attack of Anapa peremptorily forbidden by Louis Napoleon.

It may well be supposed that attributing to himself all the powers of a thoroughly absolute sovereign, and sincerely convinced of his skill in the art of waging war from a distance, the French Emperor had suffered acutely on finding himself set aside in the way we have seen by the stern, unbending Pélissier; and—as though to recover his self-respect, and his sense of being really an Emperor—the bitterly mortified sovereign clutched hard at what seemed an occasion for asserting himself once more as a potentate that even strong men must obey. Having heard of the resolve to make an attack upon Anapa, he ventured to come down on Pélissier with an imperial message, commanding him on no pretext whatever to allow an expedition to Anapa.* Pélissier fiercely met the prohibition by determining that it should not be obeyed; but he varied his plan of resistance. He showed Lord Raglan the draft of a letter from himself to Admiral Bruat in which, after stating the purport of the Emperor's order, he directed the admiral 'notwithstanding to 'pass by Anapa on his return and to take part in 'the naval bombardment of the place.'†

Pélissier's determined resistance to the prohibition.

The letter, Pélissier said, was afterwards modified,

* 3d June: 'Sous aucun prétexte ne permettez d'Expédition à Anapa.' Lord Raglan to Secretary of State, Secret, 12th June 1855.

† Ibid.

CHAP. IV.

and perhaps he, still later, determined to refrain altogether from sending it; (7) but at all events, Admiral Bruat—unassailed by any real countermand—went on with the planned expedition.

Lord Raglan's censure on the French Emperor.

Lord Raglan was angered by this new attempt of the Emperor to interrupt the business of war. 'I 'fear,' wrote the English commander, 'that much 'inconvenience may arise if his Imperial Majesty 'pursue the system of forbidding operations that 'may have been determined upon.'*

While thus running dead counter in action to Louis Napoleon's orders, Pélissier, it seems, was vouchsafing no other kind of reply to his sovereign's imperious mandate; (8) but fate meanwhile interposed with the magic touch of a fact. Persuaded that if left to face the approaching armada, its garrison would be simply annihilated, the enemy, under Khoumatoff's orders, withdrew on the 5th of June from the fortress of Anapa, and passed at once over the Kouban, thus abandoning with the last of his strongholds in that cherished part of the empire the whole Circassian coast.† He left in the place, as I count them, from our admiral's detailed report, 114 pieces of artillery.

Fall of Anapa.

The enemy's forced abandonment of the whole Circassian coast.

Troops left to guard the Straits;

rest brought back.

Sir George Brown left the 5000 Turks supported by a thousand French troops, as well as by a thousand of English to guard the Straits of Kertch, and with the rest of his forces returned at once to the Chersonese.

* Lord Raglan to Secretary of State, 12th June (No. 89).

† Ibid.

RUSSIA IN EUROPE.

J. Bartholomew & Co. Edin.r

RUSSIA IN EUROPE.

IV.

A contrast.

The fortunes of this brief campaign (lasting only about twenty days) were in contrast at more than one point with those of the main undertaking. In the course of their strife for Sebastopol the Allies had won glorious victories; but (after sustaining great losses) had as yet conquered nothing at all except the ground under their feet; whilst by this smoother Kertch expedition they had not tempted the enemy to face them in battle, and of course therefore had not been able to gain any victories, but still they achieved signal conquests.

General results of the Kertch expedition.

The easy, untroubled invasion of the Kertchine Peninsula, the seizure of all the ground needed for the object in hand, the coercion that forced the enemy to destroy his whole chain of coast batteries, and burn down vessel by vessel, his war-squadron formed and assembled to guard these precious waters of Kertch, the opening of the famous straits of the Cimmerian Bosphorus, the armed occupation of the Sea of Azof excluding all other flags, the hand of Authority laid on the shores of every province of Russia that bordered on what until then had been a 'closed' Russian lake, the enforced withdrawal of Russia from Soudjak-Kalé, from Anapa (the last of the strongholds she owned on the south of the Kouban), her immediate abandonment of the whole of the Circassian coast, the infliction besides on the Czar of such minor forfeitures as that of some 340 pieces of

CHAP. IV.

ordnance, of nearly 500 vessels engaged in his great commissariat tasks, and of supplies in enormous quantities all amassed for his army engaged on the Sebastopol theatre of war—these indeed, one may say, were results which, if purchased by battles and victories, might well have seemed more than sufficient to compensate serious losses; and yet the whole string of conquests scarce cost the Allies any sacrifice, did not cost them even one single life.

These not attained by surprise;

Nor can any man say that the conquerors attained their end by surprise; for since even so early a time as the spring of the previous year (1854), the Russians had been actively engaged in endeavouring to secure both their Straits and their Kertchine Peninsula from the much-apprehended attacks;* whilst, so far as concerned the advantage of being newly put on his guard, Baron Wrangel was specially blest; since but three weeks before, he had seen and studied the lineaments of the then approaching Armada not as yet overtaken at sea by Canrobert's words of recall.

nor (in the main) by defaults of Russian commanders.

Nor again can the main of what followed be fairly said to result from the faults or defaults of the Russian commanders. Baron Wrangel was plainly unable to defend the Kertchine Peninsula, and warranted therefore in yielding. Rear-Admiral Wulff on the whole could hardly perhaps do much better than destroy, as he did, his own squadron. General Khoumatoff, when abandoning the Circassian fortresses and the whole Circassian coast, acted under the pain-

* Todleben, ii. pp. 267 *et seq.*

ful stress of what—perhaps rightly—he judged to be hugely superior force; and, although it may be that, if led with a valour in action proportioned to the valour in words displayed by the officers summoned on the shores of the Sea of Azof, the troops under Prince Lobanoff-Rostoffsky, under General Krasnoff, and under Colonel Kostrukoff might have saved a good deal of their sovereign's property, and subjected the Allies to some loss, they, even so, could not have met the full stress of the naval invasion, or altered at all its main issue.

The phenomenon (so far) left unexplained.

Granting this, there stands out a phenomenon unexplained by assigning 'surprise' or error of counsel—one inviting us to say why it was that Russia—a great Military Power—could be quietly stripped of possessions very dear to her—possessions by sea, and by land, and this with such masterful ease, that from the first to the last she only wounded three of her assailants and did not kill even one.

The true explanation.

The simple truth is, that in regions where land and sea much intertwine, an Armada having on board it no more than a few thousand troops, but comprising a powerful fleet, and propelled by steam-power, can use its amphibious strength with a wondrously cogent effect; and—engaged as he was at the time in defending Sebastopol, the troubled Czar, after all, was not a potentate strong enough to withstand such an engine of war.

Lyons the originator and eager advocate of the Expedition.

The merit of perceiving this truth, and enforcing it with passionate eagerness, belonged to our Admiral Lyons, and—approved by Admiral Bruat—his meas-

CHAP. IV.

Carrying with him Admiral Bruat and Lord Raglan.

ure received from Lord Raglan a warm, never-failing support; but, if we ask who in this business was the conqueror of the greatest obstacles, the palm must go to Pélissier. Concealing under his violence of speech and of manner the gifts that made him well able to shape and maintain a wise policy, he had plainly divined that, whether the English were right, or whether wrong in their eagerness for the Kertch Expedition, they could hardly be brought back again into that state of confidence and good-humour which a cordial alliance demands, unless the recall sent by Canrobert at one o'clock in the morning of the 4th of May could be expiated, if so one may speak, by renewing without loss of time the joint expedition to Kertch.

Pélissier;

his propulsion of the measure against the will of his Emperor.

Pélissier brought to bear on the object that will of his—always strong—which seemed in him to be steeled by the fierce heat of anger. He had need of his strength; for of late, as we know, the French Emperor had become more than ever an active, rampant opposer of all that the generals on the Chersonese believed to be their best means of effectively conducting the war.

With the letter of the law on his side, though not, of course, its true spirit (for he did not act like a king in full concert with the high State Authorities), this dream-ridden Louis Napoleon was still as before insistent on his actual, personal right to be playing the great game of war from St Cloud or from Paris; whilst Pélissier, believing it plain that surrender to such pretensions would inflict grievous harm upon

France, and would even put in dire peril the honour of her arms, was brought perforce under the sway of principles higher and broader than those which in general serve to guide the conduct of officers. Resorting freely to action as a means of thwarting interference, and writing but little to Paris, he firmly maintained his own will against the will of his sovereign, and—without bringing on any rupture—proved able to set him aside. (9)

The severity of the contest which ended in this good result may well have been masked by Pélissier's fierce, scornful way of alluding to any opposers like Niel and the Emperor; but in reality, the struggle was arduous, was full of danger, and must have cost the strong man anxious moments. This is why I have said that amongst the chiefs, naval and military, who firmly pressed to an issue this Kertch Expedition, Pélissier was the one who conquered the gravest obstacle.

Effect of the success on the mind of Louis Napoleon;

It was scarce possible that the thorough success of an expedition undertaken against the set will of Louis Napoleon should give him immense, unmixed joy. He, of course, had to say, as he did in six or seven cold words, he was glad the expedition had succeeded, but he hastened in the very same sentence to protest against every such measure. (10)

on the camps of the Allies;

The tidings of what had been achieved by the Kertch Expedition produced a great moral effect. They spread joy in the camp of the Allies, where

CHAP. IV.

on the Russians.

Pélissier and Lord Raglan commanded;* and proportionally afflicted and disheartened the forces defending Sebastopol.†

The stress it put on their Czar.

Those who know where the Czardom is weak, and therefore know where it is tender, will say, I believe, that, if executed with like success some weeks before, when Lyons and Lord Raglan first urged it, this eastward invasion of Russia would have governed the issue of the Vienna negotiations, and brought the war to an end.

* Lord Raglan to Secretary of State, 'These gallant exploits of the 'Navy have spread joy in our camps.'—June 5, 1855.

† 'Impression défavorable.'—Todleben, ii. p. 295.

CHAPTER V.

OPENING OF THE THIRD BOMBARDMENT.—VICTORIOUS ASSAULTS OF ALL THE COUNTER-APPROACHES BY FRENCH AND ENGLISH TROOPS.—CONCLUSION OF THE THIRD BOMBARDMENT.

I.

CHAP. V.

Resolve of Pélissier to attack the counter-approaches in the Karabelnaya.

THE French and the English commanders had been meanwhile resolving in concert to attack all those counter-approaches that guarded the Karabelnaya. These included not only the White Redoubts and the Kamtchatka Lunette, which had sprung, as it were, out of darkness to challenge and mock at the French in the months of February and March, but also the Work of the Quarries—directly opposed to the English—which had since been thrown up by the enemy in front of his Great Redan.

Their concord.

The concord at this time established between Pélissier and Lord Raglan was not the result of agreement attained by any mere compromise. Each chief thought exactly alike on the questions then ripe for decision, and having worked out his conclusion at a separate time, had also apparently reached it by a separate process of thought. With

CHAP. V.

The shield this afforded against Louis Napoleon's interference.

all its other priceless advantages, the concord thus happily reigning between Pélissier and Lord Raglan was plainly a shield of great strength that well might be used in resistance to any further dictation attempted against them from Paris; and, as though to prepare their agreement for service in that special way, the two chiefs reduced it to writing by a fitting exchange of letters.

The vain resistance of Niel.

Clinging fast to his much-beloved doctrine, General Niel continued to urge that the investment of Sebastopol—in other words, a campaign fought out with success in the Open—should precede any action attempted against the counter-approaches;* but the power—the baneful power—he had wielded in Canrobert's time rested then on the authority of the Emperor, and the Emperor himself, as we know, had by this time proved wholly unable to obstruct the fiery Pélissier. 'Knowing nothing of what is going on'—so Niel wrote to the Minister of War—'I 'abstain from all reflection. I asked leave to offer 'some observations on the state of the siege, and 'was told that it was not the time.'†

Though the deputy of the far-distant monarch was thus almost fiercely repressed, the monarch himself might still try to assert his authority. Undeterred by the series of rebuffs and defeats to

*Rousset, ii. p. 215.

†Ibid., p. 216. Apparently sorry for his rudeness, Pélissier afterwards sent for Niel, and received him with marked kindness, but did not let him give counsel.

CHAP. V.

which we saw him exposed, the French Emperor ventured once more to try the flat 'letter of the 'law' against his resolute general. On the 5th of June, he allowed himself to assail Pélissier with this message, sent by telegraph:—'For the happiness 'of France, and for the glory of our arms, you are 'at the head of the finest army that perhaps has 'ever existed. An immortal reputation is assured 'to you, but you must do great things.* Indeed the 'conduct of the siege is more a business within the 'sphere of the commander of the Engineers than of 'the Commander-in-Chief. Now, the general of 'Engineers has addressed to you these observations: '"If you choose to continue the siege without in-'"vesting the place, you will only obtain after bloody '"and desperate struggles, which will cost you the '"sacrifice of your best soldiers, that which would '"come to you of its own accord after the invest-'"ment." In accord with the English Govern-'ment, which is writing in the same sense to Lord 'Raglan, I give you the positive order to abstain from 'throwing your strength into the business of the 'siege before having invested the place.* So con-'cert measures with Lord Raglan and Omar Pasha 'for taking the offensive and operating whether by 'the Tchernaya or against Simphéropol.'†

The French Emperor's prohibition.

Proceeding on the same day towards action of a kind strictly opposite to the course thus enjoined,

Persistence of Pélissier

* 'Je vous donne l'ordre positif de ne point vous acharner au siége avant d'avoir investi la place.'—Rousset, ii. p. 232.

† Ibid.

CHAP. V.

Pélissier thus telegraphed to Paris:—'I am to see 'Lord Raglan to-day (with whom, by the way, I am 'in perfect accord), in order to make the final dis- 'positions for the assault which is to put in our power 'the White Redoubts, the Green Mamelon, and the 'Quarry in front of the Great Redan. According to 'my present reckoning, I shall commence this opera- 'tion on the 7th, and I shall push it on unrelentingly 'with the utmost vigour.'*

This telegram from Pélissier was despatched, it would seem, at an hour when Louis Napoleon's peremptory orders of the same day had not reached the French camp; but their subsequent arrival wrought no change at all in the purpose of the stubborn commander; and defying the imperial command, he, in concert with Lord Raglan, made haste to deliver the attack he had planned.

The contemplated attack.

By compassing that part of the project which aimed at the two White Redoubts and the Kamtchatka Lunette, our allies, after a long and mortifying interval of submission to hostile encroachments, would assert themselves at last as besiegers no longer repressed by the garrison; and one attractive feature in the plan was the proposed attack of 'the Quarries'; for in that field of action, though separated by an interposing ravine, the English, at no great distance, would be fighting on the left of the French.

* Ibid.

II.

Resources and preparatives of the garrison.

The Allies of course meant that the intended assaults should be preceded by a bombardment, and it therefore may be right to say that their siege-batteries at this time counted 588 guns, whilst the guns of the Russians were in number 1174, of which 571 were of great calibre.

Besides the troops assigned to the coast batteries, the Russian garrison now comprised 57 battalions, 22 of which guarded the Faubourg; but dissension at this time was troubling the Russian defence, so that, contrary to the insistence and solemn warning of Todleben, the works destined to be attacked were left in an undermanned state. For the defence of the two White Redoubts the Selinghinsk and the Volhynian, as well as of the five-gun Zabalkansky battery which had been constructed in their rear, there were only assigned six weak battalions, and five of these during the daytime were kept in somewhat distant reserve (one in and near the Troitsky Ravine, and four in the Ouchakoff gorge, so that, to occupy the two White Redoubts, there remained only one battalion 450 strong, which, accordingly, furnished them garrisons of no more than 225 men each. Ten battalions—one forming its garrison, the other nine held in reserve—were assigned for the defence of the Kamtchatka Lunette, and six for the defence of the Quarries.

Resistance to Todleben; its consequence.

From the 31st of May until a late hour on the

CHAP. V.

7th of June, General Jabrokritski commanded the troops in the Faubourg, and to him, in conjunction with General Timovieff (who had advised a like reduction), there specially fell the blame of leaving the defence of the works to insufficient forces; though of course the discredit of not repressing the pretensions of generals who presumed to be hampering the measures of the great engineer, would rest with the Commander-in-Chief—with General Michael Gortchakoff.

On the 7th of June, at an hour when assault was impending, Jabrokritski gave up the command, and was succeeded by General Khrouleff. Khrouleff thereupon gave orders for reinforcing the garrisons of all the counter-approaches with the utmost despatch, but he was baffled by the stress of events then almost immediately following, and it resulted that not only on the 6th, but also down to the evening of the 7th of June, the strength and disposition of the garrisons continued to be such as we have seen.

III.

Bombardment of the 6th of June.

In the afternoon of the 6th, at about three o'clock, the siege batteries of the Allies opened fire against most, if not all, of the works which defended the Karabel Faubourg. Well answered at first by the garrison, this third and most powerful of all the yet delivered bombardments was unrelentingly pressed until the day closed.

CHAP. V.

Wh[illegible]n Pélissier not long before night-time had left th[illegible]e Victoria Ridge, and was riding back towards [illegible]is headquarters he encountered a happy surprise. [illegible]Our soldiery knew, although vaguely, that after a[illegible]ceding to the command of the French army, its ne[illegible] Chief refusing to shrink from even terrible sacrific[illegible]s had peremptorily met the encroachments attemp[illegible]ed from Western Sebastopol by hard, victorious f[illegible]ghting, that he had placed himself in full concert[illegible] with the English commander, taking part in that [illegible]Kertch expedition which had brought mighty joy to t[illegible]e camp, that he and the English Commander had al[illegible]ady begun a new enterprise, that so early as ever[illegible] the morrow his troops and those of Lord Raglan [illegible]would storm all the counter-approaches then left to [illegible]affront the besiegers; and, if our soldiers divined[illegible] that any French marplot was trying to resist, [illegible]r to thwart the new Chief, their feeling towards [illegible]him of course gathered all the more heart. Riding [illegible]estward across Cathcart's Hill in the evening of [illegible]hat 6th of June, Pélissier found himself greeted [illegible]y the roar of true English hurrahs that sprang f[illegible]om the Light Division, and was taken up camp af[illegible]er camp by all our troops on the Chersonese. P[illegible]issier was deeply impressed. Tears came to the ey[illegible]s of the seemingly hard, iron Chief; but—true co[illegible]mander—he looked to the firm, warlike purpose [illegible]mplied by this heart-stirring welcome. He seized it [illegible]s an omen of victory.*

Pelissier warmly greeted by the English troops.

Significance of their cheers.

Although only with vertical fire (from the time The bombardment

* Letters from Headquarters, ii. p. 294.

CHAP. V.

when darkness set in) a bombardment went on through the night.

continued at night.

Bombardment of the 7th of June.

Next morning, the 7th of June, the siege-guns reopening continued their work of destruction; and, whilst still, as before, expending the main of their strength on the Faubourg, they now too (by way of diversion) assailed the Flagstaff Bastion.

Effect of the bombardment.

On even the first day, *the 6th, the batteries of the* Allies obtained a decisive ascendant; but from the morning of the following day, the 7th, they hour by hour asserted their more and more thorough mastery over all the antagonist batteries. The fire of the allied batteries was so destructive that even General Todleben was fain to break away in describing it from the colder language of science and to treat the bombardment as an abnormal exertion of force—as violent, terrible, murderous. More terrific, it seems, than all else was the fire of the English.* They delivered their artillery blows somewhat slowly, one after another, but with a dreadful exactness, entailing havoc and ruin.(1) After three o'clock in the afternoon, the whole fire of the Allies—then no longer assailing the Flagstaff Bastion—was brought to bear on the Faubourg with appalling effect. By six o'clock in the evening, not only the two White Redoubts on Mount Inkerman with the battery called 'Zabalkansky' then newly thrown up in their rear, but also the Kamtchatka Lunette that crowned the

The fire of the English guns.

Crippled state of the enemy's works consequent in disposing the French.

* Todleben, ii. p. 310.

Mamelon Height, and all the neighbouring works (including even the Malakoff) that might otherwise have given support to the foremost line of defence, were ruined or grievously crippled. Though not for the most part dismounted, the guns in the enemy's batteries were, so to speak, 'buried alive'—covered over with heaps upon heaps of what had been merlons, or traverses, or revetments of lined embrasures.*

In its bearing on all the assaults then about to be made by the French, the bombardment proved itself so effective that their onsets, however exposed to peril of other kinds, could hardly be defeated or checked by any artillery power.

The less injured state of those opposing the English.

Whilst thus smoothing, so far as was possible, the rough path of conquest, the English did more for the French than they found they could do for themselves. They of course poured the fire of their siege-guns on the work of 'the Quarries'—the work they meant to assault—and they wrought a good deal of havoc on the nearest supporting work, that is, the Great Redan;† but they could not so cripple the numerous and powerful batteries in this part of the Karabelnaya as to prevent the enemy's gunners from disputing any hold they might take of the Work they were minded to seize.

The time for the bayonet come.

All, however, agreed that the cannon had now done its work, and that what must come next was —the bayonet.

* Ibid., pp. 314, 315.
† Ibid., p. 315.

CHAP. V.

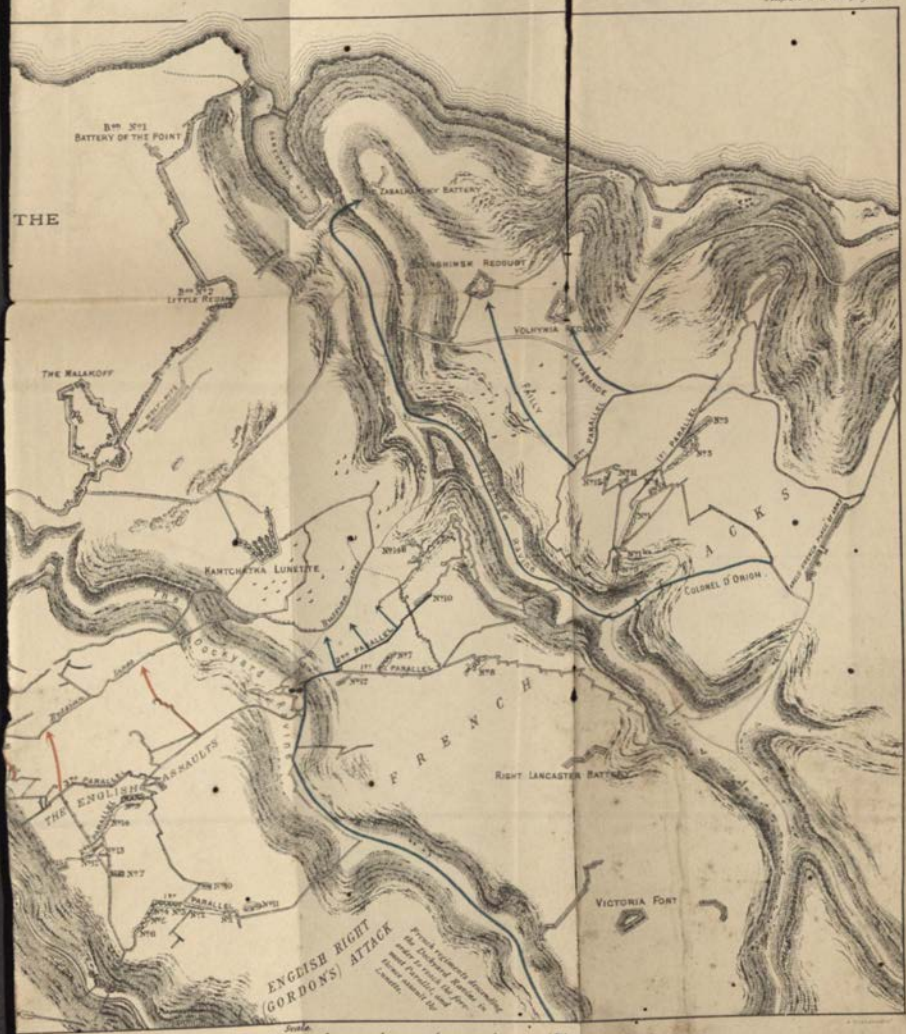
IV.

Plan and preparatives for the assault.

Pélissier and Lord Raglan determined to assault at almost the same time the whole of the counter-approaches which still in the Karabelnaya fronted the now strong besiegers. The attack on the part of the French was to be effected in strength by portions of the 2d, 3d, 4th, and 5th Divisions of the 2d Corps commanded by Bosquet; on the part of the English, by detachments from the Light and Second Divisions, supported (at night) by the 62d Regiment, and entrusted to Colonel Shirley of the 88th, then acting as the general officer in command of the trenches. For counsel in matters best known to Engineer officers, Colonel Shirley had with him Colonel Tylden, the directing Engineer officer of the right attack. The English, as was their wont, hoped to do great things with small numbers; but by exerting the power he held as the officer in command of the trenches, Colonel Shirley could largely reinforce the troops first engaged and a word from Lord Raglan (who would be present in person on the Woronzoff Ridge) might still further add to their strength.

Osman Pasha's division was placed in reserve near the head of the Careenage Ravine.

Map N° 5. to face page 96.



V.

At about half-past six in the evening of the 7th of June the welcome signal was given by a jet of rockets thrown up from the lofty Victoria Ridge; and it not only summoned to action French troops in that part of the field, but also those on Mount Inkerman, with which General Bosquet proposed to carry the two White Redoubts.

Attack and seizure of the two White Redoubts.

With the 4th Division (Dulac) as its reserve, the 3d Division (Mayran) moved forward in two columns; General Lavarande's brigade advancing on the Volhynia, that of Failly on the Selinghinsk Redoubt; and, although the assailants of the Volhynia Redoubt had to cross a breadth of some 330 yards, whilst those attacking the Selinghinsk were to traverse even double that space, both the forces pushed steadily on under fire without coming once to a halt before reaching each its set goal. To accomplish this advance—and it did not cost them any great sacrifice—was almost to ensure final victory; for thenceforth the weight of numbers—two whole French brigades to two bodies of but 225 men each—could scarce fail to govern the issue. The resistance of the two little garrisons might be hopeless, but still was brave. Chestakoff, the commander of the redoubts, and Bélaieff, commanding the battalion, were both of them killed. After a struggle in each of the works, which, although not

CHAP. V.

greatly prolonged, was still hot so long as it lasted, the redoubts were both of them taken, the Volhynia by General Lavarande's, the Selinghinsk by Failly's brigade.

A second battalion of the Moroum regiment came up with a mind to support the vanquished and retreating garrisons; but yielding to weight of numbers, the men of this last force were soon in a state of discomfiture, and sharing in the fate of their comrades. Pursuing their vanquished enemy, the French pressed on over a distance of some 500 yards, and seized the Zabalkansky battery; but not choosing to hold as their own a work so far out in advance, they destroyed its embrasures, and spiked the five guns it contained.*

Seizure and abandonment of the Zabalkansky battery.

The Russians throwing forward two battalions of their Moroum regiment.

When about half an hour had passed, two other battalions of the Moroum regiment which had been in reserve all this while marched out of the Ouchakoff Ravine with a mind to retake the Redoubts; but long since, General Bosquet had seen that any movements of troops going on, whether eastward or westward, between the Faubourg and the White Redoubts might give him a good opportunity of striking them in flank or in rear. Therefore under his orders Lieutenant-Colonel Larrouy d'Orion with two French battalions had moved down along the deep bed of the Careenage Ravine till he came to the viaduct, and had then clambered up the right bank of the gorge to a lair from which he might strike at the front, the flank, or the rear of any

Movement by Colonel d'Orion under Bosquet's orders.

* In that state Todleben found it, vol. ii. p. 330.

Russian troops moving to or from the Redoubts in either advance or retreat. CHAP. V.

His overthrow of the two Moroum battalions;

The two ill-fated Russian battalions had already passed over the viaduct, and were ascending the path up Mount Inkerman which led towards their goal, when all at once Colonel d'Orion with his agile French force sprang up the hillside in their rear, seemed intent to cut them off from Sebastopol, and threw them into confusion. They turned, and strove to get back the way they had come, and their movement to the rear was afterwards represented to Todleben as 'opening a way with the bayonet.' Of what fighting really took place we see indeed one painful trace—for the brave Colonel d'Orion received a mortal wound; but, so far as concerned nearly half, or more strictly four-tenths, of the enemy's force, there resulted nothing short of surrender. Four hundred of the Russians, including twenty officers, were content to be taken prisoners by Colonel d'Orion's force.*

400 Russians surrendering.

French soldiery far out in front.

When the French, as we saw, had determined that the Zabalkansky battery was too distant to be of service to them, and had therefore done their best to destroy it, they were far from intending that their outposts should be kept back in rear of the work they had thus discarded as useless, and took good care, on the contrary, to spread their patrols over ground several hundreds of yards more ad-

* Niel, p. 296. By Todleben (who wrote long afterwards) the statement is not called in question.

CHAP. V.

vanced — ground by which they well knew that the enemy might approach them from the Karabelnaya; whilst also, as was natural, volunteer explorers and idlers moved rambling over the ground newly opened on that summer evening to the eyes of the victors.

Fruitless advances of Russian troops;

The people thus scattered were, at one point, pressed back by Colonel Prince Ouroussoff with a single battalion;* at another by Colonel Kraievsky, despatched under Khrouleff's directions with no less than 800 men. In the course of the movement he made against troops thus receding before him, Prince Ouroussoff entered the site of the discarded battery (which the French had taken, spoilt, and abandoned three hours before), and on that simple action built up—built up, I believe, in good faith—a theory that he with his men had victoriously 'retaken' the work. Though he added that he had retaken it with our old friend 'the bayonet,' one is not therefore forced to infer that he meant to deceive human beings, but rather—Sclave like—to put a kind of 'Hurrah' in the midst of what reads like a statement. Prince Ouroussoff had even what seemed like a 'trophy' of the miniature sort; for the French in their chase had been using a baby-sized howitzer of the kind drawn by human strength; and when the pursuit had ceased, this 'perambulator,' as our nursemaids would call it, was left without 'hands' strong enough to withdraw it from the spot where it stood

their reported achievements.

* General Timovieff (on what ground I know not) accompanied Ouroussoff's battalion, and was killed.

—the spot on which, it would seem, Prince Ouroussoff's soldiery found it.* CHAP. V.

With plain signs of smiling incontinently at Ouroussoff's other mistakes, General Todleben nevertheless accepted the Prince's bold story;(2) and was certainly led to represent that both Ouroussoff and Kraievsky had triumphantly engaged their small forces in not less than two brilliant combats. The theory drew much support from statements which showed that these Colonels had purchased their triumphs by enormous sacrifices of men;† but the French, it appears, never knew of their having sustained the reverses implied by such Russian victories, or at all events did not confess that they had encountered any such checks; and on the whole, my conclusion is that, although both Prince Ouroussoff and Kraievsky (the last under Khrouleff's orders) did really advance up the spur, and press back all the loose soldiery that came in their way, they encountered no formed battalion, and engaged in no serious fight, their losses being caused by the error of 'trespassing,' if so one may speak, on what had become a French realm, without any due warlike motive. The deserts of the Prince and of Khrouleff (the ordainer of Kraievsky's advance) were not unlike those of an officer who has wasted good troops in the pastime of molesting an enemy's piquets.

Rejoicing in what he believed to have been his

* See Rousset, vol. ii. p. 235.

† The Prince losing *one-half* of his force, and Kraievsky 187 out of 800. Todleben, pp. 322 and 327.

29993

CHAP. V. triumphant recapture of the Zabalkansky battery, and there contentedly tarrying, whilst also perhaps somewhat flushed by his seizure of the small French 'perambulator,' Prince Ouroussoff harboured a fancy strong enough to make him feel sure that he then had 'no more worlds to conquer.' He not only fancied, but even — twice over — reported that the two White Redoubts—then observed to be doggedly silent—had passed back into the hands of his own fellow-countrymen, and he even brought General Khrouleff to accept the same pleasant belief; but under Todleben's orders the valiant sea-captain Skariatine* dispelled it in a very plain way by moving up with some men to the verge of the Selinghinsk Redoubt, and approaching the work so closely—of course the darkness was favouring—as to be able to catch the voices of soldiers talking within it, and hear that they were talking in French.

Both this and the Volhynia Redoubt were secure in the hands of their conquerors; but the site of the Zabalkansky battery remained in the hands of the Russians till a day or two afterwards, when, as the French had done before them, they spontaneously relinquished what Ouroussoff had thought to be a great prize.

It was after his capture of the Volhynia Redoubt, and indeed on the following day that—stricken unhappily by a merely chance shot—the brave General Lavarande fell.

* Respecting Skariatine, see Note in the Appendix (3).

VI.

First seizure of the Kamtchatka Lunette by the French.

Far away from the two White Redoubts, but still in a sense closely joined with them by relations of interdependence, that work audaciously planted on 'the Mamelon' with which the genius of Todleben had long been shielding his Malakoff was now at last brought under challenge. Not to take the Kamtchatka Lunette by even so mighty an effort as Pélissier was determined to make, would be a disheartening calamity; but to win it might be winning a stepping-stone to the paramount stronghold, and—after a while—to Sebastopol. Few, if any, believed that the Work could be seized and held fast without incurring grave losses.

5.30 P.M. The French troops harangued by Bosquet.

At half-past five o'clock in the evening, General Bosquet, on ground near the Lancaster Battery, which he had chosen as his post of observation, assembled the Divisions of Camou and Brunet—the troops destined to attack the Lunette—and haranguing them regiment by regiment was answered by the cheers of the men. In order to reach the last covert from which they would make their spring, they were first to advance some way down by the bed of the Dockyard Ravine, next file up its right bank, and proceed to line the Third Parallel—the foremost entrenchment then stretching across the Victoria Ridge. There ensconced, they would have

CHAP. V.

but to wait till unleashed by the promised signal, and then at once storm the Lunette.

Their advance in a state of warlike effervescence.

After hearing General Bosquet's harangues the French troops advanced, and began to move down the Ravine in a state of most brisk effervescence, and a temper so eagerly warlike that to the eyes of a staid English critic their march seemed almost tumultuous.*

The Vivandière.

The more any regiment was agitated by perturbing emotions, the more its men seemed to contrast with the fair one who rode at their head in her panoply of fearless, calm pride.

To our people—descended of men who never had learnt to revere the beauteous goddess of Reason—this time-honoured scene of a drama in which the Vivandière acts was beyond measure strange; but to one who—first having been reared in the genuine French School of High Art—beholds her riding serenely at the head of her regiment in the moments preceding a fight she represents an Idea; and, it being divined, though but dimly, that this march against the Lunette would involve heavy slaughter, she now more than ever seemed one who embodied the spirit of war. You might call her a priestess ordained, and bringing up human sacrifices to lay on the altar of glory; or again might see in her form a conventional image of France nobly leading her sons into action, and commanding them, if need

* Hamley, p. 239.

be, to die. Each actress had her own 'reading' of the part that she played; so that one corps of troops for example was proudly led down through the gorge by a chieftainess riding in plumes; another by a bright girl attired with all the ineffable comeliness that belongs to the daughters of France when obeying strict laws of costume. The fairest of all was the one at the head of a much-favoured regiment, by our people called the 'Green Chasseurs.'* With infinite grace and composure she led her men down the Ravine to meet the fortune of war. CHAP. V.

We have—not wrongly—lingered a moment to see the Vivandière pass; for—always characteristic, and linked with great warlike traditions—the memory of her presence, that day, gathered strength from the slaughter that followed. After an interval of perhaps hardly more than thirty, or thirty-five minutes, the fight was destined to open, and then within one single hour, and within but a few hundred yards of the scenic display we have witnessed, the troops thus led down the Ravine would be falling, and falling by thousands.†

The chosen assailants of the Lunette had been not many minutes ensconced in the Third Parallel when at half-past seven o'clock the rocket-signal unleashed them, and with a vigour and evident intentness of

* Apparently the 'Tirailleurs.'

† As to the extent of the losses sustained by the French in that hour, see *post*, footnote, p. 109.

CHAP. V.

purpose observed and admired by Lord Raglan they sprang at once out to the front.

To reach the Kamtchatka Lunette, General Wimpfen's brigade would have to traverse a space of some 500 yards; but the formation of the ground made it possible by choosing right paths to compass most of the distance without incurring strong fire.

The fast advancing brigade swept easily over the rifle-pits with which the great Engineer had striven to screen his Lunette, and pushed on in three columns. The one on the right was a regiment of Algerine Tirailleurs under Colonel Rose, the one in the centre was the 50th Line Regiment commanded by Colonel de Brancion, the one on the left was the 3d Zouave Regiment commanded by Colonel Polhès.

The Tirailleurs stormed and carried at once two of the collateral batteries on the (proper) left flank of the Lunette; and the other two columns advanced against the Lunette itself. When emerging from the shelter afforded by a dip in the ground, these troops gained the top of the steep leading up to the Work, they at once became fully exposed to grape-shot and musketry-fire, and at the same time began to learn something of the strength of the Lunette. The Ditch they had reached was one cut in the solid rock, was broad, was deep, with beyond it a bristling parapet. The French, however, undaunted by all the perils before them descended the counter-scarp, and some of them moved round by the Ditch to make their way into the Work by its gorge, whilst

others by taking advantage of small breaches found in the parapet, and, in some cases, by standing up on the shoulders of their comrades found means to enter the work by its embrasures. Colonel de Brancion was presently seen to be planting the colours of his regiment on the parapet of the assaulted Work.

Too soon, the brave colonel was struck dead; but, the sight of the victorious standard not failing to draw on the men still outside of the parapet, and the enemy's resistance collapsing under this bold attack, the Lunette was taken and occupied by the victorious French.

Their impetuous advance on the Malakoff.

Carried wildly away by their victory and the heat of pursuit no small part of the French troops pushed valiantly on up the glacis of the towering Malakoff, and some of them reaching the Work moved boldly down into its Ditch; but their effort not having formed part of the general design was left unsupported; and unable to climb their way back by the very steep counterscarp, these brave men became prisoners of war.

Their retreat when attacked in strength by General Khrouleff.

The spontaneous attack, as it chanced, took place at a moment when several fresh Russian battalions (held back until then in reserve) had newly entered the Work. These gathering together and led by General Khrouleff himself fell in strength on all those of the assailants who had not yet entered the Work, and drove them back into the gorge of the then newly captured Lunette. But this was not all; for those

CHAP. V.

who were flying carried with them so great a disorder—augmented a few moments afterwards by the explosion of a 'fougasse'—that although, it seems, bravely attempted, no lastingly effectual stand could be made within the precincts of the Lunette, and after a brief, yet sharp struggle, the enemy still pressing forward drove all the French out of the Work they so lately had taken, and pressed them far in pursuit. These reverses brought with them a terrible slaughter of the French troops.*

Khrouleff's recapture of the Kamtchatka Lunette.

Thus for once, although transient, there shone one bright gleam of success on a movement adventured by Khrouleff, and to him this was much; for, with all his ardour in war, he had not hitherto proved to be a fortunate general. He seems to have become highly excited. Believing perhaps that the French would patiently endure this recapture, he at once rode off to the east with a mind it would seem to complete his apparent victory by recovering the two White Redoubts.

General Bosquet's measures.

But whatever Khrouleff might hope, General Bosquet did not harbour a thought of submitting to this reverse. He proved equal to this new occasion. First ordering some batteries to play on the swiftly recaptured Lunette, he prepared to attack it with no less than two brigades of infantry, keeping also another brigade in occupation of the foremost parallel, or the trenches adjacent. For a while, the

* See footnote *post*, p. 109.

artillery raged; then all at once ceased, and the two brigades of Camou's Division advanced swiftly on the Lunette, surrounded it on all sides, attacked it with ardour, and rapidly carried the Work. This reconquest took place at half-past seven o'clock, and therefore at a convenient time, since the darkness before long approaching would enable the French engineers to fasten on the captured Lunette, and turn it against the garrison.

Second and definitive capture of the Lunette by the French.

At this time Vice-Admiral Nachimoff and General Todleben were both in the midst of the ruins which cumbered, which almost had silenced the cardinal Fort of Sebastopol; and their counsels must needs have been anxious; for he who better than all men could judge such a question has said that the Malakoff for some time that evening was not only at the mercy of the French, but might even have been taken with ease.*

The Malakoff judged by Todleben to be in imminent danger.

I have no separate statement before me of the losses sustained by the French in this part of the field, but we know that they must have been huge. †

* Todleben, ii. pp. 323, 324.

† Because those who fell elsewhere were certainly few; so that, to get at the number of those who fell in the strife connected with the enterprise against the Lunette no more than a small deduction can be made from the number—5543—which represents the French 'casualties.'

VII.

The English attack was to open as soon as the French, towards their right, should carry the Work on the Mamelon. So, when from the Woronzoff Ridge Lord Raglan—warmly admiring—saw Bosquet's troops make their first onset, and seize the Kamtchatka Lunette, he at once let our people begin their intended assault of 'the Quarries.'

'The 'Quarries.'

Since the night of the 19th of April, when Egerton captured the 'lodgment' confronting the left of 'Gordon's Attack,' and bequeathed his honoured name to the conquest thenceforth called 'Egerton's Pit,' the enemy had enlarged and connected the other neighbouring 'lodgments' which still remained in his hands, and from that beginning at last had completed a system of field-work which covered the Great Redan by an outer belt of defences some 400 yards in advance. These field-works, or 'counter-approaches,' as General Todleben called them, stretched across the whole Woronzoff Ridge in twofold lines of entrenchment; but the part of them destined to furnish the principal subject of strife was their main work thrown up on the crest of a small rounded ledge which faced down towards Egerton's Pit. By our people this principal Work was always named after some hollows which scarred the ground in its rear; so that when a man spoke of 'the 'Quarries,' he did not in general mean the old ex-

cavations of stone, but the field-work which covered their front.

The enemy's measures of defence.

For the defence of this principal field-work, and the collateral entrenchments extending it across the Woronzoff Ridge, the enemy, at first, it would seem, assigned only six battalions; but from time to time, later on, as will be presently shown, he threw into the Work other bodies of chosen infantry, and on the whole one may say that, besides the original garrison, he engaged first and last in the conflict four distinct expeditions of infantry, with an aggregate of strength not disclosed, though clearly shown to be large. He laid in the ground where he judged that our soldiers might tread a number of boxes, charged each with 35 lb. of gunpowder. These were furnished with the needed appliances for making them explode under pressure; and—mainly because in mere structure they differed from the well-known 'fougasse'—men spoke of their use as a novelty malicious rather than warlike, and called them 'infernal machines.'

The attack was to be delivered by detachments from our Light and 2d Divisions, supported after a while by the 62d Regiment; and as 'General in 'the trenches,' Colonel Shirley commanded them. The duty of guiding our troops rested with the Engineers, and specially with Colonel Tylden, their chief.

If occasion should offer, Colonel Shirley (as General in the trenches) was to act with alertness, with vigour on his extreme right, and to give the French

CHAP. V. troops all such aid as the strength of his own would allow.*

The great and exclusive advantage about to be enjoyed by the enemy.

One great and exclusive advantage was destined to favour the enemy. The conditions were about to be such that (lest they might harm our own troops) the batteries of the English would presently have to abstain from delivering any fire on 'the Quarries'; yet the enemy otherwise circumstanced would remain free to use in the conflict his great artillery power; and this so extensively that, except only during brief intervals (whilst attempting to hold, or to retake the disputed Work with his infantry), he was destined to keep, and exert this terrible privilege throughout the approaching fight—a period of nearly ten hours.

Lord Raglan's dispositions for the attack.

Lord Raglan confiding in the quality of his troops, and anxious to avoid the losses that might be expected to follow from the use of gross numbers, determined to assault the main field-work with two separated bodies of only 200 men each, sending 300 more to attack the collateral entrenchments; but the troops thus thrown forward were to be supported by 600 more, and to be rapidly followed by very strong working-parties, some destined from almost the first (as was the case, for instance, with the working-party of the 55th Regiment, 160 strong) to act as combatants, and besides, after nightfall to be aided by the 62d Regiment, as

* Journal Royal Engineers, ii. pp. 269, 270.

also, if the need should occur, by other troops within reach.

Colonel Robert Campbell of the 90th Regiment commanded the stormers, and led in person that half of them (200 strong) which was furnished by the Light Division; whilst the other half, furnished by the 2d Division, was led by Major James Armstrong of the 49th.

Lord Raglan determined that the assault should be delivered exclusively against the flanks of the Work which our people had surnamed 'the Quarries'; and this decision proved fortunate; for in the quarters thus marked for attack, the ground had not, as elsewhere, been charged with any explosive machines.

Our artillery had been searching the Work of 'the 'Quarries' with a powerful fire; but all at once became silent. Then the two chosen bodies of stormers, led, on one flank, by their commander Colonel Campbell of the 90th in person, on the other, by Major Armstrong of the 49th, advanced on the enemy's trenches without, it seems, firing a shot, and—unchecked by ditch, or by parapet, or by what General Todleben says was the strenuous resistance of the Russian soldiery—pushed forward so resolutely that in spite of their scanty numbers they swiftly broke into the Work. They thus gave the warrant of successful experience to that wise reliance on the quality of his soldiers which had induced Lord Raglan to avoid, if he could, heavy loss by delivering the intended attack with only a few valiant men. These, however, were quickly supported by the troops

Advance of our storming-parties.

Their seizure of the Work.

Capture of the collateral entrenchments.

CHAP. V.

assigned for the purpose, and by the strong working-party of the 55th Regiment under Captain Cure, which having been previously ordered to throw down their tools and stand to their arms, drove the enemy at the point of the bayonet from the trench they attacked. The conquest quickly embraced not only the Work of the Quarries, but the foremost of the collateral entrenchments, thence extending far eastward across the whole Woronzoff Ridge. High praise was awarded to Captain Elton for the skilful, resolute way in which, with some 55th men, he fended off the enemy's troops from some of our people then labouring to reverse a captured parapet.*

Colonel Campbell, at the head of his men, was wounded—twice wounded—without being therefore disabled; but of the forces he led, no great proportion were stricken whilst busied in storming the Work. There were several of them who fell, but fell at a later moment. Major Armstrong for instance, the chief who had led the storming forces contributed by the 2d Division, was severely wounded; but, when the ball reached him, he—acting on one flank, and Campbell besides on the other—had already made good their attack.

Flight of the defenders, pursued by our troops.

Overthrown at their foremost entrenchments the Russians were soon driven out from every part of the field-work, and they fled back into the fortress with a loss of two officers and a hundred men. Pursuing the fugitives eagerly, our few soldiers pressed their way forward to spots where the ground offered

Our men in the extreme front.

* The high honour of the Victoria Cross was granted to Captain, now Colonel F. Elton.

something like shelter against the guns of the Fortress, and thence searched the embrasures of the Great Redan in their front with a keenly sustained rifle-fire.

Far from proving to be a sheer blessing, the defeat of the enemy's troops laid open the counter-approach to a fire of great guns more destructive than the efforts of Russian infantry; and on the whole it was plain that, although for the moment victorious, heavy tasks yet awaited our people; for, if striving by work carried on under the fire of great batteries to effect—to effect before morning—a fairly tenable lodgment on the ground that their stormers had won, and to connect it with their system of trenches, they also would have, if they could, to withstand all such efforts to recover his counter-approach as the enemy might make in the night-time.

The tasks yet awaiting our people.

Though disabled in body—not mind—by his dangerous wound, Major Armstrong was so good a soldier as to be carefully thinking already of this last imperious exigency. His men wanting to carry him to the rear, he forbade them, saying firmly:—'No, no; lay me down at the bottom of the ditch; 'for we can't spare a man till we know whether the 'enemy will attempt a recapture.' (4)

Major Armstrong.

Notwithstanding his wounds received in storming the Work, Colonel Campbell accepted and throughout retained supreme command in the Quarries, not only of the original attacking force and supports, but of all the reinforcements brought up in the course of the night.

Colonel Campbell's command.

CHAP. V.

Colonel Grant's meeting with Colonel Tylden.

The commander of the working-party of the 49th Regiment, which the 2d Division had furnished, was Colonel Thornton Grant, whom we have known, if so one may speak, since the morning of the Inkerman day. Whilst overlooking his men, Grant found himself at the side of Colonel Tylden, the gifted Engineer officer whom again and again we have seen where the fighting was thickest. Even he, even Tylden himself was for one instant doubting whether under the fire—the murderous fire—of artillery which now swept the site of the projected constructions, it would be possible for mortal men to execute the task ordained; but convincing himself the next moment that, unless a communication and lodgment could be made good before morning, the victory achieved by our stormers would prove to be all in vain, he resolved that at even a sacrifice so great as to seem appalling, the needed work must be done. What he followed—unknowingly—was the logic of him who once said: "It is necessary to sail: it is not necessary to live." Grant warmly concurring, and trustful in the valour of his 49th men, undertook to propel the execution of the work which was to connect the newly won ground with our system of trenches at the point called 'Egerton's Pit.'

The great strain put on the powers of those who remained.

Of the men brought up as 'working-parties,' so large a proportion were summoned to act as combatants in the fights one after another, of which we shall presently hear, that, to execute the needed works with only the few 'hands' remaining, was a formidable task.* There, however, were happily

* It is said that after deducting the numbers thus summoned to

present some officers of great zeal and energy who might be trusted to go to the utmost of what mortal men could do. In darkness more or less thick, they toiled through the night, and on the whole under conditions which (except as regarded some few) made it hard for a chief in authority, however painstaking and anxious, to award them the praise they deserved. Yet without overpassing the limits of even official recognition, we see the names of six officers whose valorous exertions were soon brought to light —the name first and foremost of Colonel Tylden, the commanding Engineer, the names of Colonel Thornton Grant, of Captain Browne, of Lieutenant Elphinstone, of Lieutenant Anderson of the 96th.

Colonel Tylden. Thornton Grant. Elphinstone.

The sixth name was that of a young officer of the 90th Regiment, whom a casual observer would call a strangely bright-looking boy. Now, however —with pickaxe in hand—this boy (as he seemed) was devoting a mighty zeal—zeal governed by knowledge and skill—to the cardinal purpose in hand. He was one who (as now the world knows) had a life of warlike glory before him. Though seeming much younger, he was really twenty-one years of age. Twenty-one years of age, yet already distinguished for the number and the brilliancy of his warlike services, Captain—then Lieutenant— Wolseley had come out to the Crimea in the midst of the terrible winter. Within a few days from the time of his landing, he had courted hardship and work by volunteering to serve as an engineer in the

Captain, now General Viscount Wolseley, G.C.B.

throw down their tools and stand to their arms, there remained only 250 for the needed work.

CHAP. V.

trenches; and it is still as an acting engineer that we first see him busied in this evening of the 7th of June. From a work—discontinued soon afterwards—on a part of the ground further east he was summoned to replace an engineer officer who had been killed at the Quarries; and thenceforth till the morning hour which found him exchanging all other toil for the toil of a desperate fight, he shared in the strenuous efforts by which our people were striving to connect the works newly captured with Egerton's Pit, and to form, before break of day, what, however imperfect, might prove to be a tenable lodgment. The loss of blood caused by a wound received at an earlier hour did not slacken his powerful energies; and, although he was destined to touch—was destined even to pass—the actual physical limit, of what angry Nature allows in the way of bodily effort, we shall not see him robbed of his strength by either the work or the fighting he chose to go through till the object of his toil had been reached and the difficult victory won.

Whilst thus the men of our 'working-parties' were striving to connect the Work of the 'Quarries' with the trenches of Gordon's Attack, and to effect such a lodgment, or inchoate lodgment as might afterwards enable fresh 'hands' to continue the task under daylight, their comrades in arms were sustaining with checkered fortunes a series of obstinate fights.

In contests for field-works so placed that they can

CHAP. V.

be brought under fire by opposing batteries, men oftentimes find it more easy to wrest the coveted prize from their enemy's hands, than to hold it fast after the capture.* Our people were destined all night to be either under the fire of powerful batteries, or—at intervals—meeting the onslaught of troops intent on recapture.

Contests maintained by infantry between two opposite batteries.

At the head of a powerful body of Russian troops drawn from the Kamtchatka, the Volhynia, and the Minsk regiments, Captain Boudistcheff of the Imperial Navy strove hard to retake the counter-approaches (5); but was stubbornly met by the English in spite of their scanty numbers. Captain Boudistcheff the commander of the assailing force was wounded and taken prisoner by our people, and Khomenko the commander of the Kamtchatka battalion was killed. Still the English were forced back a good way by the weight of the assailing mass, and were even, it seems, for the moment driven out of the field-work, carrying with them, however, their distinguished prisoner the commander Boudistcheff who had fallen wounded into their hands. After making a rally, and re-entering the field-work, our people once more engaged the enemy, and bewildered or depressed by the loss of both Boudistcheff and Khomenko, the Russians faltered a while, but again were led on by Captain Reutlinger of the Engineers, and they rescued the valiant Boudistcheff their wounded commander; but presently, Reutlinger

Boudistcheff's attack.

Alternations.

The English driving the Russians back into their fortress.

* We saw, *ante*, vol. vii. pp. 203 *et seq.*, an instance in which the Russians seemed to act on that conviction.

CHAP. V.

himself was wounded in the head; and our people returning to the charge drove all the Russians out of the Work and back once more into the fortress. The young Engineer officer, Lieutenant Lowry, had survived the perilous task of conducting one of our storming-parties, but long after, was killed whilst rallying our men in the night-time for this last victorious charge.

Attack made by the Volhynia regiment.

Its progress;

and final discomfiture.

Somewhat later, and when the night had become more dark than before, another attempt to recover the counter-approaches was made by the Volhynia regiment, then forming a single battalion. Though the effort was resisted by our people with great determination and energy, the regiment under Colonel Snelkoff its chief proved able to enter the Work, but under a fresh effort made by the English soldiery was presently forced to yield ground. After falling back upon the second line of the counter-approaches the Volhynia regiment rallied and made a rush upon the counter-approaches in front, but, its Colonel being then wounded, and fresh troops reinforcing our people, the enemy was again driven back and fled once more to find shelter behind the works of the fortress.

Conditions under which our troops fought.

Maintained on each side with valour and obstinacy, these several infantry conflicts must needs have involved serious loss; yet the periods of time that they occupied were those perhaps when our men suffered less than they did during all the other hours of darkness; for, whilst mingled in fight with the enemy's troops, they were spared from the fire of the place,

but always underwent it again (without having yet obtained cover) so soon as they had defeated their assailants and thrust them back into the fortress.

Colonel Shirley.

Of course under such conditions there was need of the ability with which, as we know, Colonel Shirley conducted the fight, and especially of the moderation and judgment with which he brought up reinforcements, neither suffering the conflict to end for want of men to sustain it, nor pouring in heavy masses—to fall in proportionate numbers—beneath the guns of the fortress. Lord Raglan declared that the manner in which Colonel Shirley conducted 'this arduous 'service' entitled him to the highest praise.*

Another Russian column advancing to attempt the recapture.

Not long before daybreak, and when indeed some observed the first faint glimmer of twilight, the enemy launched a fresh column against our wearied soldiery, and once more challenged their hold of the long disputed field-work. The column advanced up a dell that opened in front of our people at a distance of more than 200 yards, and, whilst still in the hollow, was seen by Colonel Campbell and Captain Wolseley, both of the 90th, as well as by other officers. They hastened at once to prepare all the means of resistance at hand by summoning the men within reach to rise up from the ground where they lay, to meet the approaching attack; but a startling disappointment awaited them. During the last ten hours of fighting and working, the physical strength of our men had been heavily taxed—taxed so closely up to its limit that, except as regarded a

Prostrate state of most of our men.

* To Secretary of State, 9th June 1885.

CHAP. V.

few (of whom we shall presently hear), they had fallen into a state which many, perhaps, might describe as one of faintness, or syncope, but what at all events ailed them was exhaustion of the power which alone can put muscles in action. They could not be roused; and, when lifted, could hardly, if at all, keep their feet.*

An enemy's column advancing, and before them British troops lying helpless as though stricken and nailed to the ground by some hellish enchantment! 'It seemed to me,' said one officer present, 'like 'the end of the world.' However, some few of our officers—including Colonel Campbell and Captain Wolseley, and also several sergeants and corporals, with some men of the rank and file, making up altogether a strength variously computed at from one to three score—began to act together, and they all instinctively sought to make the very most of their scanty numbers by firing into the column (our officers firing even their pistols), but also by vehement cheering; and happily one alert bugler became a host in himself, for—pouring out the glad notes which govern the movement of troops—he wrought on the imaginations of men, and peopled the darkness with phantoms of a soldiery obeying his call.

Show of resistance attempted by some officers and men.

The seemingly shallow expedient of attempting a show of resistance with means such as those which were used might pass with many grave men as an inopportune sort of mockery; but—favoured of

Its effect.

* See *post*, p. 124 *et seq.*, as to state of two officers afterwards stricken in this way.

CHAP. V.

course by the darkness scarce yielding as yet to dim twilight—the effort, however desperate, produced a strange, sudden effect. The enemy's column began to falter, then stopped. Then—at first with gestures of encouragement and entreaty, but afterwards—with indications of violent rage, with efforts to drag the men forward by their collars, and even to enforce obedience by blows from the flats of their swords, the Russian officers could be seen trying hard to make their people come on. They laboured, however, in vain, and the column began to fall back. This abortive attempt was the last, and the morning that now quickly dawned found our people still holding the Work.

The Russian column faltering and coming to a stop;

and falling back.

The English at break of day still retaining their hold.

In general, the Russian soldiery were no less obedient than brave; and the refusal of a powerful body composed of such men to advance at a critical moment sprang plainly from one of those freaks of the imagination which often mislead the best troops when attempting a night attack. It may therefore be said that our people owed this, their definitive victory, to one of the chances of war. Still, if any one thinks for a moment of what we called the 'show of resistance'—the appeal of the single bugler, the touching recourse to small pistols, the shouts (instead of a volley!) opposed to a column of infantry—he will say that, though Fortune took part in this the last of the conflicts repeated during the night, she at least (as is often her wont) ranged herself on the side of bold men—men who hardly, it seems, entertained any rational hope, yet

The share Fortune had in bringing about this result.

CHAP. V.

—superbly deficient in logic—refused nevertheless to despair.

Execution meanwhile of the needed works.

Whilst thus happily achieving their tasks of the more strictly combative sort, our people had also done more; for with only a few 'hands,' and—in general—working under strong fire they had connected the newly won field-work with Egerton's Pit by a fairly sufficient 'boyau,' and moreover had thrown up a parapet—consisting of gabions and barrels, but also in part of dead bodies—on the captured ground, thus providing such means as might render it possible to continue the work under daylight, and entitling themselves to hope that their seizure, and night-long defence of what our men called 'the Quarries' would ripen into a conquest.

We spoke of men lying helpless because they had passed the limits of what human beings could do in the way of hard toil; and it happened, though not till after the fight, that the very two officers whom we saw taking a foremost part in the desperate 'show of resistance' were both made to suffer the penalty of working too hard and too long. The fatigue (with a load of anxiety) which the chief, Colonel Campbell, endured on that night of the 7th of June was so great that even five weeks afterwards he had not recovered from the overstrain put on his energies.* The other example was that of a man but twenty-one years of age. Although Captain Wolseley had been engaged on active duty incessantly since the morning of the 7th, his power

Colonel Campbell.

Captain Wolseley.

* See his despatch of 13th July 1855 to Sir James Simpson.

of exertion, continued until the victory had been definitively won. (6) Then Nature gave way. Unable to stand, he fell helpless amongst the slain; and, when lifted up, by the strength of others, stood only to fall again. He was conscious, and could speak, but only in a very faint whisper. We find a clue to the nature of his ailment by learning what cured it. Some twenty-four hours of sleep restored to him full life and health.

VIII.

It was not without submitting to painful sacrifices that our people achieved this hard conquest, a conquest of what—measured strictly—was only a ribbon of ground, but still one that helped on the siege.

Killed, wounded, and missing.

In killed, wounded, and missing, the Russians lost 5000;* the French 5500;† the English nearly 700, of whom no less than 47 were officers.‡

Spoils.

The French took from the enemy 73 pieces of ordnance, of which all except six were of heavy calibre.§

IX.

The Allies on their advanced front.

The Allies soon reversed, and turned to their own use, the works they had wrested from the enemy;

* Todleben, ii. p. 333.

† More exactly 5443. Niel, p. 301.

‡ More exactly 671, being the number shown in Journal of Royal Engineers, when corrected by the addition of two casualties omitted by mistake in the Return.

§ Niel, p. 298.

CHAP. V.

so that what had been the two White Redoubts, the Kamtchatka Lunette, and the counter-approach called the 'Quarries,' all powerfully defending Sebastopol, now marked the front newly advanced from which the Allies would spring out to make their attack on the fortress.

Change experienced by the garrison and inhabitants.

By establishing batteries on the new positions thus won, the Allies pressed their siege with a stringency greatly increased; and one result seemingly was that thenceforth there remained but one quarter in which the inhabitants or the men of the garrison could loiter or pass without risk.*

X.

The Third Bombardment.

The fire of siege-guns we saw open on the afternoon of the 6th was continued on the morrow, and during the three following days. This artillery effort was called the Third Bombardment, and it inflicted on the Russians a loss of 3507 men, the Allies, it seems, only losing under the fire of the responding batteries 150 each day.†

* Ernshoff.

† Todleben, ii. pp. 339, 340. We have already seen (*ante*, vol. vii. p. 134) why the Russians submitted to great sacrifices whilst under bombardment.

CHAPTER VI

THE SIEGE AND DEFENCE CARRIED ON TO THE CLOSE OF THE FOURTH BOMBARDMENT.

I.

CHAP. VI.

Continued strife between the French Emperor and Pélissier.

THE victorious achievements of the 7th of June did not even for a moment allay that spirit of obstinate antagonism which divided Louis Napoleon from his strong-willed general; and indeed the huge sacrifice of men by which the French army had purchased its recent advantages gave the Emperor a powerful leverage that he could and would use against the recusant Pélissier; for of course the ruler might say—might say, as he imagined, with truth—that the idea of incurring such losses as had to be numbered by thousands in order to conquer mere stepping-stones a few hundred yards in advance was unworthy of any comparison with the dream he had dreamt and was dreaming—the dream of a new 'Great St Bernard' discovered by a new Bonaparte amongst the passes of the Tchatir Dagh, with, beyond it, another Marengo.

So, after having received the prompt congratula-

CHAP. VI.

tions of Queen Victoria expressed in the most gracious terms, Pélissier had to wait a whole week for any recognition at all on the part of his own angry sovereign, and was then at last greeted by words giving praise indeed to the troops, but—constructively—blaming the general, and approaching him yet once again with hard, peremptory words of dictation — words commanding him to do, and do quickly the opposite of what he thought right—the opposite of what he was doing. 'Before,' wrote the Emperor on the 14th of June, 'before congratu-
'lating you on the brilliant success you obtained on
'the 7th, I wished to know what sacrifices it had
'cost. I now learn the extent of them from St
'Petersburg. I admire the courage of the troops,
'but observe that a pitched battle disposing of the
'fate of the Crimea would not have cost more men.
'I persist then in the order I have caused to be
'given you by the Minister of War, to bend all your efforts to the object of resolutely taking the field.'

The language used by Pélissier whilst resisting the imperial orders, had been hitherto of a varied kind; for, though oftentimes savage and fierce, not trying to hide his scorn, he had also in other moods chosen to be either immensely adroit, or cleverly or openly evasive, or again to be mystifying his correspondent with appeals to the Doctrine of sieges, and the sacred authority of Vauban; condescending besides now and then to toss in some phrase of few syllables that made a thin show of loyalty; but, whilst thus lightly fencing with words, he had always in action proved

stubborn, doing simply what he himself chose, and nothing that the Emperor ordered. (1)

But when answering the Emperor's letter of the 14th of June, Pélissier altered his tone. No longer evasive, he was graver, more stern. He stood fiercely at bay. He told the Emperor plainly that the full execution of his orders was 'impossible'; declared that those orders subjected him to the alternative of either resisting authority, or dishonouring himself by obeying it, and prayed that by his Majesty's orders he might be either set free from the narrow limits assigned him, or allowed to resign the command—a command he described as one 'impossible to exercise in concert with our loyal allies, 'at the sometimes paralysing extremity of an electric wire.'*

For any answer at all to this stern despatch Pélissier was kept waiting in vain throughout the whole day and the night of the 17th of June.

The truth is that, whilst torturing Pélissier by perverse interference the Emperor was himself under tortures of the kind that needs must be suffered by any distracted mortal who long and anxiously hesitates on a question he deems to be vital. To be treated as a dreamy civilian by one of his generals was mortifying of course to his vanity, and subversive of his curious pretension to rule as a quasi-Napoleon; yet at a time so big with fate as the one at last reached,—the eve, as it were, of a battle,—he could not but see staring danger in so bold a measure as that

* Pélissier to the Emperor, 16th June 1855.

CHAP. VI.

of removing Pélissier from the command of an army drawn up in the enemy's presence. It may be that the French in the Crimea would have regarded the withdrawal of their commander with somewhat mixed feelings, for many of them deemed him a chief who was prodigal—unduly prodigal—of the lives of his men; but it is believed that the French army elsewhere—more especially the army in France, which gave what there was of security to the second French Empire—would have looked with ill favour on the change, and even perhaps with grave anger. Be that as it may, the Emperor faltered, and, as is usual with men in his state, sent dubious, weak, clashing words: 'Cer-'tainly,' said the Emperor to Pélissier, 'I have con-'fidence in you, but that does not prevent me from 'having my personal conviction. Besides, there is 'nothing dishonouring to a general in executing the 'orders of his Government if he believes them capa-'ble of being executed. It was thus that the Kertch 'Expedition took place by orders of the English 'Government. (2) If the instructions of the 14th are 'too absolute, modify them; but it is impossible to 'close one's eyes to the evidence, and to refrain from 'telling you'—here again supervened the old dream —'that the key of the Crimea is at Simphéropol, 'and that an expedition like that of Kertch, but 'with double the strength, and landing at Aloushta 'and holding Simphéropol, would have a more de-'cisive effect than all the bloody attacks against 'Sebastopol."*

* Rousset, ii. p. 258.

CHAP. VI.

If the Emperor thus still continued to harp on the plan he had formed, this was plainly because none had told him of the curiously signal collapse which his cherished design underwent so long since as the middle of May. Inquiry in the Crimea soon made it appear that for the defence of the Allied position—a task all agreed to be vital—there would be needed no less than 90,000 men who (for reasons we showed in their place) would have to be all either French, or French and English combined. Under General Pélissier's plan of firmly pressing the siege, the Allies—by simply their presence—would be amply sufficing for all defensive purposes, yet meanwhile would be free to exert their whole strength in attack. Under the Emperor's plan, on the contrary, the 90,000 men required for the defence of the position would be all, as it were, standing sentry, doing nothing besides towards the object in hand; and it is obvious that any design would stand self-condemned, if requiring so vast a withdrawal as one of 90,000 prime troops from all share in the coming attacks.

Louis Napoleon unaware of the way in which his plan had collapsed.

In parting at last with that subject of the superincumbent plan which during several months had hampered the cause of the Allies, one may say that the idea of resorting to some sort of field operations well deserved to be considered with care; but all the wishes formed by the Emperor in that general direction were balked by his own course of action. He

How the Emperor (against his own wishes) prevented all recourse to field operations.

CHAP. VI.

tenaciously coupled his longing for field operations with the eccentric, fanciful plan of an Alpine excursion from Aloushta; and on the other hand, he insisted with almost passionate energy that no enterprise against the enemy's flank or rear should be attempted from Eupatoria.

Well, inquiry in the Crimea convinced people there that the idea of an advance into the mountains from Aloushta was rash, was even wild, yet also satisfied many (including amongst others Lord Raglan) that a plan of attacking the Russian field army from Eupatoria might be well carried into effect; (3) and what forbade a resort to that last simple measure was the antipathy it excited in the mind of Louis Napoleon. He, in short, had constructed a plan which, however enchanting to himself, was by others considered absurd; and the one that others approved he ran down with singular vehemence.

In this way, though eager for field operations, he effectually prevented recourse to any such scheme of action.

The electric communication between France and Pélissier's headquarters had been made too complete to leave room for what people call the 'cross purposes' occasioned in old times by distance; yet it was with the equivocal despatch we last quoted—one expressing confidence, but importing distrust, and ending with the obsolete subject of a fancied campaign in the open—that the Emperor thus interposed—interposed, in the midst of a battle; When he sent off his message, the preparative

bombardment of the 17th of June had been raging for several hours. CHAP. VI.

For, Pélissier, whilst kept in suspense, adhered all the time to his practice of meeting the Emperor's orders by actions which set them at naught; and unflinchingly went on preparing to execute his great siege attacks without knowing whether his fate would be to command the French army with the latitude on which he insisted, or not to command it at all. Course taken by Pélissier.

II.

In maintaining these struggles against his sovereign, Pélissier, after all, was resisting the then actual 'law' of his country; and, although this strong and proud man was accustomed to mask his sense of pain by outbursts of uncontrolled rage, he suffered, bitterly suffered, under words of rebuke and command, all importing that the terrible sacrifices of men he had made and was going to make would receive no sanction in France from the constituted Chief of the State. Writing to the War Minister, he declared himself to be 'afflicted' by the course that the Emperor was taking against him.* It is true that the torture of mind thus endured by Pélissier did not bend him by even a hair's-breadth in the direction of the Emperor's wishes, but — perhaps by interfering The affliction endured by Pélissier; its apparent effect on his judgment during nearly eight days.

* 16th June 1855. Rousset, ii. p. 256.

CHAP. VI.

with sleep — it seems to have weakened his judgment, and this at a critical time, extending over eight days, from the close of the 10th of June.

Of course, men are free, if they choose, to question the simple inference which sees in torture of mind close followed by ailing judgment the relation of 'cause and effect'; but, whatever its cause, the lowered degree of ability displayed by Pélissier in the course of those anxious 'eight days' is brought under so strong a light by contrasting it with the really great qualities he showed to the world both before and soon after the interval that this difference has become a proved fact—a proved fact making it certain that, whilst the brief interval lasted, he did not retain full command of the powers that Nature had given him.

Changes during the interval undergone by Pélissier's mind.

It was during this interposed period of no more at the most than eight days that Pélissier's mind underwent three ill-omened changes of purpose, and impelled him besides in one instance to tear himself loose from the bonds of concerted action with a recklessness and haste not excused by any sound warlike reason, or even any reason at all.

10th of June; full accord between Pélissier and Lord Raglan.

On the 10th of June, General Pélissier was believed to be still, as before, in full accord with Lord Raglan; and, meeting in conference, the delegate generals of the French and the English commanders then concurred in approving and framing a plan of attack which was to include the town front;* but

* Plan signed by Generals Niel, Thiry, Harry Jones, and Dacres, given in Journal Royal Engineers, ii. p. 286 *et seq.*

CHAP. VI.

Pélissier discarding the idea of assaulting the town front.

Pélissier afterwards chose to discard that part of the scheme;* and the enemy was thus to be spared from that very assault—an assault of the Flagstaff Bastion—which more than all else he had dreaded. Assuming—though not on good grounds—that if his troops should lay hold of the Flagstaff Bastion, they could and would enter the town, Pélissier got to imagine (as Canrobert had imagined before him) that dispersing themselves through the streets, and there for a while running riot, they would lapse into an uncontrolled state, bringing thus on themselves, to begin with, but afterwards on the besiegers at large, some grave disaster.† He therefore resolved, in antagonism to Lord Raglan's opinion, and to that of besides some French generals, including General Niel—that his attacks should be confined to the Faubourg. He so resolved, though the French engaged before the town front had sapped up to within a short distance of the enemy's works, whilst all the Allies on the contrary who craned from their foremost trenches in the Karabelnaya were divided from the opposite counterscarps by several hundreds of yards.

Lord Raglan lamented the change. It was not for him to judge whether the French ranged before the town front could or not have defeated their adversaries; but he set a great value on any assaults towards the west, which would there have detained

* See his despatch, Rousset, ii. p. 254.

† Lord Raglan (whose means of knowing were trustworthy) to Lord Panmure, June 19, 1855.

CHAP. VI.

a great number of the enemy's troops, and prevented their taking a part in the fights for the Karabelnaya.*

His removal of Bosquet from command in the Karabelnaya.

The next change made by Pélissier was one of a hazardous kind. Finding that Bosquet did not agree with him in his plan of attacking the Faubourg without first sapping up to close quarters with its works of defence, the chief became hotly enraged; and, after besides laying stress on an act of omission which had given him grave offence, he broke with the general who thus had ruffled his temper—the general then commanding in front of the Karabelnaya who would otherwise have had the direction of all the projected assaults. (4) It was greatly of course to be wished that the general charged to direct the intended assaults should be a man fully imbued with the ideas of the Commander-in-Chief, fully sharing his most eager hopes; and, if frankly aiming at agreement, or — alternatively — at some change of plan, consultations pursued by the chief with his richly experienced lieutenant might have brought about happy results, more especially had it been possible that, instead of remaining misguided by his own fallacious opinion, Pélissier would carefully listen to the counsels of Bosquet, whose judgment on the question in hand was, as now we know, sound.†

But Pélissier's state of mind and of temper did

* Lord Raglan to Lord Panmure, Private, 19th June 1855.

† So afterwards proved by experience convincing to all, including General Pélissier.

not suffer him to brook opposition, and he hastened to take a course that perhaps he then believed to be 'vigorous,' though, in truth, as he afterwards learnt, it was violent rather than strong, and more likely to advantage the enemy than either himself or his cause. Directing General Bosquet to undertake duties elsewhere, Pélissier removed him—uprooted him—from his command in the Karabelnaya, and replaced him by General Regnault St Jean d'Angély, the officer then at the head of the Division of the Imperial Guard. CHAP. VI.

To do thus was to withdraw from the scene of real conflict an able, a victorious commander well knowing the ground, and well known to the troops, to withdraw him on the eve of an action, and besides to raise up in his stead a newly come man, then a stranger almost to the army, and one but little acquainted with the field of the intended attacks.*

This was only the second of the principal changes that General Pélissier wrought within the ill-omened 'eight days.'

III.

Pélissier's measures included a feint on the Tchernaya effected with troops of all arms—troops which likewise would be charged to fend off any onset in

Designed movement on the Tchernaya.

* The change (strongly censured by Rousset, and presumably disapproved at his office, the Ministry of War) was made on the 16th of June, and, next day, the preparative bombardment was to open.

CHAP. VI.

that quarter hazarded by the Russian Field Army. The command of this force was the one to which Bosquet found himself shifted.

Main design of the Allies against the Karabelnaya.

The main purpose of the Allies, French and English, comprised only a set of attacks to be delivered by infantry on the 18th of June against the greater part of the works which defended the Karabelnaya.

Their plan of a preliminary bombardment.

To open a way for these onslaughts, and to protract the enemy's anxiety in regard to his defences elsewhere, the day next before these attacks was to be occupied in bombarding — not simply the works of the Faubourg but — the whole south front of Sebastopol.

IV.

The fourth bombardment.

Accordingly at break of day on the 17th of June, the French and the English began to deliver their fourth bombardment. Their fleets * (where fleets could act), and elsewhere far more extensively their now greatly strengthened siege-batteries, brought under a vast arc of fire the whole south front of Sebastopol from the Quarantine Fort on the west to that 'Battery of the Point' which, as always, still marked its eastermost limit. Apart from the fire of the ships, it was with nearly 600 siege-guns that the Allies were able to execute this great bombardment, and the number of the pieces of ordnance with which the enemy answered them was

* At the cost of a precious life—that of young Lyons of the Miranda.

about 550.* On the Karabelnaya defences (where alone the attack would be real) the Allies poured a fire of 280 siege-guns, 114 being French, and 166 of them English.† To this fire on the Karabelnaya, the enemy answered with guns that numbered 207.‡ Maintaining the cannonade until nightfall the allied gunners grievously mutilated the enemy's defences, and inflicted moreover upon him heavy losses of men. Before sunset, the Flagstaff Bastion and the works further west had suffered great havoc; and in the Faubourg (where the bombardment was meant to open paths for the infantry) the results were more strongly marked. The Barrack Battery, the Great Redan, the Gervais Battery, the Malakoff, with its auxiliary works, the Little Redan and the Battery of the Point, were reduced to a nearly helpless state. Indeed the Malakoff could no longer maintain any fire at all, and it was the same with the Nikonoff Battery and the Little Redan.§ The enemy under this cannonade lost many officers of high distinction, including the valiant Boudistcheff, and a great number of gunners; but also (as in former bombardments) the cruel necessity of having to keep bodies of infantry under fire by way of precaution so greatly augmented his losses as to bring up the number of his killed and wounded to no less than 4000.‖ The losses of the Allies were confined to only a few score of men. (5)

CHAP. VI.

* The number according to Todleben (ii. p. 350) being 549.
† Rousset, ii. p. 255.
‡ Todleben, ii. p. 350.
§ Ibid., pp. 363, 364.
‖ Ibid., p. 380.

CHAP. VI.

Reply of Russian batteries.

There was a failure of ammunition at one time in some of the enemy's batteries, and his gunners suffered so frightfully under the fire of the besiegers that in some of the works it was necessary to replace them by infantry men whose skill in the working of ordnance was greatly inferior; but the enemy apparently thought that in spite of these checks he had effectively answered the Allies with the 19,000 shots he delivered in the course of the day.

This regarded by the besiegers as weak.

The besiegers on the other hand judged that the garrison had answered but weakly to their mighty bombardment; and, although there is no ground for saying that the enemy refrained of set purpose from doing his best, the discomfiture he underwent in this strife of guns against guns produced all the effect of a stratagem profoundly contrived. The Allies, French and English alike, were lulled into what at the time was a pleasant belief—a belief that, after having wrought wonders by the development of his artillery power, the enemy was coming at last to the end of his long-strained resources, and they imagined—not perhaps wrongly—that the Faubourg of the Karabelnaya—carrying with it the fate of Sebastopol—was ripe for assault. But with those who called to mind the immense and effective repairs which the enemy had so often achieved in the course of a night, it did not follow at all that the then ruined state of the Karabelnaya defences could be fairly expected to last until break of day on the morrow.

The effect like that of a stratagem.

The Allies lulled into a faith that Sebastopol was ready to fall.

CHAP. VI.

The results of Pélissier's fierce war against all the 'town counter-approaches,' the triumphs of the Kertch Expedition, the joyful return of the victors, fresh, unending accessions of troops, the conquests, already made good, of the Selinghinsk and Volhynia Redoubts, the Kamtchatka Lunette, and the 'Quarries' —these changes of late had been acting on the hopes of the besiegers with great, with increasing effect; and, when now in the afternoon hours of Sunday the 17th of June, they saw, or got to know of the havoc inflicted by their great cannonade, whilst observing, too, what—to their eyes —seemed the desperate plight of the garrison, there swept through the camps, French and English, an ungoverned flood of Opinion — Opinion making sure that the fortress must fall, and fall the next day.

Exultant opinion in camp.

No general of course can find pardon for any mistake made in war by saying he was carried away by a torrent of feeling in camp; but the all-pervading faith entertained by myriads and myriads of soldiers collected on one shred of ground is nevertheless a real force that, in justice to the memory of the French commander—then about to commit a grave fault—ought not to be wholly ignored.

The force of this belief;

This force of gathered opinion was in one point of view a good sign, because showing the ardour of the troops; but its impact on the mind of Pélissier —not yet at the end of that interval of eight days which we had to point out—was likely to do grievous harm. Long kept, as we have seen, under

CHAP. VI.

its impact on the troubled mind of Pélissier.

torture by his obstinate sovereign, he was conducting the business of war at a critical time with a temper exasperated by Imperial dictation, and therefore — for this would follow—with nerves highly, painfully strung. On a Chief in that state the effect of the flood of opinion sweeping over the camps might be such as to precipitate action.

Lord Raglan sharing the belief of the camp;

but not moved towards changes of plan.

Lord Raglan has freely confessed that he shared the illusory confidence extending over the camps; but remaining throughout calm and firm, he did not make the feeling a ground for any change of plan. It is in open campaigning much more than in any siege process that the abnormal fervour of troops can be prudently used as a reason for altering the designs of a Chief.

V.

Morning of Sunday the 17th;

Pélissier at the English headquarters.

Concerted plans of the two commanders.

On the morning of this day, the 17th, the eve of the intended assaults, Pélissier had come to Lord Raglan at the English headquarters, and imparted his designs for the morrow. To the entire satisfaction of Lord Raglan, he announced that his siege-guns would open with the daylight next morning, and continue their fire for two hours, thus accomplishing a second destruction of any resurgent batteries which the garrison might repair in the night-time. He also determined that at the close of the two hours' bombardment, that is, at five, or half-past five o'clock, his infantry should begin to deliver

their intended assaults. With Pélissier's approval, Lord Raglan on his part determined to open his intended bombardment simultaneously with that of the French; but of the times when his infantry columns should begin their attacks he reserved to himself a free choice. CHAP. VI.

From some cause it happened that the choice of measures and time thus made at first by Pélissier lay hidden from Louis Napoleon, as well as from the French War Department, and therefore perhaps it is well to give Lord Raglan's words. 'General Pélissier said here on Sunday morning that it was desirable that the artillery should have a couple of hours after daylight the following morning to destroy any repairs the Russians might have made in the night, and that he should open the attack by the troops at five, or half-past five as his commanding officer of artillery on the spot might determine.'*

VI.

Pélissier's sudden change of purpose;

But unhappily in the evening of the 17th of June, the resolve of Pélissier underwent a change wild and abrupt. Whether duped by 'information' from some returned prisoner, or some deserter or spy, which told him that—ripe for conquest at once by the mere sight of infantry columns advancing against them at daybreak—the works of the Kara-

* To Lord Panmure, 19th June 1855.

CHAP. VI.

belnaya would fall, as it were, at his touch;* or whether—because at last weakened by the tortures we saw him enduring at the hands of his sovereign—he simply was carried away by the flood of exultant Opinion then sweeping over the camp, he at all events made a rush headlong—a rush towards what was much worse than simply to precipitate action.†

not imparted at the time to Lord Raglan.

Strange, flighty, and wrong as so great a dereliction must seem after what he had announced in the morning at the English headquarters, he did not consult Lord Raglan on the change he was making. He assembled some generals at his own headquarters, but they did not restrain him, and I treat the resolve as his own.

Its purport;

He determined — determined irrevocably — that the further preparative measure of bombarding the enemy's works which was to have opened the morrow's operations should by him be altogether omitted, and that the signal directing his infantry to commence their intended assaults should be given at three o'clock in the morning, that is, at the least two full hours before the time he had fixed in concert with the English commander.

its bearing.

This abrupt change of plan on the part of Pélissier was substantially an actual reversal of what a few hours before he had voluntarily an-

* This seems to have been widely believed in France, and the name of the deceiver used to be mentioned, but I have no proof that the conjecture was sound.

† Because, an attack that same evening would have been vastly more prudent and hopeful.

nounced to Lord Raglan as his settled design. And, the change too was seemingly made in defiance of known conditions. The Allies at this time had nowhere sapped up to within a distance of less than several hundreds of yards off from the Karabelnaya enceinte; and—encumbered, as they would be with scaling-ladders, and other needed appliances—troops marching over such spaces in the teeth of mighty batteries restored to their original power might expect to encounter destruction, or at all events slaughter so great as would leave them unequal to the ulterior operation of carrying the defences by storm. Yet—so immense was the difference!—a march on those very same batteries, if still in the ruined state to which a bombardment could bring them, might be only, after all, a light matter. Now, experience had shown the Allies that to this state of ruin they could bring the defences by duly using their siege-guns, whilst also it had taught them that the batteries thus ruined, and rendered for the moment innocuous, could be restored by the garrison to a state of efficiency in the course of a night; and, although the advance of the year from April to the middle of June had abridged the length of the time dividing sunset from sunrise, there was no reason why the enemy should not meet this curtailment of the working hours by employing on the needed repairs a greater number of 'hands.'

By his plan announced in the morning Pélissier had rightly provided that the batteries to be faced by his troops should first be rendered innocuous by the powers

CHAP. VI.

of the siege-guns. The evening project was one that condemned all the infantry columns to traverse lengthened spaces—by daylight—in the teeth of destructive batteries no longer in ruined condition but restored to their original power. To any question which asks why Pélissier discarded the first, and rushed headlong into the perils of the second design, one only can answer that he had not yet come to the end of those troubled 'eight days,' during which his full power of wisely exerting the judgment underwent, as we saw, interruption, and that, when he effected his change, the mighty flood of opinion we saw exultant in camp was running its course with a strength that might carry away a chief tortured in the midst of his warlike cares by a raging strife with his sovereign. That Pélissier on the evening of the 17th was under some access of plainly abnormal excitement is proved, I think, by the fact that, when making up his mind to break loose from the perfect agreement attained a few hours before on his visit to the English headquarters, and even to invert its provisions, he shunned that safe, wholesome, and obvious expedient of consulting with Lord Raglan in person which not only common prudence but obvious duty enjoined.

Question why Pélissier thus acted.

Pélissier's new resolve was imparted to our Engineer Chief; but imparted, it seems, as definitive, and in terms which—far from inviting—made bold to exclude all discussion.

His change imparted to our Chief Engineer;

Lord Raglan after visiting his Divisional camps, and giving what he thought for the night would be

his definitive orders—orders all in conformity with the previously concerted plan—had ridden back to head-quarters, and there, had scarce quitted his saddle, when he not only heard from the Chief of our Engineer force that Pélissier had made this ill change in his plan for the morrow, but also learnt that the new resolve was definitive, and even announced as one resting on grounds that allowed no dispute.*

and by him to Lord Raglan.

Magnanimously regardless of any slight towards himself implied by Pélissier's conduct, Lord Raglan thought only of the public service. He judged that in the teeth of such an announcement by the commander of what (from its largely predominant numbers) one rightly might call the main body of the Anglo-French army, it would be perilous, confusing, unwise to attempt to enter into controversy with the French commander, or to protest against his sudden reversal of the plan on which both had agreed, or lastly to persist in the course approved by the two commanders some hours before without suffering himself to be moved by the wild alteration since made; and therefore, whilst bitterly pained by his colleague's new and sudden resolve, he determined that the operations of the English on the morrow should be in conformity with Pélissier's altered design.

Lord Raglan's determination.

* The grounds I believe were announced as "des raisons incontestables."

CHAP. VI.

VII.

Night of the 17th of June.

Lord Raglan gave his orders accordingly; and his troops before sunrise all reached the positions assigned them.

Movements of English and French troops.

The marches of Pélissier's troops did not all take effect in good time. The brigades under Faucheux and Monteynard, which he had summoned from his camps in the west, received their orders too late; and, when ready to move, the troops under General Brunet were obstructed by finding that the trenches through which they received instructions to pass had not yet been left vacated for them by General d'Autemarre's forces.*

These movements descried by the enemy.

It was a beauteous midsummer night; and the stars in the heavens disclosed these marches of troops to a vigilant garrison, enabling their great Engineer to infer the design of the besiegers in its general bearing, and even to divine in some measure their special plans of attack.

Bombardment at night by vertical fire.

The bombardment was maintained after dark, and throughout the whole of the night, but only by vertical fire; and, although this use of artillery inflicted grave losses on those brave men of the garrison who were striving to repair their crushed batteries, it did not so take effect as to make the repairing impossible.

* The cause of this error—not now material—is shown by Niel, p. 314.

CHAP. VI.

The enemy repairing and even augmenting his batteries.

To that object of repairing at night their ruined batteries the garrison did not fail to apply a high warlike spirit, and truly magnificent energies. Far from having yet come, as their adversaries fondly imagined, to the end of their mighty resources, far even from being discomfited by the shortness of a night in mid-June, they toiled on under a vertical fire pouring down with destructive power till they had fully restored their defences to an effective condition, and even at one point had added to the power of their batteries. It was only on that very night that Todleben crowned the ramparts of the Malakoff with field-guns placed *en barbette* which were destined to exert no small sway in the approaching engagement.

This constancy on the part of the garrison was soon to have its reward.

CHAPTER VII.

EIGHTEENTH OF JUNE.—ABORTIVE ATTACKS OF THE ALLIES ON THE KARABELNAYA DEFENCES.—THE VICTORIOUS OPERATION EFFECTED BY GENERAL EYRE.

I.

CHAP. VII.

The infantry of the garrison preparing to fulfil its task.

General Khrouleff;

WHILST under cover of darkness not yet dispersed or dispersing, the garrison still was engaged in restoring its artillery power, another arm of the service had already begun to make ready for the approaching strife. General Khrouleff commanding the infantry in the Karabelnaya developed great energies; and, ill fortune no longer pursuing him, he not only acted with his known warlike ardour, but also, this time, with a judgment apparently sound, and with that kind of mental agility that

the nature of his task.

was required by his special task—not of course such a task as that of commanding in 'battle,' but—that of directing foot-soldiers collected behind valid ramparts, and from time to time moving a little body of men to any point where the defences appeared to be needing this aid.

The garrison had found itself able to infer the

CHAP. VII.

designs of the besiegers from the preparative marching of their columns discerned through the imperfect darkness of a fair summer night; and, so early as two o'clock in the morning, their bugles were sounding all over the Karabelnaya. Soon, infantry men standing up on the crowded banquettes were not only manning the ramparts, but showing their presence in numbers that surprised a beholder not versed in General Todleben's Art. The truth is, as we know, that, whilst trusting in the main to great guns, the illustrious defender of Sebastopol had been minded nevertheless from the first to ally with his blasts of mitrail a powerful musketry-fire. It was for this special service that infantry crowded the parapets, and even some of the traverses.

The garrison made aware of the besiegers' designs; and preparing accordingly.

The artillerymen stood to their guns.

II

Resting upon supports and reserves of great strength, three Divisions of French infantry, led respectively by General Mayran on the right, by General Brunet towards the centre, and by General d'Autemarre on the left, were to be simultaneously thrown forward with orders to endeavour to carry not only the Malakoff but all the other works of defence from the Battery of the Point on the east to the Gervais Battery on the west.

Pélissier's dispositions.

CHAP. VII.

The splendid Division of the Imperial Guard formed Pélissier's great reserve, and was posted in rear of the Victoria Fort at a greatly extended distance from the nearest of the Russian defences. The Chief apparently thought that this distance was not excessive; for although, when warned on the subject in the course of the previous afternoon, he had consented that two brigades brought up from the west for this purpose should take up an intermediate position in advance of the Imperial Guard, he yet laughed in the face of the officer who had given the caution, addressing him in his rough, playful way, as 'Mr Timorous.' Those two brigades were the forces that received their orders too late, and did not come up in good time.*

From that mishap, it resulted that Pélissier's original plan of planting all his reserves at a great distance was brought to the test of experience; and, whether the Commander-in-Chief or the gibe-stricken 'Mr Timorous' was the more skilled disposer of troops, we shall not be without means of judging.

To ensure the simultaneous outset of the three attacks, they were all to be launched by one signal, that is, by a bright jet of rockets thrown up at Pelissier's bidding from a spot that formed nearly the summit of the lofty Victoria Bridge.

Including the great reserve, but not counting the two brigades ordered up from the west, the whole force allotted for the enterprise comprised four

* The brigades of Faucheux and Monteynard. See *ante*, p. 147.

Divisions, and was placed, as we have seen, under the orders of General St Jean d'Angély. CHAP. VII.

III.

Post chosen by Lord Raglan.

For his post of observation, Lord Raglan had chosen the Mortar Battery of the 3d Parallel established on the Woronzoff Ridge; and thither (having left all the horses on a less exposed part of the ground) he came on foot with his staff before the break of day.

Midnight at the French headquarters.

Pélissier's personal movements.

In the precincts of the French headquarters, men were busied in saddling at midnight; but, whether detained by work, or craving for some moments of sleep that indeed might have done him good service, Pélissier, it seems, did not mount until two o'clock in the morning. Considering that his own plans required him to be at the Lancaster Battery before the break of day, and that he could not or would not ride long at a pace beyond that of a walk, the distance to be traversed was such that he ought to have been in his saddle at an earlier hour. This after a while became plain, it seems, even to him; and whilst fretting with natural vexation at the thought of having allowed himself to be behindhand with time, he saw and heard that which might well throw a man of his violent, choleric temperament into frenzies of rage. Not brought about, he

CHAP. VII.

What he saw and heard before sunrise.

well knew, by any word or sign from himself, he all at once saw and heard a fire of great guns and of musketry breaking out from the far eastern wing of the Karabelnaya defences.

IV.

General Mayran's premature attack.

Observing what was really a shell thrown up from the Mamelon with the trail of light from its fuse that shone out through the still reigning darkness, General Mayran — over-anxious, expectant, with nerves highly strung—imagined that this was the appointed signal for commencing the three French attacks, and—unmoved by the counsels of officers who did not share his mistake—he made haste to lead on—prematurely—the forces placed under his charge.

Having been posted the night before in a part of the Careenage Ravine that seemed apt for his purpose, General Mayran, preceded by Engineers, and supported by two battalions of the Voltigeurs of the Guard, was to turn the Point Battery, and enter it by the gorge, to assail and break through the courtine extending from its westerly flank, then abruptly bend off to the left, and (by operating from within the enceinte) lay hold of the Little Redan. It was to assail this courtine from a distance of some 800 yards that a little before three o'clock, General Failly led on his brigade. Met by fire of great power from the ramparts, but also from six steamers anchored

Map N° 6 to face page 134

ABORTIVE ATTACKS OF THE 18th OF JUNE ON THE KARABELNAYA ENCEINTE.

off the mouth of the Careenage Ravine, the heads of the columns were broken; but, after a while, Failly rallied them in a fold of the ground, and renewed the attack, pushing forward, this time, to ground no less far in advance than the verge of the 'wolf-pits' there sunk in front of the enemy's works;* but they only achieved this lengthened advance at the cost of effecting it under a destructive fire. General Mayran was wounded, then presently wounded again, and the second blow brought him his death. By storms of mitrail and of musketry the columns were again driven back, and a like fate befell the fresh troops of not only Saurin's brigade, but also one of the two Voltigeur battalions brought up to renew the attack. Soon, however, under Failly (who had succeeded to Mayran's command) the remains of the Division were rallied on sheltered ground whence they plied the embrasures, and the men on the ramparts with fire.

All this while, the Division engaged looked in vain towards its left for the expected co-operation of Brunet. The premature onset of Mayran had dislocated all the arrangements for securing simultaneous action.

The Commander-in-Chief directed General St Jean d'Angély to support the repulsed troops of Mayran's Division with four battalions of the Guard; but it was not found possible to renew the attack.†

* The *trou de loup* is a pit shaped like the hollow of an inverted extinguisher, and is provided with a stake projecting upwards.

† Niel, p. 317.

CHAP. VII.

Pélissier vainly launching his signal.

When Pélissier at length reached the post he had chosen, that is, the Right Lancaster Battery, he soon caused his signal to dart up into the air from the lofty Victoria Fort; and the whirlwind of rage that soon burst on this choleric man may well be imagined; for, whilst still writing with anger because General Mayran's Division had sprung into premature action, he now suffered the torment of finding that his own genuine signal produced no result. For the reason already assigned, it was only after some lapse of time that General Brunet could stir; and the original cause of the obstruction was one that also affected the movements of General d'Autemarre.

V.

General Brunet's attack.

General Brunet was to attack and break in through the courtine extending from the west flank of the Little Redan, and from the interior position so won force his way into the heart of the Malakoff Work.

When the troops of General Brunet's Division at length moved out of their trenches, they were met by so mighty a fire of grape and musketry that they disappeared from the eyes of observers under the clouds of dust raised by the missiles directed against them. The heads of the columns were shattered by the falling of men. General Brunet received his death-blow. The foremost part of one column inclined too much to its right, and advanced towards the Little Redan, but the men, it seems, came to

a halt when within some 110 yards of the work, and ensconced themselves in a fold of the ground, there awaiting support. The officers did not brook this desistance, and several of them met their deaths in the efforts they made to draw the troops forward.

Another column of the same Division moved straight towards the courtine along a distance of some 330 yards under so hot a fire that it loaded the ground with their dead. Some of the boldest of the men pressing forward beyond the line of the wolf-pits, approached the Ditch of the courtine, where, however—too few to achieve any more—they were crushed by the enemy's fire. Others stopped, seeking shelter from undulations of the ground, or fell back into the stone-quarries which here and there offered cover. The number of men coming back into the trenches there caused great confusion. The officers tried hard to rally and re-form the defeated troops and lead them forward once more to the assistance of the heads of columns; but the enemy's fire proved so unrelenting and strong that the ranks had been hardly re-formed, when again they were stricken and torn.*

VI.

General d'Autemarre's attack.

The advance of the left column was simultaneous with that of the force under Brunet. General d'Autemarre's Division was to descend by the right

* Niel, p. 316.

CHAP. VII.

bank of the Dockyard Ravine, force the lines of defence near the Gervais Battery, and then operating flankwise from within the enceinte to turn, and to carry the Malakoff.

In the absence of any mishap that might neutralise the enemy's fire, General d'Autemarre had no better prospect than either Mayran or Brunet of marching unscathed beneath the enemy's batteries, and so proving able to close on the works of the Karabelnaya; but in war oftentimes, sheer Accident comes in to govern, or vary the course of events. When the heads of General d'Autemarre's column moved down through the Dockyard Ravine, some brief, unexplained inadvertence on the part of the enemy's gunners prevented their using the power with which they were armed; and being from this cause enabled to reach the lines of defence, the foremost assailants not only seized the occasion, but seized, and used it so boldly, and maintained all they won with so persistent a valour that at once they gave a new turn to what a moment before could hardly have been called an engagement affording to the baffled allies any known and sound basis of hope.

One of d'Autemarre's Chasseur battalions commanded by Garnier, assailed and broke through the courtine at a part near the foot of the Dockyard Ravine, and pushed on into the Faubourg;* whilst

* The Chasseurs seem to have been supported in their march by a battalion of the 19th Regiment, but I do not observe any statement showing that that last battalion broke into the Faubourg.

somewhat more to the right, Major Abinal with some eighty of his Engineers under the immediate command of Captain Bressonet, approached the Gervais Battery, found places where unremoved earth interrupted the course of the Ditch, passed over by these little dikes to the parapet beyond, seized, conquered the work, driving out a battalion of the Pultawa regiment, proved able to take some prisoners, and prepared on the arrival of reinforcements (for which he appealed) to pursue the adopted design of operating against the Malakoff from within the enceinte.*. It is true that the enemy flushed with the success of his resistance elsewhere, relieved from anxiety in the quarters assailed by Mayran and Brunet, and acting under the impulsion of so ardent a commander as Khrouleff, was soon moving troops towards his lost Gervais Battery, and the part of the Faubourg which d'Autemarre's light troops had entered: but on the other hand, the French heads of columns proved resolute, the Chasseurs trying hard to defend house by house the ground they had won, and the Engineers who had seized the Gervais Battery undertaking with excellent zeal to strengthen their hold of the prize. They turned one of its guns against the enemy. By their firmness, these valiant men—the Chasseurs in the Faubourg, and the eighty Engineers in the captured battery—secured ample

CHAP. VII.

* Niel, p. 316. This was certainly an extraordinary achievement to be compassed by eighty sappers; but since Niel commanded the Engineers, and has made the statement officially, I cannot (with the knowledge I have) undertake to question its truth.

CHAP. VII.

time at each place for the junction of any fresh troops that d'Autemarre might promptly send down.

Followed up, as we have seen that it was, by brave and venturesome men, this piece of good fortune seemed fitted to warrant a confident hope; for the problem which asked how assailants could break their way into the fortress had been brilliantly solved. There remained to be accomplished indeed the vital, the difficult work of reinforcing the victors, and for that purpose moving down soldiery distressingly exposed on their flank to the enemy's guns; but the peril of even this task was of course greatly lightened by what the foremost troops had achieved; for the succouring forces, this time, would face a courtine and a battery no longer bristling with armaments in the hands of their adversaries, but manned by comrades impatient to greet them with outbursts of welcome; and although in their way towards this goal, they indeed would be running the gauntlet under powerful fire, they at least, under these new conditions, might perform their swift march, or make their yet swifter rush unencumbered with ladders and wool-sacks.

However, the gunners on duty at the eastern face of the Redan were by this time devoting a care to the bulk of d'Autemarre's force which they had not bestowed on the heads of his column. On his troops moving down with a mind to support the victorious assailants there poured from the Malakoff and from the eastern face of the Redan a fire so destructive that it not only caused them great losses, but checked

their advance. They did not fall back, did not cease to be intent on their purpose of reinforcing their comrades but moved slowly when moving at all, and from time to time even stopped.

CHAP. VII.

VII.

The bearing of the hindrance encountered by d'Autemarre on Lord Raglan's course of action.

The check thus sustained by the bulk of Autemarre's Division was seen by the English commander from his place on the Woronzoff Ridge; and having forces in readiness for the attack of that very Redan which was dealing its blows on the French, he could not loyally hesitate to interpose in the action. He indeed had a choice. He might either relieve the French by pouring a crushing fire of great guns on the eastern face of the Redan; or again he might aid them by assaulting the work with his columns of infantry already prepared for the task, and this last, he well knew, was the kind of support that Pélissier yearned to receive.

Motives tending to govern Lord Raglan's decision.

'I always,' wrote Lord Raglan to the Secretary of War, 'guarded myself from being tied down to 'attack at the same moment as the French, and I 'felt that I ought to have some hope of their success 'before I committed our troops; but, when I saw 'how stoutly they were opposed, I considered it was 'my duty to assist them by attacking myself.' *

In the light of the past we can see that Lord Raglan would best have supported the French by

* Private letter to Lord Panmure, 19th June 1855.

CHAP. VII.

acting upon his own military opinion, still therefore pursuing the course which Pélissier, as well as himself, had—until the last evening—chosen, and accordingly expending some two or three hours in the preliminary task of bombardment, with a mind to assault, when the batteries of the Redan should be quelled; but Lord Raglan well knew that nothing short of conformity with Pélissier's new plan—that is, an advance of British infantry—an advance not delayed by first making use of the siege-guns—would pass with the French as affording the loyal support they expected. Sir George Brown and the commander of our Engineers were united in the opinion that our troops should at once move forward. 'Of this,' wrote Lord Raglan, 'I am quite certain, that, if the 'troops had remained in our trenches, the French 'would have attributed their non-success to our 'refusal to participate in the operation.' *

It is easy enough to find fault with the painful decision to which Lord Raglan was driven; and indeed, if left free to determine on grounds strictly military, he himself would have flatly condemned it. But no such freedom was his; and, to judge the question with fairness, a critic ought to be armed with not only extended knowledge, but also an imagination so powerful as to be able to apprehend the grave consequences of withholding our infantry at a time when the French were undergoing discomfiture and suffering cruel losses. We have been learning again and again that, to meet the

* Ibid.

full exigencies of modern war, more especially one carried on by allied Powers, a commander must needs be a statesman; nor, since generals are, after all, men, and sometimes men of noble quality, can they always be forced in even the business of war, to repress every generous impulse. CHAP. VII.

The moment had come when deferring to the mandates of policy, and yielding too, one may own, to the sway of a chivalrous nature, Lord Raglan would surrender his judgment on that purely military question which formed part—yet still only a part—of the more complex question involved.

Under this stress of motives, Lord Raglan determined to accelerate the execution of those plans for using his infantry which down to about nine o'clock on the previous evening had been fixed for a later time, and not only at once to invade the enemy's territory in the direction of the Péressip, but also—and this was the graver resolve—to assail the Redan from a distance of between 400 and 500 yards without having first conquered its fire by duly using his siege-guns. His resolve.

VIII.

The arrangements contingently made for assaulting the Redan at its salient, and supporting any capture of the work which our troops might effect by a movement (under General Barnard) from the right of the Woronzoff Gorge, were not destined to Measures for assaulting the Redan.

CHAP. VII.

come into use; so that what we need see in detail of the measures against the Redan includes only the attack by two columns—one directed against its western or (proper) right flank under General Sir John Campbell; the other against its eastern, that is, its (proper) left flank, and commanded by Colonel Yea.*

The two columns under Campbell and Yea.

Sir George Brown in the immediate command;

Sir George Brown had been placed in the immediate command of our troops set apart to attack the Redan; but Lord Raglan—not being called off to any other part of the field—was destined to be watching the conflict with his own practised eyes. From the first to the last of the combat before the Redan, we shall see him in the line of the fire directed on Colonel Yea's column.

but Lord Raglan present in person.

IX.

The column led by Campbell.

The column entrusted to Campbell drew its troops from the 4th Division, and the several components of the force were to move in this order:—

A covering party of 100 Riflemen extended in open line;

Twelve Engineers bringing with them their implements, and various warlike appliances;

Fifty soldiers carrying wool-bags;†

* Acting as a Brigadier. For some time Colonel Yea had commanded the First Brigade of the Light Division.

† For filling the ditch.

Sixty soldiers and sixty sailors bearing, all of them, ladders;

The 'main column' or 'storming party' with a strength of 400 men drawn from the 57th Regiment.

Thus, besides its attendant Engineers and bearers of wool-bags and ladders, the force comprised 500 bayonets.

The 'reserve,' under Colonel Lord West, drew its men from the 21st Fusiliers and the 17th Regiment, and had a strength of 800.

The commander, General Sir John Campbell, placed himself at the head of his 'main column,' or 'storming party,' and directed that the so-called reserve should follow in close support.

The Engineer officer trusted to pilot the column was Lieutenant Murray, and the one at the head of the 'ladder-party' was he of whose growing fame we spoke in an earlier page—the then young lieutenant, now General Sir Gerald Graham.

No means enabling the column to reach its chosen point of attack.

Supposing the Great Redan and its neighbouring batteries to be still in the crushed, silenced state to which our great guns had reduced them on the previous evening, the bulk of the column thus organised might perhaps have been able to traverse the interval of 470 yards which divided it from the object of attack without ceasing at the end of the march to be a highly fit instrument for carrying the western flank of the Great Redan by escalade and assault; but under existing conditions, the climbing, the fighting, the conquering efforts required formed,

CHAP. VII.

after all, only a sequel to the heaviest part of the ordeal; for not even the straitening shortness of a midsummer night had shorn the besieged of their power to retrieve, under cover of darkness, the havoc on havoc inflicted by a great cannonade. When the enemy had made good his repairs, the plan of attack as transformed by Pélissier's abrupt change of counsel could afford no solution at all of the now foremost problem which asked how a body of troops in full daylight, and moving besides very slowly—because encumbered with ladders—could traverse without being shattered 470 yards of open ground beneath the unassuaged fire of not only the Great Redan, but also all the other strong batteries that guarded this approach to the Faubourg.

Advance of the covering party, the Engineers, and the bearers;

However, before break of day, the components of Sir John Campbell's force had assembled under the parapet on the western side of the 'Quarries'; and when afterwards the concerted signal was given by a flag three times waved towards their right, the hundred Riflemen followed by the Engineers and the sack and ladder parties, but not, as had been planned, by the 'main column,' began to move forward under the storm of grape-shot and musketry-fire that presently opened upon them from the western face of the Redan, as well as from the Barrack Battery, and this with a force unimpaired by the bombardment of the previous day. With before them Sebastopol in all its strength at a distance nowhere less than 400

but not of the 'main column.'

The fire encountered.

yards,* and trained to take advantage of ground, the Rifles getting together hung back for a while under such little shelter as was afforded by the westward slope of the spur. Thence they plied the Redan with a fire that seemed to produce no effect. Of course this halt of the Rifles forced Murray also to halt with his few Engineers; but Graham had still work to do in bringing up his wool-sack and ladder parties. Already he had lost several men. It was found that the soldier—foot soldier—seemed averse more or less from the service of carrying burthens across a vast space under torrents of fire without having his hand on the weapon—the weapon beloved and trusted—which in fights of the kind he is most accustomed to contemplate forms almost a part of himself; but the sailors proved dauntless. The vast stature of the young Engineer who directed their energies made him strangely conspicuous in the field, and it was on Gerald Graham and the sailors that the praises of observers converged.

CHAP. VII.

The ladder-party.

Gerald Graham and the sailors.

Murray at this time was mortally wounded, and the command of the Engineers devolved upon Graham.

Murray mortally wounded.

Then the brave, the hot-tempered Colonel Tylden (whom so often we have seen night and day in the thick of the siege-fights) came up impatiently fretting at the check he had observed, and saying 'What are you stopping for? On, men, on! for-

Interposition of Colonel Tylden;

* The distance from the Quarries to the salient of the Redan. The distance from its re-entering angle—the chosen point of attack—was 470 yards.

CHAP. VII.

ward!' he shouted, waving his sword over his head. Graham ran up to him and asked, if, the attack on the flank of the work being impracticable, he should lead his men on the salient. The Colonel said:—"Anywhere, so long as you get on," and again he began to cheer on the men then moving towards the salient. If any conjoined band of men had come up alongside him, it must needs have encountered a fate scarce short of what one calls massacre; for, to use the eyes, any moment, was to see the ground ripped up and torn by missiles descending in swarms; and so thick came the flight of the grape-shots that together whilst rushing, and hissing in storm through the air, they gave out mighty crashes of sound not oftentimes heard by mortals who have lived to speak of such trials. As might well be expected, Colonel Tylden was quickly struck down, and indeed so cruelly wounded, that he never again would be able to resume the valiant part he had taken in the siege of Sebastopol.

resulting in a move towards the salient of the Redan.

Intensity of the fire confronted by Tylden;

who was quickly struck down.

Course taken by Gerald Graham.

First devoting some moments of care to the honoured chief thus lying wounded, Gerald Graham hurried after his men and drew up his ladders on ground he chose for the purpose. This he did by the aid of only the sailors and a few sappers; for of the 120 soldiers who had been carrying wool-bags and ladders, there were then few or none to be seen.

Disappearance of the Rifles.

Gerald Graham with his sappers and sailors, and the ladders they had borne, remained for some time in advance of our trenches; but the covering party of Rifles had already disappeared from his front, nor

again, if he looked to his rear, could he see 'the 'main column' approaching. Where the Rifles and the 'main column' were we shall by-and-by see; but their absence from this part of the field annulled of course for the time any prospect of thence undertaking an onslaught against the Redan. What Graham had with him in readiness for any assault were only the mechanical implements, and not the armed forces required.

Non-appearance of the 'main column.'

What remained in this part of the field.

He therefore withdrew what remained of his valiant sailors and sappers from their position outside, and wisely brought them all back to await their next opportunity beneath the sheltering parapet.

The ladder-party brought under shelter.

What had separated the infantry from the bearers, and stopped the intended attack, will now be seen.

At the outset of the advance we saw made by the 'covering party,' and 'bearers,' the 'main column' under General Campbell in person was duly preparing to follow in the wake of the ladder-men, and already indeed its officers were, some of them, over the parapet, when the rest of the body was stopped and even turned from its course by an unforeseen kind of obstacle.

The 'main column.'

What arrested the column was a throng of English soldiery belonging to various regiments, and even to several Divisions who, although not on duty, were nevertheless so eager to take part in the attack that they had stolen away from their camps to this

The obstruction diverting it from the assigned course.

CHAP. VII.

part of the 'Quarries,' and now crowded in on the trenches with a weight that intercepted the column and prevented its clearing the parapet. Thus obstructed the men of the 57th (who formed the 'main column') filed off to their left, moved westward until they had come to the end of the unfinished parapet, then abandoned the shelter, and confronted the fire that was instantly awakened against them from not only the whole western face of the Great Redan, but also from the guns further west that guarded its re-entering angle—the guns of the Artakoff Battery.

Course taken by the column;

its actual and relative position when emerging.

The column, when thus it emerged, was far removed from the ground that it needs must have traversed if advancing, as directed by orders, in the wake of the ladder-party; and accordingly we see that the troops meant to form a single body united under General Campbell were in a dissevered state.

Evolving themselves as they were from the thin trailing column in which they had marched along the sheltered side of the parapet, and then all at once facing the open, and confronting great batteries, the 400 men of what was called the 'main column' began to undergo a hard trial. For any attempt at formation they needed some little time. They besides needed firm and swift guidance not only in order to face the trying conditions to which we now see them exposed, but also to determine their course; for on the one hand men looked towards the re-entering angle of the Redan which was

understood to be their true goal, yet at this time it seemed that the Rifles and ladder-party were operating towards its salient.*

The decision was one to be taken at a critical moment, and under a converging fire of grape-shot and musketry that seemed to threaten destruction.

Campbell's previous words to Graham.

When the young Engineer Gerald Graham reported himself on that morning to the chief now commanding this column in person, he had found General Campbell so glowing with that warlike ardour that comes with the blood of the Scots as to be almost impatient of thoughts concerning the 'how,' and the 'where,' and the 'when' he could most fitly strike at the foe, and he even in his usual gay vein spoke joyous words which imported that he 'understood the fighting part best.' But in face of the Great Redan, with its batteries brought once again to a perfect state of repair, and at a distance of 400 yards from the nearest part of its counter-scarp, the pastime of 'fighting' was one that the enemy's great Engineer did not mean to allow. It was mainly to ward off all fighting of the hand to hand sort that he plied his great Art. He might, and he would cause his adversaries to die, or fall wounded, but not under those conditions of reciprocal action which men call a 'fight.'* On the contrary, he would strike down assailants with his favourite resource of 'mitrail' before they could come to close quarters.

His vain expectation of a fight.

Todleben's policy.

General Campbell was very soon killed. His

* See *ante*, p. 168.

CHAP. VII.

authority devolved on Lord West (then on duty at the head of the reserve), and the next in command on the spot was Colonel Shadforth, the chief of the 57th men. At nearly the same time, however, Colonel Shadforth was killed; and this simultaneous loss of not only the chief but also of him who—at least on the spot—had stood the next in command was of course such an accident as—if not even causing discouragement of a serious kind—might well break asunder the thread of any settled design which till then had been guiding the troops.

General Campbell killed.

Colonel Shadforth killed.

These men of the proud 57th might soon find death under the fire that began to be greeting them from the moment when, turning the parapet, they emerged on the open ground; but, to satisfy the exigency of their great Albuera tradition, they needed to be at close quarters with an enemy so as not to be dying like saints, but rather fighting like men; * and, approachable as it was by low ground not altogether unsheltered, whilst also guilty, they knew, of assailing them with its heavy cross-fire, the Artakoff Battery seemed to be the sort of foe they might challenge. The position of the work too was such that, to attack it would be virtually to attack the Redan at that same re-entering angle which, as people understood, was the goal pointed

Courses that might be taken by the 57th men.

The Artakoff Battery.

* An allusion to the famous command, 'Fifty-seventh! die hard!' which was addressed to the regiment at Albuera by its chief, Colonel Inglis. It was in elucidation of young Stanley's apostrophe to the regiment at Inkerman when he said: 'Men! remember Albuera,' that I once before referred to the long-cherished words. *Ante*, vol. v. p. 310.

out by authority. Troops acting in the contemplated direction would be able to avoid the Abattis by turning its flank.

These men of the 57th, however, had not yet taken their course when they all at once found themselves joined by another small body of men.

The Riflemen quitting their ground;

The covering party of Riflemen who had led the advance became aware before long that they were not supported by troops in their immediate rear, but afterwards on ground further west perceived the 'main column' emerging from below the end of the parapet, and with this force determined to act.

and forming up with some men of the main column and others.

They came, and formed up alongside of the bulk of the 57th men, now also joined by soldiers from other regiments, who perhaps were the lawless intruders of whom we before had to speak.

The united force moving against the Artakoff Battery.

Having with them their new chief Colonel Warre and also Major Inglis, the men of the 57th and the other troops now acting with them advanced against the Artakoff Battery; and—within thirty yards of its Ditch *—established themselves upon ground which offered something like shelter to men lying down.†

Their subsequent course.

To use the position thus gained by a handful of men as a stepping-stone for the seizure of the battery, Colonel Warre would of course be in need of additional troops; and, none as yet having come

* 'Within twenty or thirty yards.' Colonel Warre, *ubi ante.*

† Major, now General Inglis, who at Inkerman, when young Stanley fell, succeeded to the command of the regiment and brought it out of action. I now know with certainty that General Inglis is the son of the Colonel Inglis who at Albuera addressed to the regiment his immortal apostrophe.

CHAP. VII.

up, he sent back Major Inglis to ask for reinforcements;* but meanwhile held fast to the ground he had won, and thence, as before, went on firing into the battery.

When afterwards Colonel Warre learnt that he must not expect reinforcements, he reluctantly withdrew his small force from the vantage-ground it had won, and effected the retrograde movement in an orderly way with a loss of only three men.†

Lord West acceding to the command.

When apprised of his accession to the command, Lord West was not cognisant of the advance of the Rifles and the 57th men on the Artakoff Battery; and nowhere discerning those troops, he apparently thought that the fire—the merciless fire—they encountered when facing the open had altogether destroyed or dispersed them.

The resources at his disposal.

All the organised force that he knew of was, first what remained of the valiant body of sailors with their ladders which along with a few of the sappers remained under Graham's command, and next, a string of several hundreds of infantry (composed of what was called the 'Reserve,' and of stragglers from other bodies) which, to use the chief's words, had 'deployed, as it were, into an extended line

* Whether the application was addressed to General Bentinck (who commanded the 4th Division and had a brigade in hand) or to Sir G. Brown, Colonel Warre does not say.

† From 'They came,' *ante*, p. 173, down to this point, my statement closely follows the Report of Colonel Warre to General Bentinck.

'behind the parapet seeking cover from the furious 'fire wherever it could be found, and disorder and 'confusion prevailed.' *

CHAP. VII.

His reluctance to believe that he was powerless to execute an attack.

Lord West perhaps in cool blood would hardly have judged that the power—the severed, the decomposed power—which chance had thrown into his hands was such as could make it his duty to protract an abortive attempt, still less to begin a new onset with plainly inadequate means.

It was natural, however, that one who could act with the vigour and zeal we saw him exerting at Inkerman should resist a conclusion importing that the moment of his accession to extended command must be the very one to be chosen for giving up all further effort. A covering party, he thought, might again be formed and thrown forward, to be followed again by the ladder-men, whilst he himself in their wake would bring up the body of troops then sheltering under the parapet, and strive to push home an attack on the flank of the Great Redan.

His direction to Gerald Graham.

Lord West accordingly saying that he meant to throw forward a fresh line of skirmishers requested Gerald Graham to take out his ladders once more.

State of the 'ladder-party.

For this task such of the sailors as had not been killed or disabled stood, all of them, ready and eager; but the soldiers who had constituted one-half of the 'ladder-party' were no longer to be seen in their places. Lord West strove to make good this void by assigning for the task other soldiers; and his efforts were not all in vain. Still,

* Lord West to the author, Dec. 23d, 1863.

CHAP. VII.

Graham found on the whole that he could only muster four bearers for each of his ladders instead of the right number—six.

Its numerical strength.

The promised covering party had not been thrown forward when Graham nevertheless brought his ladders out over the parapet, and at once met the fire reopened on him and his people from the batteries of the Great Redan. With their ladders beside them, our men lay down on the grass, and there—although still sought and found by too many of the enemy's missiles—awaited the promised advance of the men charged to cover their front.

The ladder-party brought out over the parapet;

When after a while it was seen that the 'covering party' of skirmishers had not begun to advance, the sailors eagerly wished—making only an exception for Graham—to dispense with the aid of all soldiers. They had lost their naval commanders (Lieutenant Kidd killed, and Lieutenant Cave gravely wounded), but Mr Kennedy, mate, still remained to them; and—delighted with their pilot Gerald Graham—a giant intent on his work as though proof against grape-shot and fear—they wanted, if he would but lead them, to go and attack the Redan without asking any one other landsman to share in the bliss of the enterprise. Their 'pilot' of course could not humour them in this wild desire; and on the contrary he soon brought them back to find shelter under the parapet. There, he kept them together in readiness for any renewed advance that Lord West might think fit to direct.

without waiting for the covering line of skirmishers;

and afterwards brought back under the parapet.

CHAP. VII.

It was for his service with the 'ladder-party' in this, and in the earlier part of the day that Gerald Graham received the high honour of the Victoria Cross. This honour was awarded to Graham for what the royal warrant described as his 'determined gallantry at the head of a ladder-'party,' and the words, unless I mistake, are blended by him in his memory with the heroism of the sailors who shared his labours and perils.

The admiration and approval bestowed on Graham and the sailors.

'I wish,' wrote Lord West, 'I wish I could do 'justice to the daring and intrepid conduct of the 'party of sailors. . . . Lieutenant Graham of the 'Engineers who led the ladder-party evinced a 'coolness and a readiness to expose himself to any 'personal risk which does him the greatest credit.'*

Lord West, however, meanwhile was far from having the means out of which he could form a new column with any semblance of power to go and attack the Redan. The body of men we saw acting against the Artakoff Battery was not by him known to be anywhere gathered; and of troops really under his orders there simply were none, except the string of mixed soldiery we saw sheltered under the parapet, — an unorganised gathering of men not either so placed, or so circumstanced in other respects that they could be wielded like a battalion drawn up on open ground by any magic words of command. Nor to these could Lord West really offer the sometimes alluring temptation of what our people mean by a 'fight'; for the men knew by

The sole means at Lord West's disposal.

* Lord West to Lieutenant-General Bentinck, *ubi ante.*

CHAP. VII.

this time that, if once over the parapet, they would still be divided from their adversaries by a zone of open ground—several hundreds of yards in breadth—which they could not even hope to be crossing except under torrents of grape-shot that needs must shut out every prospect of closing with the distant enemy, or even drawing near to his counterscarp.

His vain efforts.

Still, when applying his energies to this or that given part of the distended line, Lord West, nobly seconded by his officers no less than by the spirit of the men, proved here and there able to get men out over the parapet; and he judged that, if this friendly barrier had been levelled beforehand along a good part of its course, he perhaps would have found himself able to lead out his troops in a body through the gap so laid open, and to execute what at the least might have proved to be a bold 'rush' on the flank of the Great Redan; but, as it was, though engaging his people by fractions in forward movements, he could not make their spring simultaneous—could not bring them to be climbing the parapet—climbing over from Life to Death—at one and the same time.*

Orders sought and obtained;

After consulting with Colonel Cole of the 17th Regiment, Lord West sent an officer to Sir George Brown with directions to ask for orders, and for fresh troops.

Brown's answer directed Lord West to re-form

* Science recognises the difficulty of executing a simultaneous advance of troops under such conditions, and recommends the "Coupure blindée," the expedient adverted to by Lord West.

CHAP. VII.

the attacking column, and not without further instructions to make any fresh advance.

from Sir George Brown.

In a pencil-written note, Lord West replied to Sir George, informing him that any attempt to reform the column would be hopeless, and earnestly begging for fresh troops in order to renew the attack.

Sir George Brown told the messenger that to this last note from Lord West there was no answer.

Thus ended the abortive endeavour to push an attack against the west flank of the Redan.

The accidents which marred the advance of the column saved our troops from great sacrifices.

From the moment when it appeared that—in even one brief summer night—the enemy's batteries had recovered their broken strength there was seemingly no ground for hoping that the column entrusted to Campbell would ever traverse the space that divided the Quarries from the counterscarp of the Great Redan without undergoing such slaughter as must either destroy the force utterly, or at all events render it powerless—at the end of the long bloody march—to undertake an assault; and it was fortunate for our people that accidents arrested the course of the enterprise in so early a stage, as to save them from the consequences of becoming more deeply committed.

Losses.

There is no such dissection of the Returns as

CHAP. VII.

would enable one to give the numbers of the sailors and Royal Engineers who fell whilst making this effort against the western flank of the Redan; but in killed, wounded, and missing, that Division (the 4th) which had furnished all the rest of the strength lost 193 altogether, of whom 16 were officers, including one major-general, that is, as we saw, Sir John Campbell.

X.

An impatient lieutenant of Sappers.

Amongst those of the Royal Engineers who found themselves kept in reserve near this part of the field there was one young lieutenant who painfully, bitterly chafed at what he thought the hard lot of being withheld from the action; and, when hearing that—at least for a time—the vain onset we witnessed had ceased, he not only assumed that our people were going to renew the engagement, but also made sure that—because succeeding to Murray, or rather to Murray's successor—he now at last would be summoned to take a part in the enterprise. He therefore eagerly sought to know what was the duty awaiting him, and addressed his question to Graham, then newly come out of action. Graham answered somewhat lightly—in words which imported that the engagement had ceased, and that there was nothing for the inquirer to do. Thereupon, the young lion was wrought into a phrenzy of disappointment and rage, the rage indeed

being so hot that there followed something like an estrangement between the two friends. This impassioned lieutenant of Sappers was a soldier marked out for strange destinies, no other than Gordon — Charles Gordon — then ripening into a hero sublimely careless of self, and a warrior-saint of the kind that Moslems—rather than Christians—are fondly expecting from God.

Allusion to his subsequent career.

XI.

Before daylight, the troops set apart for assaulting the Redan on its eastern flank were collected in those lines of trench-work which, till wrested from the enemy on the 7th of June, had formed the counter-approaches established on his left of the 'Quarries'; and the same triple wave of a flag that unleashed, as we saw, Campbell's force on the west of the Redan was also the recognised signal which threw forward Colonel Yea's column against the eastern flank of the work.

Troops assembled and launched for attack on the eastern flank of the Redan.

With—foremost of all—its 'covering party' of 100 Riflemen in open order; with next its 12 Engineers, followed by some 180 soldiers and sailors bearing wool-sacks and ladders; with next again the 'main body,' or 'storming party,' of 400 men drawn from the 34th Regiment; and with finally, though held back at first, its 'reserve' of 800 men, furnished by the 7th or Royal Fusiliers and by the 33d Regiment,—this column entrusted to Colonel Yea was

Composition and number of force under Yea.

CHAP. VII.

almost exactly a counterpart of the one we saw led by General Campbell on the opposite flank, comprising therefore a strength of 1300 bayonets, and, in all, nearly 1500 men.* But Colonel Yea did not direct (as did General Campbell elsewhere) that the so-called 'reserve' should come up at once in close support to the storming column, and accordingly the whole of the infantry yet empowered to move with the chief comprised only 500 bayonets.

Strength of the column moving with him.

The piloting Engineer officer was Lieutenant A'Court Fisher, and Lieutenant Graves headed the ladder-party. When the signal was given, the 100 Riflemen from the foremost trench and the rest of the force from the other trench in its rear sprang swiftly over the parapets, and then at once fairly confronted that part of the Sebastopol defences which was formed by the eastern face and flank of the Great Redan, by the chain of works thence trending northwards, and again by those further east extending home to the Malakoff.

Advance of the column.

These works, as already we know, had been restored under cover of darkness to the giant strength they could wield before the opening of the bombardment, and were not only amply garrisoned by artillerymen and bodies of infantry, but also put on the alert by the French attacks further east.

The works it confronted.

So, the moment our men showed their heads above the two parapets, they were greeted by a storm of mitrail that seemed more than searching enough to prevent even Fortune herself from cleav-

The fire incurred by this column.

* Viz., with the 12 Engineers and 180 bearers, 1492.

ing a way for her favourites betwixt the paths of the grape-shot. Yet, although many fell, the men remaining unstricken did not cease to advance—to advance, one may say, on Sebastopol, for what our people, this time, assailed (by an onset they strove to maintain across an unsheltered zone of from four to five hundred yards in breadth) was—not (as on the 7th of June) a mere outwork, or counter-approach, but—the glorious fortress itself, fully armed, fully manned, and expectant. It chanced that Lord Raglan—a veteran in war, and accustomed to measure his words—was all the while standing himself in the line of that torrent of fire that greeted Colonel Yea's column, and he wrote of it thus: 'I never had a 'conception before of such a shower of grape as they 'poured upon us from the Russian works. Some of 'them must have been thrown from very heavy 'guns.'* But great as it seemed from the first, this crushing fire of artillery was about to be now reinforced by another arm of the service. Our string of 100 Riflemen thrown out in front had been formed as a 'covering party,' which, if only the anterior bombardment had not been omitted in deference to General Pélissier, might perhaps have kept down any fire attempted from what in such case would have hardly been more than the ruins of Todleben's Great Redan. As it was, our foremost hundred of men, advancing under daylight across

* To Lord Panmure, Private Letter, 19th June 1855. The extraordinary intensity of the fire is described in not less strong terms by Sir George Brown and by Admiral Lushington.

CHAP. VII.

open ground on a fortress at the height of its power, were quickly mown down in great numbers, and, the unwounded survivors still continuing their forward movement, still keeping their place in the front, became rather what we mean when we speak of a 'forlorn hope' than a 'covering party' endowed with anything like a real power to keep down or check the fire of either the mighty guns which were hurling torrents of grape-shot on the advancing troops, or even that of the infantry industriously driving their missiles from over the top of the parapet.

These blasts of mitrail, reinforced by the rifle and musketry met the very ideal of Todleben; for his fixed belief was, as we know, that a fortress whilst girded by fire of this enormous power must be proof against any assault undertaken across a broad zone.

For any mortal advancing in the teeth of the storm it was hard to see how it could happen that, unless by some mystic protection, he still might remain alive; for the air all around him was boisterous with the rushing flight of war missiles, whilst the ground in his front did not cease to throb under the impact of grape-shot, and the lighter touch of the bullets that came thickly pattering down to swell the leaden torrent. A man moving steadily forward under a fire of this kind when only in quest of the means by which to begin a fair fight, and unheated as yet by the rapture of striking at him who strikes may loftily use his sheer reason, and tell himself that the moment is one fit

CHAP. VII.

enough, after all, for that assured meeting with death which can never be finally shunned; or perhaps he may find it more simple to suspend for a while the dominion of his reasoning faculty, and borrow a lesson from beings which rather are governed by temperament. Some, for instance, moved forward, head down, and 'butted,' as though in hot wrath, at the storm of iron and lead.

The remains of the Riflemen coming up to the Abattis;

A time at last came when what remained of the covering party made good its advance to the verge of the Abattis—an outwork of sharpened branches which covered the Redan at a distance of some 80 yards from its front.

and clinging to the ground they had won;

The natural irregularities of the ground in this part of the field, and the hollows dug out by the impact and explosion of shells gave here and there some little shelter to any survivor of the covering party, if lying down closely, and ensconcing himself within the limit of the partial cover thus formed. But, standing up on the top of the parapet with a boldness that our people admired, Russian infantry quickly saw down into all the slight hollows, and searched each with a power not only increased, but increasing; so that what little shelter there had been became less and less every minute.

under a searching fire.

'The Engineer officer' at the Abattis.

The commanding Engineer, A'Court Fisher, had come unscathed through the fire, and being now close to the Abattis he knew of course that in virtue of his position as commanding Engineer, he might have to give counsel. He found that on being examined, the Abattis showed scarce a

CHAP. VII.

sign of having been damaged at all by the yesterday's bombardment, and also saw plainly that no such engineering operation as that of opening the work by grapnels was feasible under the torrent of grape-shot and musketry-fire pouring down from the Great Redan; but on the other hand he found here and there in the work some gaps, or rather weak places through which men might push their way.

The state of the 'ladder-party.'

His next thought turned to the ladders. Of these not one could be seen in course of being brought up. They were, all of them, lying on the ground, some close to the Abattis, others less far advanced. There were some that had no bearers near them. Others had at their sides men sitting or lying on the ground, and towards one of these ladders—a ladder manned by sailors—A'Court Fisher made his way. Accosting one of the three sailors he found either sitting, or lying down near the ladder, he said, 'Come along, 'Jack, let us have that ladder to the front,' and then learnt that those who had carried it were, all of them, men killed or wounded. The rest of the sailors' division was in similar plight, there remaining not even one ladder with bearers still able to carry it.

Duty of 'the Engineer officer.'

A'Court Fisher, though only a lieutenant in rank, being nevertheless, as we know, the commanding Engineer with this force, was entitled, was even required, to consult at fit times with the Chief.

Approach of Colonel Yea;

And the Chief was approaching. At the head of what remained of his storming party, Colonel Yea —sword in hand—came up to the verge of the

CHAP. VII.

Abattis; and, addressing him, A'Court Fisher said: 'I am the Engineer officer, sir; shall I advance?'* In the moment that followed, Yea fell backwards shot dead.

is accosted, but killed.

Accosting Captain Jesse of his own—the Engineer—corps, A'Court Fisher said: 'Well, Jesse, what's to be done?' Before Jesse could answer, he staggered under a shot received in the head and was killed.† Then, to several others successively A'Court Fisher spoke; but—as though his charmed life had been given him on some fell condition importing that all he accosted must die—it so happened that those he addressed were stricken, one after another, before they could answer his words.

Captain Jesse, too, accosted and killed.

A like fatality overtaking others.

A'Court Fisher made an endeavour to collect the troops, but they proved to be so few in number—scarce exceeding, he thought, 150 (1)—as to be disqualified—until reinforced—for any assault on Sebastopol; and, in expectation of a time when fresh troops would come up in support, he ordered the men to do what we saw done before by the scant remains of the covering party, that is, to get under such cover as could be gained by lying down and ensconcing themselves within the slight hollows that here and there marked the ground on the outer side of the Abattis. In his efforts thus firmly main-

Order given by 'the Engineer officer.'

* Meaning of course, 'Shall the Engineers make what arrangements they can for the advance of the column?'

† Captain Jesse was not originally on duty with the Engineers in this part of the field, but he 'left the general officer to whom he was 'attached to see himself that the orders given were carried out.'—The Commanding Engineer to Lord Raglan, June 19, 1855.

CHAP. VII.

tained under raging fire, 'the Engineer officer' was aided by the exceeding zeal and valour of Sergeant Landrey, one of his sappers.

What to expect from the despatch of fresh troops.

Our few men, lying down on the verge of the Abattis, and under a mighty fire delivered now at a range of only some 80 yards, might well enough yearn to be told that supports were at last coming up; but the actual conditions were such—our ladders having all 'stranded'—that a large despatch of fresh troops pushed forward through storms of mitrail must have hugely augmented the sacrifices already made by our people without opening, perhaps after all, any clear, or even dim prospect of seizing the Great Redan.

The duty of an officer in command.

Be that as it may, no fresh troops could be seen coming up; and any officer acting in command of the men here engaged might well have felt it his duty—his bounden, his sacred duty—to save them from the ugly alternative of either perishing uselessly, or lapsing into retreat without an order to warrant it; but who, since the fall of its chief, was entitled to withdraw the small force?

But on whom had the command devolved?

For want of the needed command our people remained lying down under a powerful fire that—despite the half shelter they had gained—was steadily thinning their line.

A'Court Fisher;

The 'Engineer officer' happily had preserved a cool head; and as a first step towards useful action, he sought to learn who was entitled—or rather perhaps who was bound under painfully adverse conditions—to take up the vacant command. He strove

CHAP. VII.

to see or hear of some still undisabled officer with at lowest the rank of a captain, but finding none such, whilst also remembering that he was of higher standing than any subaltern of the line, he reluctantly found himself driven to a painful conclusion—one importing no less than that he—he himself—though only a lieutenant, must be the senior officer present; and, once forced to see this, he did not delay the accomplishment of what, however distasteful, was still a clearly marked duty. He called out to our men: 'Retire into the trenches the best way you 'can.'

the course he took.

The troops then began to withdraw, and—all the way under a fire that still exacted its victims—fell back on our most advanced trenches.

Withdrawal of the remains of the troops.

In the course of the retreat, A'Court Fisher himself, and many of the people obeying him, laid hold of yet one more occasion for the exercise of their daring and firmness by toiling protractedly—toiling under strong fire—in order to save wounded men.

Lieutenant A'Court Fisher's chief reported him as one who had 'displayed great coolness, judgment, 'and decision under very trying circumstances.'*

Just praise bestowed by the authorities on A'Court Fisher.

When, after the peace that had lasted scarce less than forty years, our new generation of islanders took up the great tradition, we saw Colonel Yea on

The loss of Colonel Yea;

* General Harry Jones to Lord Raglan, 20th June 1855.

CHAP. VII.

the Alma at the head of his Royal Fusiliers; but also we afterwards saw him encountering the stress of 'the winter troubles' with a rare force of will that protected his cherished regiment from no small share of the hardship endured by other troops; and to his power so exerted, no less than to his 'gallantry' in action, Lord Raglan in terms referred when—in sorrow—announcing to England the loss of this resolute chief.*

In their choice of the moment ordained for the end of his life whilst advancing at the head of his stormers, and already on the verge of the Abattis, the Fates, one may say, proved kind. He was still in the pride of attack, yet so closely approaching misfortune as almost to touch its brink. Any answer from him to the question of the piloting Engineer must needs have been either one owning his persistent attack to be hopeless, or else an answer enjoining some wild, frantic act of the kind that is rather sacrificial than warlike. Opportune, under such conditions, may have well been the shot which before he could open his lips laid on him the silence of death.

Except as regards the storm column (from which clear duty compelled him to exact heavy sacrifice) Colonel Yea had been chary of the lives of his men; for, though holding an extended authority, he did

* Lord Raglan to Secretary of State, 19th June 1855. A published Despatch.

CHAP. VII.

not direct that the bulk of the troops he commanded should come up—encountering slaughter—in close support to the lesser body of men with which he acted in person. In that smaller body, however, as may well be supposed, the proportion of loss was huge. Irrespective of the Engineers and the sailors, our infantry sharing with Yea in his onset against the Redan on its eastern or (proper) left flank lost no less than fourteen of their officers, and more than three-fifths of their strength;* whilst there also unhappily fell a distressingly large proportion of the few Engineers and of the sixty seamen who had taken part in the enterprise. Of these other losses no separate return is before me; but we know that of the three Engineer officers engaged in this part of the field, one only, that is, A'Court Fisher, came out of the action alive; and that of the six naval officers there engaged with the ladder division, no less than five were struck down.

and of other officers and of men.

It was at an early moment that Captain Peel, the commander of the sailors, the heroic, the radiant Peel received the wound which disabled him.

Whilst (before they had been ordered to retire) the scanty remains of the 'covering party' and of the 'storming column' were still confronting Sebastopol, the supports, though unseen by our people

Advance and subsequent retreat of the supports.

* Out of the 100 men furnished by the Rifle Brigade and the 400 by the 34th Regiment, making together 500 bayonets, with besides some soldiers acting as bearers, there fell 313 either wounded or killed.

CHAP. VII.

then lying down, as we saw, on the verge of the Abattis, had already begun to advance. Colonel Lysons commanded these troops. The 400 men of the 7th or Royal Fusiliers moved the foremost in open column of companies, and were followed by a like number drawn from the 33d Regiment. The blasts of mitrail and of musketry pouring down from the Great Redan soon destroyed the formation of the Royal Fusiliers, but did not arrest their advance, though converting it nevertheless into a fierce onward rush. 'The fire,' writes one of their officers —the able and brave Colonel Hibbert—'was so 'tremendous, one could only put one's head down, 'and run on as fast as possible.' *

The supporting force under this trial maintained its advance until the remains of our troops engaged near the Abattis were seen to be at last falling back. The supports then began to retire, but already they had suffered, and still were suffering loss.

XII.

Fire drawn on our trenches;

and especially on the spot where Lord Raglan was posted.

Of that fire from the Great Redan which Colonel Yea's column provoked no small part found its way to our trenches occasioning losses of men; and especially it poured on the Mortar Battery of the 3d Parallel, where Lord Raglan had taken his stand. There, leaning over the parapet in order to see all

* Colonel Hibbert to Mr Kinglake, November 23, 1869.

he could of the English attack, and of the general tenor of the French operations against the Malakoff and the Gervais Battery, Lord Raglan kept at his side the commander of our Engineers (General Harry Jones), but directed that all the rest of his staff, and the orderlies with them should sit down, obtaining all the shelter that was possible, and take care not to attract the enemy's attention by looking over the parapet. CHAP. VII.

His directions to the staff.

Yea's column had not long moved forward when the general commanding our Engineers was torn from the side of Lord Raglan by a grape-shot striking his forehead; (2) and from time to time afterwards, when officers and men bringing messages or having other business in hand came up from different parts of the field and stood upright in the battery, they were, some of them, wounded, some killed. Though incessantly watching the combat from over the parapet, Lord Raglan himself was not struck.

His commanding Engineer torn from his side.

Others stricken.

The conditions did not prove to be such that any attack on the salient of the Great Redan could at this time be usefully made; and, no change in this respect happening at a later hour, it resulted of course that the measure was not carried into effect.

The conditional measures.

General Barnard's ulterior operations had always been meant to depend on the fate of the attacks directed against the Redan. His troops therefore were stayed in the advanced position they had won

CHAP. VII.

on the right of the Woronzoff Gorge, and were afterwards duly withdrawn.*

XIII.

The bombardment ordered by Lord Raglan;

When the onsets of his infantry against the Redan had come at last to a close, Lord Raglan caused his siege-batteries to exert their full power against both the Redan and the Malakoff, thus not only making it certain that the enemy's glad sense of relief from attacks of foot-soldiers would be followed within some five minutes by the trial of suffering bombardment amid scenes of havoc and slaughter, but also tearing open the way for any renewed assault he might afterwards choose to deliver.

its effect.

This bombardment proved so effective that after scarce more than three-quarters of an hour the batteries it assailed were all but silenced.

Yet, to mark the ascendant thus swiftly obtained by our gunners was under one aspect distressing; for how could our people help thinking of what might have been the result, if, the right order of operations—the order which placed bombardment first, and next, assaults by our infantry—had not been reversed in the way we observed by the exigencies of what we called 'policy'?

Losses resulting from the assaults on the Redan.

These two onsets against the Redan cost our people not only the lives of the two commanders who led them—Colonel Yea and General Sir John

* General Barnard to Sir Richard England, 18th June 1855.

Campbell—but also in killed and wounded 62 other officers, and more than 700 men.* CHAP. VII.

XIV.

The ascendant thus promptly obtained by the guns of our siege-train opened room for the hope that another attack with infantry might soon be launched against batteries no longer in that prime condition to which the enemy had restored them in the course of the night, but on the contrary crippled by artillery-fire; and, having in hand the column—still fresh and untouched—that had been formed for an attack on the salient of the Redan, Lord Raglan proposed to unleash it, if the measure should seem to harmonise with the state of Pelissier's operations on the other side of the gorge. Communications accordingly passed between the two commanders, and at first were effected by message; but afterwards Lord Raglan determined to confer with his colleague in person. He accordingly rode off with his staff to the Lancaster Battery, where Pelissier had established himself, and there, standing apart, the two chiefs conversed for some time. They apparently determined at first that, Pelissier undertaking to support and drive home General d'Autemarre's onslaught, Lord Raglan on his part should renew his endeavour to carry the Great Redan; but it seems that the con-

Prospect opened by the success of the fire from the siege-guns.

Lord Raglan and Pélissier in communication.

The two chiefs together.

* Viz., 717, a number including 52 (out of only 120) sailors. The '62' includes six naval-officers.

CHAP. VII.

Messages from d'Autemarre.

ference between the two chiefs was from time to time interrupted by message after message brought in from General d'Autemarre, and that the latest of those communications determined Pelissier's course.

XV.

Continued operations of d'Autemarre's troops.

When last we observed the operations of General d'Autemarre's troops, the heads of his column, that is, that the battalion of the 5th Chasseurs at one point, and the little body of some 80 Engineers at another, were, each of them, holding what each had daringly seized when breaking in at two places through the enemy's lines of defence; but, on the other hand, although striving hard to reinforce their victorious comrades, the main body of General d'Autemarre's Division had as yet been striving in vain.

This balanced condition of things had a lengthened duration; for both the battalion of Chasseurs which had conquered its way into a part of the Faubourg, and the little body of 80 Engineers which had seized the Gervais Battery, held what they had each of them won with persistent valour; and on the other hand, General d'Autemarre's efforts to reinforce the bold men thus maintaining themselves in the fortress were defeated one after another by the severity of the fire poured down on his troops from the enemy's powerful batteries.

The motives that needs must have urged him to

effect the reinforcement attempted were beyond measure strong; for, to compass the object pursued, was not only to support his brave Frenchmen then holding all they had seized within the lines of the fortress, but also by that very act to gain means of operating effectively (because from within the defences) against the flank and rear of the Malakoff; whilst, to fail in sending down reinforcements would be to abandon the victors who had lodged themselves in the fortress, but also to surrender all hope of seeing the day end in victory.

Whilst striving, though vainly, to succour those of his men who had torn their way into the Faubourg, General d'Autemarre likewise was praying to be himself reinforced; and Pélissier met his appeal by calling up from his reserve the whole regiment of the Zouaves of the Guard; but these troops had a lengthened distance to traverse before they could come into action, and the occasion first offered by Fortune, then valiantly seized by the brave Engineers and brave Chasseurs, might not much longer endure.

When the French battalion of Chasseurs had planted itself in the Faubourg, it was assailed by General Khrouleff in person with at first only a few score men of the regiment of Sevsk, but presently also with one of the Pultawa battalions.* There en-

* The one under Captain Born which had been driven out of the Gervais Battery by the 80 French Engineers.

CHAP. VII.

sued an obstinate conflict, the Chasseurs intrepidly doing their best to strengthen themselves in the houses, and the Russians on the other hand striving to press, as it were, a small siege against each of the occupied buildings. All this while, too, the 80 Engineers unaided by infantry were still holding fast the battery which they had wrested from the enemy's troops.

Yet, if left unsupported, the struggles of a few gallant men who had lodged themselves in an enemy's fortress could be hardly much longer maintained; and on the other hand, though hitherto baffled in all the efforts he had made to accomplish the object desired, General d'Autemarre was still trying hard to reinforce the invaders.

The conflict thus drew to a crisis. If only the reinforcements should move down and join their comrades, there well might follow a conquest involving nothing less than the fall of Sebastopol. If not, the brave men who had broken through the Russian defences, and long held the ground they had won would perforce be all sacrificed, or driven out of the fortress; and, there being no other path open for even attempting assaults on the works of the Karabelnaya, it followed that the crisis of the conflict undertaken by d'Autemarre's troops would be also nothing less than the crisis of the whole day's engagement, excepting only that part of it on the skirts of Sebastopol town where General Eyre was commanding.

A time at last came when, no reinforcements

arriving, the men of the Chasseurs battalion were forced to abandon the ground they had seized in the Karabelnaya, and when also fresh bodies of men—men drawn from the Jäkoutsk regiment—assailed and recaptured the Gervais Battery, driving out what remained of the little body of 80 French Engineers which had gallantly seized and long held it. Their commander, the brave Major Abinal, who had led the attack, and remained to the last in the battery, was one of those mortally wounded.* CHAP. VII.

The battalions of the Zouaves of the Guards that had been called up from the somewhat too distant reserve appeared at length on the ground, but by that time the crisis had passed, and they never were brought into action.

XVI.

Pélissier had not yet reached the end of that interval, eight days in length, during which he seemed not to enjoy the full command of his powers; and those who have studied his character will say, unless I mistake, that, if even he judged aright (as indeed he apparently did) when determining to abandon the struggle, he nevertheless in so doing was strangely unlike himself. Pélissier;

It would be a mistake, and altogether unfair to base any estimate of Pélissier's capacity upon what

* Niel, p. 318.

CHAP. VII.

he either did or omitted to do in the course of that unhappy interval.

Pélissier, so far as I learn, gave no account to his Emperor or to any one else of the main, the governing facts which brought about his discomfiture; did not—even indirectly—confess that by breaking loose from the engagement made with Lord Raglan on the 17th, he had caused the troops, French and English, to fling their strength on a fortress at the height of its power instead of one shattered anew (after all the repairs of the night) by a wisely designed cannonade. ([3]) Pélissier spoke indeed of one phase—the phase next about to be mentioned—that marked the engagement in its latter stage, and assigned it as a reason to justify his final decision; but this phase, after all, was a simply direct result of his wayward mistakes, and not an originating cause of the step we shall now see him take.

His resolve to abandon the struggle.

Moved, he says, by the fact that d'Autemarre was without support on either flank, Pélissier—at least for the day—abandoned all hope of breaking through the defences, and at seven o'clock in the morning, or perhaps somewhat later, he withdrew his troops from the front.* The retrograde movement was made without being gravely molested by troops sent out in pursuit.

* The Russians assign 7 o'clock as the time, and are probably near the truth, but Pélissier puts the time later, that is, at 8.30 A.M. He, however, perhaps referred to the time when his people regained the trenches.

XVII.

The movement on the Tchernaya resulted in no operations that need, as I think, be recorded.

The movement on the Tchernaya.

XVIII.

The only onset this day that ended victoriously was the one undertaken against ground skirting Sebastopol on the eastern side of the town, and entrusted to General Eyre with a single brigade that numbered some 2000 men. The general was to descend the ravine that took its name from the Piquet House there held by the French, to attack the line of rifle-pits established below, and finally to endeavour to occupy some ground in advance whence ulterior operations might be advantageously effected, and this more especially if the great attacks to be made in other parts of the field should be happily crowned with success. The troops destined to oppose this attack were all the battalions of the Okhotsk, and some portions of the Tomsk regiment.* Both these regiments had encountered our people at Inkerman, and might not perhaps now prove disposed to show themselves much in the open, but rather to take advantage of shelter.

The attack led by General Eyre.

General Eyre began his march at about half-past one in the morning. When approaching the rifle-

* Todleben, vol. ii. p. 375.

CHAP. VII.

pits and preparing to attack them in front, he all at once found himself anticipated by a body of French Chasseurs posted near, which cleverly took them in flank.* Then — as though under some precise order—the share our allies were thus taking in the early part of the onset came all at once to an end.

General Eyre still however advancing, soon found in position before him some Russian troops strongly posted, their right resting on a Mamelon, their left on a cemetery, the ground between being intersected, and the road barricaded with stone walls. The Russians were ensconced behind cover, and General Eyre could not estimate their number. In rear of the stone walls were houses occupied by the enemy, and yet further in rear, troops held in reserve could be seen.

The position was strong, and being under the guns of the fortress, including those of the Péressip, could hardly be taken without incurring serious loss; but it seems to have been judged that the object was worthy the sacrifice. Despite the fire thinning their ranks, our troops advanced with great gallantry, pulled down the stone walls, soon carried the whole position, and then pushing on, seized and occupied numbers of houses, some in front, some on the right, some under the Garden Wall Battery.

The question whether all or how much of the conquest thus made should be permanently retained by our people was dependent at first on the course

* The 10th Chasseurs.

THE RUSSIAN POSITION
ATTACKED AND CARRIED
BY GENERAL EYRE,
ON THE 18TH OF JUNE.
THE REDAN
BARRACK BATTERY
MAN OF WAR HARBOUR
FENCIBLE BATTERIES
THE CROW'S NEST
AGSTAFF BASTION
WORONZOFF RAVINE
RUSSIAN RIFLE PITS
Russian Rifle pits
Russian Rifle pits
THE QUARRIES
THE GARDEN
THE HOUSE
Ravine
PARALLEL
1ST PARALLEL
2ND PARALLEL
3RD PARALLEL
No 8
No 7
ENGLISH LEFT ATTACK
Scale.

of events in other parts of the field, but afterwards on the judgment of our Engineers, the men best able to say what part of the newly won ground was likely to be of use to the besiegers; and therefore the commander resolved to hold all he had seized until the time when authority should be ready to determine the question. This he accordingly did, and it was only at five o'clock in the evening that he made any change. Then — unmolested by the enemy—his troops were withdrawn from that part of the conquered ground which our Engineers did not wish to retain, whilst in that other part which it seemed expedient to keep, strong posts were duly established. By this time, computing from daybreak, when the firing is believed to have opened, the action had lasted scarce less than fourteen hours. The ground General Eyre retained was afterwards fortified under the direction of our Engineers.

From one of the enemy's missiles in the early part of the day, General Eyre had received a blow in the head which, though heavy, still did not for some time disable him; but afterwards, the wound, or its consequences, became so far incapacitating as to force him to give up the command. This accordingly he handed over to Colonel Adams of the 28th Regiment.

Eyre's conquest of ground in this part of the field might have proved to be a gain of great

CHAP. VII.

moment, if the other and main operations of the Allies had been blest by good fortune; but, the contrary event having happened, it cannot be said that the gain achieved by this little victory was sufficient to weigh in a balance against the heavy loss it entailed. The loss was grave, comprising in killed and wounded no less than 562 (of whom 31 were officers), and this, too, out of a body that was only some 2000 strong. (4)

XIX.

Losses sustained in the engagements of the 18th of June.

According to official statements, the losses in killed, wounded, and missing sustained on this day by the Russians were 1500;* by the French, about 3500;† by the English, 1505.‡ General Todleben received a wound in the head, which, however, he treated as slight.

It proved that the 'missing' comprised in the returns of the Allies were, some of them, prisoners in the hands of the enemy, whilst others were men killed and wounded who could not be all at once found. Of prisoners other than those who died of their wounds in Sebastopol, the enemy took 287

* Todleben, ii. p. 380. The whole loss of the Russians in the *two* days, 17th and 18th, is stated, *ibid.*, p. 379, at 5446, but of those casualties no less than 4000 were sustained, as before shown, under the bombardment of the 17th.

† Niel, p. 319. The exact number there given is 3551, but that return included a few score of men killed or wounded the day before.

‡ Official Returns, including those from the Navy.

Frenchmen, including 17 officers; and from the English only six, including one officer.* Even of those six, all or some, if not all, when made prisoners, had been probably wounded. CHAP. VII.

Of the six French and English commanders who led the six attacks, no less than four were killed, whilst also a fifth one received a wound that disabled him.†

XX.

By the high-couraged energy with which they had restored their batteries to perfect efficiency in the night of the 17th of June, the Russians acquired or regained priceless means of defence; and when afterwards engaged in the action, they went through the easier task of using their recovered power with a steadiness, spirit, and vigour which, with only the exception we marked—one not destined to alter events—prevented all the attacks attempted against the enceinte from being pushed home, or even carried so far as to be closely approaching the counterscarps. The high merit of the Russian defence.

The whole scheme of the great Engineer defending Sebastopol was—not to maintain but—prohibit what Englishmen mean by a 'fight'—to baffle all Prince Gortchakoff's statements.

* Todleben, ii. p. 381.

† See in the Appendix a highly interesting private letter from Lord Raglan on the subject of these engagements of the 18th of June. (5)

CHAP. VII.

attempts on the part of the besiegers to come to close quarters by the fire he poured down from his ramparts; and this object he so well achieved that (except in the instance adduced) the counterscarps of the Karabelnaya defences from the west of the Great Redan to the eastermost end of 'the Point' were never once reached, were never once closely approached by any assailants. Yet in face of this truth—now well shown and recorded by Russians, French, and English alike—Prince Michael Gortchakoff allowed himself to represent that his troops had been fighting, as it were, a grand battle, had fought it too at close quarters, and had won it by bayonet-charges! To make the fable consistent with itself, the inventor ascribed to the assaulting columns of the Allies a degree of initial success which—unhappily—they never attained, declaring that they had come up with their ladders to the works of defence and were scaling the parapets when they found themselves met by 'the points' of the Russian bayonets and were thrown back into the Ditches; (6) the truth, we know, being that—always shattered by fire in some earlier stage of their marches—the columns never were able to close on the Russian defences, except when a brief inadvertence enabled the battalion of Chasseurs, with besides the 80 French Engineers, to evade the enemy's cannon, and that those little bodies of men—far from meeting any 'bayonet-points'—overcame with great ease the spiritless resistance attempted, established themselves

in the fortress, and there, although unsupported, long held their ground against numbers.* CHAP. VII.

XXI.

When endeavouring to account for his discomfiture, Pélissier laid a great stress on the several mishaps of the early morning which had prevented his three great attacks from taking effect simultaneously, and cast blame on the two commanders—General Mayran and General Brunet—who both had been killed in the action. It is true perhaps that those accidents gave the enemy a little advantage by interposing some time between the onset of Mayran and those of Brunet and d'Autemarre; but the all-governing cause of the repulse sustained by the Allies was that wild change of purpose of the preceding evening which enabled the garrison to confront the besiegers at dawn with the whole of the vast ordnance powers they had wielded before the bombardment. In that very part of the ground (at and near the Gervais Battery) where artillery seemed for a moment to fail in repelling assailants, its almost insuperable power was quickly proved with great clearness; for, when (owing to some inadvertence on the part of the enemy's gunners) the band of French Chasseurs and the 80 French Engineers

Pélissier's explanations.

The real cause of his failure.

* It is right to say that in time Prince Gortchakoff's curious fiction was suppressed by the Russians themselves, or not at all events suffered to have any place in the great official account which recorded their defence of Sebastopol.

CHAP. VII.

had been suffered to reach the defences on the western flank of the Malakoff, and then to break their way through, all those troops in their rear that formed the bulk of the column were so peremptorily stopped or fended back by the enemy's restored batteries as to be debarred from performing what must otherwise have proved the glad task of moving into the fortress by paths already laid open, and there reinforcing the men who had brilliantly shown them the way.

The sudden change of design which brought General Pélissier to send infantry encumbered with ladders across distances of several hundreds of yards in the teeth of great batteries restored to their full power of destructiveness was an error on so huge a scale that, when once it had taken effect, no skill unaided by Fortune could well have averted discomfiture. Fortune once—only once—seemed to smile. First, lulling the enemy's gunners, she gave her hand to brave men thus enabled to move down unscathed, and carried them into the fortress, where, after overthrowing their adversaries, they long maintained a firm hold of the ground they had won; but—perhaps from no fault of either—General d'Autemarre first, and then the French Commander-in-Chief, proved unable to seize their occasion by reinforcing the victors. Not interposing again, Fortune thenceforth abandoned the Allies to what was the natural consequence of Pélissier's fatal resolve.

CHAP. VII.

Except in that one chosen quarter where Fortune had seemed—for a while—to take part, there was never from the first to the last any trustworthy basis for hope that either the French or the English could even so much as begin an assault on the enemy's works. The French troops confronting defences from the Battery of the Point to the eastern face of the Malakoff, and the English on their part confronting the batteries of the Great Redan, gave themselves with unsparing devotion, and at large cost of life and limb to their several tasks; but, encumbered with ladders, and striving to traverse long distances under fire of great might from the ramparts, they were always so rudely mown down long before coming up to the counterscarps as to have no means at all left them for carrying the defences by storm.

Todleben's comments.

With respect to Pélissier's failure, the comment of Todleben is that he attempted what (after the repairs effected at night) was virtually impracticable, and omitted to do what was perfectly feasible—that is, to attack the town front.*

On the efforts our people directed against the Redan, the published comment of Todleben is to the effect that they attempted the enterprise with troops too scanty in number;† but none knew better than he that any increase of the numbers thrown forward beneath his storms of mitrail must have entailed a

* Vol. ii. pp. 381, 382.

† Ibid., p. 383.

CHAP. VII.

proportionate increase of slaughter; and he certainly did not believe that even after all imaginable sacrifices, the English surviving this ordeal would have come up to the counterscarps of the Work in such strength as to be able to storm it. Standing with me years afterwards on the site of the Malakoff, he pointed out to me the lines of the Redan, and showed that, so long as the Malakoff batteries were exerting their power, troops assailing the Redan could not live.

It can hardly be said that from the moment when he launched his columns by signal to the one when he gave his last order, the mind of Pélissier was brought to bear on the action with any telling effect. He indeed drew some troops from his great reserve with which to reinforce General Mayran, but did this too late; and again, he despatched other forces —the Zouaves of the Guard—to the support of General d'Autemarre; but before they came into action, he ordered a retreat, and put an end to the conflict. It would seem that that last step, however, was a step rightly taken; for—because not supported in time by the accession of any fresh troops—the occupation of a part of the fortress by the brave Engineers and the Chasseurs had come at last to an end.

XXII.

Costliness of General Eyre's victory in proportion to the advantages gained.

Undertaken to meet a contingency that did not occur, and involving a grave loss of men, the attack we saw General Eyre drive through the 'Garden-wall' skirts of Sebastopol must be deemed on the whole to have ended in a dearly bought victory, and a dearly bought conquest of ground.

CHAPTER VIII.

SEBASTOPOL AFTER THE ENGAGEMENT.—GENERAL TODLEBEN WOUNDED.—HIS DEFENCE OF SEBASTOPOL.

I.

CHAP. VIII.

The veil between warring armies;

BETWEEN any two modern armies opposing each other in war, though not, for the moment, in battle, there always hangs more or less thickly a dim, confusing mist, which neither the one nor the other can all at once lift by aid of deserters or spies; and, because excluding sound knowledge whilst also leaving free room for the play of conjecture, this ceaselessly interposed veil must often of course have its share in determining the will of commanders, forcing each, after all, to depend a good deal on his powers to divine things unknown; so that neither perhaps will attack, unless he proves strong at imagining the unhopeful state of his adversary.

between Sebastopol and its besiegers.

If, when our siege-guns ceased firing on the morning of the 18th of June, the baffled and troubled besiegers could only have looked through the 'veil,' they perhaps might have taken Sebastopol before

the close of the day. Yet, if at that very same time, a glance through the 'veil' had been only vouchsafed to the then dispirited garrison, they would promptly have seen that their efforts were proving successful, and would earn them a long time of respite from any determined attacks.

The garrison. Its achievement.

By repulsing all five of the columns which the French and the English had launched against their works of defence, and yielding to only one force—the force commanded by Eyre which did not attack their enceinte—the garrison had earned a good right to rejoice in the general result of their whole morning's work; but strangely enough it occurred that, for want of a glance through the 'veil,' their hour of real deliverance was to them an hour of deep gloom, and of even some approach to despair.

Its actual state of feeling towards the close of the engagement.

Coming after the terrible losses inflicted upon them by siege-guns, not only in the earlier days of June, but before, in the month of April, the sacrifices made by the garrison—not so much whilst encountering infantry on the morning of the 18th, but rather when exposed, as they had been on the previous day, to the mercies of the Fourth Bombardment—had brought about in the Army a feeling of something like horror not unmingled with grave indignation against a plan of defence which so ruthlessly exacted its victims.* This was only too natural. The best battalions there are might well betray a want of contentment when doomed—not to fight, as brave men would be ready to do, but—

* Calthorpe, ii. p. 350.

CHAP. VIII.

to stand—standing idle—under the fire of siege-batteries, upon one chosen pittance of ground, and there submit to be torn by round-shot and shell, lest their presence by chance should be needed in order to repel some assault.

This necessity of keeping troops ready for imagined contingencies under the fire of siege-batteries, without any shelter from casemates or other appliances, was of course a weak point in the plan of defence. It brought wounds or death to several thousands of men, and on all the troops so employed inflicted the moral torture of having to stand simply passive under the fire of great guns without being able themselves to strike a blow in return.

However, if not with good grace, and not without signs that the endurance of the brave Russian soldiery had been strained to nearly its utmost, the torture of the Fourth Bombardment was borne by the Army in Sebastopol on the 17th of June; and Pélissier's infatuation prevented its being renewed in the earlier hours of the following day; but, when after the baffled assaults of the 18th of June, our siege-guns opened once more, and the Russians again underwent a havoc and slaughter renewing their yesterday's trial of fortitude, the feeling that appears to have seized on a part of the garrison was one of bitter, angry discouragement approaching with some to despair, and with many indeed, it would seem, that the feeling ran into panic. According to the accounts of deserters, the soldiery in great numbers ran down to the shore of the Road-

stead, and fought with their own fellow-countrymen for the boats and the rafts they there found, wildly striving to escape from Sebastopol, and gain the peaceful 'North Side.' *

This despair, or approach to despair, on the part of troops well entitled to exult in their happy achievement, was not destined of course to be lasting; but the garrison did not cease all at once to stand in grave need of encouragement; and perhaps a requirement so pressing may have led men to frame in great haste such accounts of a glorious infantry battle as they thought would best cheer the dispirited soldiery, thus supplying material for the strange fabrication which substituted mere hollow fable for the truth known to thousands, yet purported to draw its authority from the Russian Commander-in-chief. †

The Czar's infantry in grave need of encouragement;

The Russians—navy and army, engineers, artillery, infantry—having all, or nearly all, done their duty with valour and steadiness down to almost the close of the action, and having repulsed every column attempting to storm the enceinte, might have well been rewarded and cheered with perfectly well-founded praise; yet, because, when our siege-guns reopened, a part of the garrison faltered, and began to lose heart, some restorative better than truth was apparently thought to be needed. The garrison was gravely told that it had fought at close quarters with the hosts of the besiegers, and defeated

whence apparently the fabrication of the 18th of June.

* Calthorpe, ii. p. 355.

† See *ante*, chap. vii. p. 205 *et seq.*

CHAP. VIII.

them with our old Russian friend, 'the too often 'fabulous bayonet!'

Thanksgivings.

A more legitimate way of restoring heart to the troops was found with the aid of the priests who—made sacred in the eyes of the Russians by their sacred costumes (1), and carrying their time-honoured implements of worship—came out on the morrow of the action to the lines of defence, and there led the chants of Thanksgiving for the 'mercy,' as our Cromwell would call it, vouchsafed on the previous morning.

Just right of the garrison to indulge in self-gratulation.

With any such pious acknowledgments a little fair self-gratulation is always compatible; and the brave survivors of those who had undergone the dreadful bombardment of the 17th of June, who had toiled through the night in repairing their shattered batteries under vertical fire, who, next day, manning their ramparts, had stood—had stood firm—against five advancing columns, who had endured the bombardment which followed without giving way to despair, were able to indulge a just pride, not only in what they had done, but yet more in what they had borne.

II.

Ill-omened, however, this time, were the public thanksgivings! On the very next day, General

CHAP. VIII.

Todleben wounded;

Todleben was wounded by a ball in the calf of his right leg; and his surgeon, observing the symptoms, strongly pressed him to leave the town in all haste. This in absolute terms the general refused to do. The commander-in-chief of the garrison then came to the side of his couch; but it was only after strong persuasion that he prevailed upon Todleben to retire to the home of M. Sarandansky—a country-house on the Belbec.* There—because inflammation set in—he long remained prostrate, and too often enduring great pain.

and removed from Sebastopol.

Thus passed away from Sebastopol its mighty defender. It is true that the cares of war followed him, that reports which imparted more or less freshly, and more or less accurately the ever-varying phases of the siege and defence, were day by day brought him, and that from his bed of suffering, too often indeed during moments when the pain he endured was severe, he showed those who came how to meet the then newly extant conditions, doing this, it is said, with all his old clearness, and with that strong, that sure grasp of mind for which he was famed amongst those who long had toiled under his orders.†

The part he still took.

But we know that Todleben's method of bringing brain-power to bear on, each problem coming before him had rested much more than is common on his own actual, bodily presence. By scanning reports, and penning or dictating orders, other men have

The way in which, until wounded, he had brought his power to bear

* Ernshoff, Part VII. leaf 79 of the MS. translation I have.

† Ibid.

CHAP. VIII.

made themselves conquerors, and few, I suppose, would disparage the mode they have found well adapted for giving effect to their plans. But not such was this great soldier's way of bringing his power to bear. It was not at table or desk, but on that black charger of his which our people used to watch with their glasses that he mainly defended Sebastopol.* It was always with his very own eyes that he liked to fasten on knowledge, with his very own voice that he liked to give special orders, with his very own presence that he carried from rampart to rampart the passion of a warlike resolve.

The difference caused by his removal.

The withdrawal of a power long wielded in this special, personal way was not of course one to be compensated by any such notes or messages as a wounded and suffering patient might send from his couch miles away in the Belbec valley; and, although I have no right to say that, so soon as this leader of men—suffering under his wound—had been carried away from his Fortress, the famous defence of Sebastopol began to decline, it still must be owned that thenceforward no other day meet for Thanksgivings awaited the garrison; nor less is it true that, when no longer met by his presence amongst the defenders, rash counsels began to prevail. The Czar's army, wildly attempting to dispute with the French and Sardinians for the banks of the lower Tchernaya, was soon to receive at their hands a calamitous defeat in the field.

No thanksgivings thenceforth for the Russians;

but approaching defeat in the field.

* The interesting identification at Woolwich to which Todleben's black charger contributed is mentioned, I think, in an earlier volume.

The more narrow-minded men of the Czar's Army, and even, whilst Nicholas lived, the confused Czar himself, would have thought they sufficiently described the real defender of Sebastopol by calling him an 'Engineer Officer,' with perhaps superadded some epithet such as 'excellent,' or 'able,' or 'good'; and it is true that his skill in that 'branch' of the service enabled the great volunteer to bring his power to bear at a critical time; but it would be a wild mistake to imagine that, because fraught with knowledge and skill on one special subject, his mind was a mind at all prone to run in accustomed, set grooves. He was by nature a man great in war, and richly gifted with power, not only to provide in good time for the dimly expected conditions which it more or less slowly unfolds, but to meet its most sudden emergencies. When, for instance, we saw him at Inkerman in a critical moment, he, in theory, was only a spectator on horseback; but, to avert the impending disaster, he instantly assumed a command. He seized, if so one may speak, on a competent body of troops, and rescued from imminent capture the vast, clubbed, helpless procession of Mentschikoff's retreating artillery.

The position of Todleben in Sebastopol;

He was only at first a volunteer colonel, and was afterwards even, no more, in the language of formalists, than a general commanding the Engineers in a fortress besieged; but the task he designed, the task he undertook, the task he—till wounded—pursued with a vigour and genius that astonished a gazing world, was—not this or that fraction of a

CHAP. VIII.

mighty work, but simply—the whole defence of Sebastopol. Like many another general, he from time to time found himself thwarted, and too often encountered obstructions; but upon the whole, even after the 'heroic period,' when the glorious sailors were mainly his trust and his strength, there glowed in the hearts of the Russians withstanding foreign invasion a genuine spirit of patriotism which not only brought them to face the toils and dangers of war with ready devotion, but even in a measure kept down the growth of ignoble jealousies directed against this true chief.

and in the war generally.

The task of defending Sebastopol was a charge of superlative moment, and drew to itself before long the utmost efforts that Russia could bring to bear on the war.

Since the fortress—because not invested—stood open to all who would save it, and only closed against enemies, the troops there at any time planted were something more than a 'garrison,' being also in truth the foremost column of troops engaged in resisting invasion; and moreover the one chosen body out of all the Czar's forces which had in charge his great jewel—the priceless Sebastopol Roadstead.

The invaders and the invaded alike had from time to time fondly dwelt on plans for deciding the fate of Sebastopol by means of action elsewhere; but the Russians, deterred from 'adventures' by the terrible Inkerman day, had since given up all recourse to

field operations attempted with any such object; CHAP. VIII.
and, on the other hand, General Pelissier by his great strength of will had substantially brought the invaders to follow a like resolve. From this avoidance on both sides of serious field operations, it resulted of course that hostilities became, as it were, condensed on the Sebastopol battle-field.

There, accordingly, and of course with intensity proportioned to the greatness and close concentration of efforts made on both sides, the raging war laid its whole stress.

On the narrow arena thus chosen, it was Russia, all Russia that clung to Sebastopol, with its faubourg the Karabelnaya; and, since Todleben there was conducting the defence of the place, it follows from what we have seen, that he was chief over that very part of the Czar's gathered, gathering armies which had 'the jewel' in charge; and moreover that, call him a Sapper, or call him a warlike dictator, or whatever men choose, he was the real commander for Russia on the one confined seat of conflict where all the long-plotted hostilities of both the opposing forces had drawn at last to a centre.

To appreciate the power he wielded, and distinguish him from an officer defending an invested fortress, one again must recur to the peculiar nature of the strife on which France and England had entered. Though maintained in great part with the kind of appliances that are commonly used by the assailants and defenders of fortresses, the conflict was so strongly marked in its character by the absence of

CHAP. VIII.

complete investment as to be rather a continuous battle between two entrenched armies than what men in general mean when they casually speak of a 'siege.' Each force, if thus lastingly engaged, was likewise all the while drawing an equally lasting support, the one from all Russia exerting the strength of the Empire in her own dominions, the other from what was not less than a great European Alliance with full command of the sea.

The commander of a fortress besieged in the normal way, cut off from the outer world, must commonly dread more or less the exhaustion of his means of defence; but no cares of that exact kind cast their weight on the mind of the chief engaged in defending Sebastopol; for being left wholly free to receive all the succours that Russia might send him, he had no exhaustion to fear, except indeed such an exhaustion affecting Russia herself as would prevent her furnishing means for the continued defence of the fortress.

The garrison holding Sebastopol, and made, one may say inexhaustible by constant reinforcement, used in general to have such a strength as the Russians themselves thought well fitted for the defence of the fortress; and, if they did not augment it, this was simply because greater numbers for service required behind ramparts would have increased the exacted sacrifices, without doing proportionate good.

But in truth—because constantly drawing fresh accessions of strength from the rear—this peculiarly circumstanced garrison represented both a power

and a sacrifice that could not be measured by merely counting its numbers at any one given time. The force was so privileged as to be exempt from the weakness of armies with dwindling numbers. The garrison was ever young, ever strong, ever equal in numbers to what were considered its needs. It was constantly indeed sending off great numbers of men sick and wounded to hospitals over the Roadstead, and was always contributing largely to 'the grave of the hundred thousand' in the Severnaya;* but the wounded, the sick, the dead were constantly replaced by fresh troops; and even a plague of down-heartedness in the soldiery such as showed itself on the 18th of June, was an evil that the commander of the garrison knew how to shake off by marching away the dispirited regiments, and promptly filling their places with troops in a more warlike mood.

Great of course was the power, though not to be told by arithmetic, of an ever-fresh body of troops thus peculiarly circumstanced, with Todleben's mighty defences to cover their front; but proportionately great was the strain that Sebastopol put upon Russia by continually exacting fresh troops for a garrison that was fast losing men, yet—on peril of a fatal disaster—must always be kept in due strength.

* On the Severnaya, or North Side, there is a sepulchre (sanctified by a church) called grandly by Russians 'the tomb of the hundred 'thousand.' The real number of sailors and soldiers sacrificed at Sebastopol, and laid in this 'tomb' was not quite so great as the 'round number' imports, but great enough (speaking poetically) to warrant the tragic surname.

CHAP. VIII.

Because he defended the fortress under all these conditions at a time when the forces on each side were avoiding grave field operations, General Todleben, I think, must be said to have virtually held the command in that protracted conflict which we have almost been ready to call a 'continuous battle,' and indeed — since the Inkerman day — to have virtually wielded the power — the whole of the power that Russia opposed to her invaders on the Sebastopol theatre of war.

III.

The glory attaching to the early defence of Sebastopol;

The glory—true glory—attaching to the defence of Sebastopol in its early and grandest period was kept veiled from the Russians themselves by, in some things, the misleading utterances, in others, the misleading silence, if not indeed by the ignorance, of their own unfortunate Czar.

this kept veiled from the Russians themselves.

How this happened, we easily learn. To appreciate the glory there was in battling with that dark sea of troubles which confronted Korniloff and Todleben, the first condition of course is to know in a general way what the troubles they faced really were; and this, as it happened, was knowledge of exactly that kind which a man in the station of Nicholas might very well fail to acquire, or, if acquiring it, choose to withhold from the ears of his people; for where could the Czar find informants brave enough to acquaint him in full with the reign

that sprang up in Sebastopol on the 25th of September, and how could the man tell his people of that collapse of his Government and of his Army which had opened occasion for lawless, volunteered services? how bring himself to see and acknowledge that the intrepid defence of Sebastopol in its earlier and noblest epoch was achieved, so to speak, by—as though they were dare-devil English, or dare-devil Anglo-Americans—a little commonwealth of brave men, exempt for the time from all imperial governance, and deserted by the Emperor's army? Above all, how confess that men for the moment cast loose from the rule of the Czars knew how to do what was essentially an Emperor's work—knew how to find a great general?

The truth is, that that very period which was one of great glory for the people of Russia, was also, as we have seen, one of shame for not only the Czar, but the Czardom; and, the light of knowledge in those days being under official control, Russia could not learn much at the time of the heroism with which a few thousands of her people, when fairly cast loose from their Government, stood up against the Invaders.

As in France, when the long war had ended, schoolmasters taught little children that the battles of Marengo and Austerlitz had been gained—after prayers to his saint—by the pious and valiant King Louis; so Nicholas—blind to the truth, or tramp-

CHAP. VIII.

ling it down under foot, ignored the superb interregnum that began in Sebastopol towards the close of September, and wildly claimed for his 'Army,' that is, in a sense for himself, all the glory that had been won in the interval by a man and by men for the moment cast loose from Imperial rule, and taking that place of danger which the 'Army,' as we saw, had left vacant.

When Nicholas died, the Government of his successor dealt wisely enough with the fact that there had been at Sebastopol a brief interregnum, when the glory achieved by brave Russians contrasted with the plight of the Government. They adopted, if so we may speak, the great volunteer; and, although not apparently strong enough in the face of known army prejudices to give him—to give him ostensibly—a wider command than that of general officer commanding the Engineers in a fortress, they yet duly provided, or suffered Prince Gortchakoff to provide, that he who had conceived, had begun, had maintained the glorious defence of Sebastopol, should still have the power required for going on with his task.

That, whilst the war lasted, the Government of the new Czar should aid in bringing to light the true history of 'the interregnum' was hardly to be expected; for no man, when dealing with the events which began towards the close of September, could well give a just meed of praise to the heroes of that trying time without confessing the facts—facts shaming of course to the Czardom—which gave them the occasion they seized; and it seems to have

resulted that, at the time of the war, the Russians in general were kept ill acquainted, or not acquainted at all, with what, in those days, was so gloriously achieved by their people.

If allowed at the time to have full acquaintance with what seems to me a great page in their history, the Russians might perhaps have inferred that their uniform discomfiture in the open field, their overthrow in every battle attempted against the invaders, was, after all, rather traceable to their system of government, than to any inherent defect in the quality of their race. That, of course, was a kind of discovery which their rulers might desire to avert.

Words recalling the early defence of Sebastopol.

To know, if only a little, of that strange time in Sebastopol when the guns on the Alma were heard; when, with what seemed strange suddenness, the sounds of battle all ceased; when afterwards—met riding southwards, alone or almost alone, bent down by fatigue and misfortune, Prince Mentschikoff gave from his saddle the order—perhaps well conceived, but hideous nevertheless—the order to sink men-of-war across the mouth of the Roadstead;

When he and his army retreated into Sebastopol; when—in secrecy and at night—with his army the Prince retreated again, retreating, this time, into what was nothing less than sheer exile from the then narrowed seat of war;

When Prince Mentschikoff not only ceased to

CHAP. VIII.

know anything of the enemy from whom he was flying, but even for several days gave up intercourse with the 18,000 sailors of the now land-locked fleet under Admiral Korniloff, and all the other brave men he had left to their fate in Sebastopol;

When suddenly officers gazing from the Belvedere top of the Naval Library saw our red-coats in march for the road which descends from Mackenzie's Farm, and so by swift inference learnt that Sebastopol was about to be assailed from the south—assailed on its unprepared front;

When all at once, shifting his energies from the north to what now might well seem the doomed side of an inchoate fortress, the volunteer Colonel of Sappers came over the Roadstead, came forbidding, repressing despair, and replacing it by the healthy alternative of work, work, work, immense work; so that under his guidance the people of all sorts and conditions who had been left in Sebastopol —people having, it is true, for their main strength and main hope the superb 18,000 sailors of the land-locked fleet, commanded by their heroic Korniloff, addressed themselves to no less an object than that of defending Sebastopol against the victorious armies of England and France, entered therefore at once on their task of constructing defences and pursued it under the eyes of the enemy;

When, adding political courage to warlike valour, the heroic, devoted Admiral and the volunteer Colonel of Sappers proved able to form a resolve

which to Russians a few days before would have seemed to overpass all the limits of human audacity, and without any sanction at all from their Czar or his Government, with none from the commander, Prince Mentschikoff, went on to break up—for State reasons—a vast imperial structure—a structure no less than that of the whole Black Sea Fleet, and then promptly applied it, applied it material and men, applied it body and soul, to the work of fighting on shore;

When at dawn on the 10th of October the joy of the defenders rose high, because they saw that the enemy had been opening trenches, and learnt that, far from seizing the place, he was going instead to besiege it; and next, eight days later, when having bombarded Sebastopol with their fleets and their land-service batteries, the Allies proved content to abstain from completing their work by assault,—to know, I say, if but a little, of this stirring epoch of only some twenty-eight days, is to have an idea of the perils which Korniloff and Todleben faced, is to see that the Russian people, if ennobled by a training like that received by their sailors instead of being crushed by excessive land-service drill, may prove themselves greater in war than they have seemed to be under their Czars; is to learn that, although he had remained undiscovered by their Government, and was only a volunteer officer, they knew when they had in their midst a born commander of men, and hastened to make him their leader.

Inferences to be drawn from the early defence of Sebastopol.

CHAP. VIII.

Defence of Sebastopol after the 17th of October.

After the 17th of October, when Todleben's great undertaking had passed its desperate epoch, and the fortress every day growing stronger became and for some time remained an at least equal match for its foes, he who still carried on the defence under new conditions, who oppressed, almost mocked the besiegers with his counter-approaches; who still pursued month after month his steadfast design, and brought it to a climax victoriously on the morning of the 18th of June, was he who, if armed in the spring—some months after the fitting time!—with a share of official authority, still remained the same man as the volunteer Colonel of Sappers, whose greatness began in that interval when the Czardom for the moment had ceased to exercise sway in Sebastopol, leaving room in its stead for heroic, spontaneous action adventured by resolute men.

Todleben;

And what Todleben achieved, he achieved in his very own way. Never hearkening apparently to the cant of the Russian army of those days which with troops marshalled closely like sheep professed to fight with the bayonet, he made it his task to avert all strife at close quarters, by pouring on any assailants such storms of mitrail as should make it impossible for them to reach the verge of his counterscarps. That is the plan he designed from the first, and the one he in substance accomplished.

his superlative part in the war.

From the day when he made his first efforts to cover with earthworks the suddenly threatened South Side to the time, more than eight months afterwards, when his wound compelled him to quit

the fortress, he successfully defended Sebastopol; and, as we have seen, to do this—after Inkerman, or at all events after the onset attempted against Eupatoria—was to maintain the whole active resistance that Russia opposed to her invaders in the south-western Crimea.

Confined as it was to one narrow tract of ground, the strife involved nevertheless a trial of strength between great powers—powers no more sparing of blood or of treasure than if the war thus compressed were raging over vast territories.

One may say of Todleben, and the sailors, and the other brave men acting with them, that by maintaining the defence of Sebastopol, not only long after the 20th of September, but also long after the 5th of November, they twice over vanquished a moral obstacle, till then regarded as one that no man could well overcome.

The maxim twice over refuted by the early defenders of Sebastopol.

'If a battle undertaken in defence of a fortress is 'fought and lost, the place will fall.' This, before the exploit of the great volunteer, was a saying enounced with authority as though it were almost an axiom that Science had deigned to lay down; yet after the defeat of their army on the banks of the Alma, after even its actual evasion from the neighbourhood of Sebastopol, he along with the glorious sailors and the rest of the people there left to their fate proved to be of such quality that, far from consenting to let the place 'fall,' as experience declared

CHAP. VIII.

that it must, he and they—under the eyes of the enemy—began to create, and created that vast chain of fortress defence which, after more than eight months, we saw him still holding intact. And again, when—in sight of the Fortress it strove to relieve—an Army gathered in strength fought and lost with great slaughter the battle of Inkerman, sending into the Karabelnaya its thousands upon thousands of wounded soldiery, the resolute chief and brave garrison did not therefore remit, did not slacken, their defence of the place; so that—even twice over—by valour they refuted a saying till then held so sure that, receiving the assent of mankind, it had crystallised into a maxim.

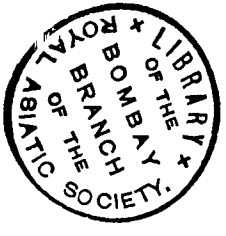
Yet, so far as I know, these brave men never vaunted in print or in speech the peculiar distinction they had won. Their triumph over the axiom twice superbly made good could only be shown by first telling of the defeats sustained in the field by their Czar's unfortunate armies, and that last condition apparently the loyal, generous men never cared to fulfil.

His personal glory dissevered from the subsequent reverses of Russia.

For other Russians the glory of having defended Sebastopol until the time we have reached was, after all, a forerunner of approaching defeat; but for Todleben personally, whilst still he toiled in the Fortress, no such reverse lay in wait. The time when he quitted it (wounded) was for him more than ever a time of victory, following close, as it

did, on his crowning achievement made good on the 18th of June. CHAP. VIII.

If the Czar had come down to Sebastopol, or rather to the Karabelnaya, at the close of the engagement on the morning of the 18th of June, he might there have apostrophised Todleben, as he did long years after at Plevna, when saying: 'Edward Ivanovitch, it is thou that hast accomplished it all!'



CHAPTER IX.

PÉLISSIER AFTER HIS DISCOMFITURE.

CHAP. IX.

The distressing position in which Pélissier stood.

At the close of the assaults he had hazarded on the 18th of June, Pélissier must needs have endured a more than common load of distress. He had chosen to follow a course so flighty and wayward that, in order to be ever condoned, his conduct seemed to require nothing less than the shield of a victory; yet after exacting from his army deplorable sacrifices, he had only encountered discomfiture. He had fiercely resisted his Emperor, had set at naught all the counsels (including those of Lord Raglan) which moved him to assail the Flagstaff Bastion then ripe for attack, had driven his foremost general from all command on the Heights for the crime of discerning with clearness what he himself failed to see; he had —why none can tell—broken loose from the engagement deliberately made with Lord Raglan on the morning of the 17th, and had ended by ruthlessly ordering that, next day, at dawn, three divisions of infantry should move forward across broad spaces of ground under the ruinous fire of batteries no longer shattered and silent, but restored to their

original strength, thus bringing down on his people the natural consequences of action so lawless and wild in the shape of repulses endured by all his attacking columns, and painful losses of men; whilst also, by the very discomfiture thus wildly incurred, he wrung from the English commander those unsparing endeavours to support him, which proved to be not only vain, but destructive to numbers of our men. And again, whatever the cause (whether temporary lessening of his accustomed brain-power, or simply want of good opportunity), it was not Pélissier's fate to be able to display in the action any signs of warlike ability.

Increased means of acting against him acquired by the Emperor.

Under all these conditions, the Emperor Louis Napoleon now found himself armed by events with better means of extinguishing his fierce, contumacious general than any he had wielded before, and he quickly began to exert the augmented power that thus had come into his hands; first harshly demanding with a dry, grave reserve, explanations, and full, plain accounts from the baffled, yet still proud commander, and afterwards even proceeding—though not with sustained perseverance—to remove him or try to remove him from the command of the army.

Pélissier's strength in adversity.

But Pélissier was a man very strong in adversity; and it even would seem that, although his full use of the powers which Nature had given him might be interrupted during several days by what are called 'worrying' troubles, his mind was so constituted as to be able to rise in its strength, so soon

CHAP. IX.

as he found himself challenged, and put on his mettle by grave misfortune. He not only came to the end of that brief, ill-omened interval of eight days during which, as we saw, his capacity appears to have failed him, but disclosed a great force of character, well supported by adroitness, audacity, and fertile resource, with besides, one must own, a return to his old, clever wiles, no longer now marred by a palpably scornful tone, and to even professions of suppleness which only some five days before, when not yet coerced by misfortune, he seemed to have proudly renounced.*

The resources he disclosed.

Opportune and successful endeavours of the English Government to check the Emperor's interposition.

And, at this time, the English Government had happily done a good deal towards sheltering the French and Pélissier from the dangers of their sovereign's wild dictation; for they had made an agreement with the Emperor, which Lord Panmure thus described:—'We have agreed with the Emperor 'that neither from Paris nor London shall any 'orders for operations be sent which are not mutual 'from our respective Governments;'† and they also took another wise step, that of sending General Torrens to Paris as their military commissioner, with instructions to keep them informed on the subject of the war, and to endeavour to smoothe the anxiety of the Emperor.‡

* See *ante*, p. 129.

† Lord Panmure to Lord Raglan, 18th June 1855. The words may be 'hard to construe;' but not to understand, for they must have meant, I suppose, that neither of the two Governments should send out orders for operations without first apprising the other Government of its intention.

‡ Ibid.

These well-designed measures produced a wholesome effect, and perhaps may be said to have had no small share in determining the course of events.

There is ground for conjecture that the merit of taking these steps belonged in the main to Lord Palmerston.

I have not learnt that Pélissier, under the discipline of misfortune, confessed his mistakes to others in either writing or speech; but, by action, so far as he could, he retracted no less than two of the several false steps he had taken. On the second day after the engagement, he brought back General Bosquet to that wide command on the Heights from which, on the 16th of June, we saw the Chief thrusting him out.*

Bosquet brought back to his former command on the Heights;

Pélissier went even further on in the same right direction. Having wreaked his anger on Bosquet but a few days before for differing from him in judgment, he now adopted Bosquet's opinion, and freely abandoned his own. He acknowledged at last to himself, and—by deeds, though not words—to all the rest of the world, that, whilst armed with their powerful batteries in a state of efficiency, the defences of the Karabelnaya were not to be assaulted again by troops advancing against them across lengthened distances of unsheltered ground; and accordingly, as Bosquet had counselled, he determined, at the cost of huge sacrifices, to sap up almost close to the opposite counterscarps, before

and his opinion adopted by the Chief.

His resolve;

* Niel, p. 320.

CHAP. IX.

he again would confront them with his infantry columns.

and brought to bear with effect.

Against a heap of adverse conditions which, if only the whole rugged truth had been known at St Cloud, must have seemed almost too hard to face, the undaunted Norman maintained himself in the confidence of Marshal Vaillant, War Minister, and still fended off the dictation attempted by Louis Napoleon.*

If I part from the interesting subject thus touched in only two sentences, it is because the pursuing it home would be passing the bounds of a narrative that professes to have a fixed limit.

Danger of the strife between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier.

Kept alive by the presence—the irritating presence—of Niel at the French Headquarters, the angry conflict maintained between Louis Napoleon and Pélissier was long a source of grave danger to the cause of the Allies; and I must not omit to acknowledge that the all-important duty of labouring to keep the strife within limits was discharged by a Minister of State with sound wisdom, good feeling, and skill.

The happily exerted qualities of Marshal Vaillant.

Marshal Vaillant, the Minister of War, had never, it seems, been regarded as amongst the most gentle of beings, nor as one born to soothe angry men; but the efforts he made to keep peace between the Em-

* The 'whole truth' would have confirmed that 'escapade' of the 17th of June which was the proximate, and quite sufficing cause of the discomfiture Pélissier had suffered.

peror and Pélissier, or rather to avert any violent, destructive explosion, were in all respects admirable, being animated by a loyal, patriotic desire to see well upheld the honour of the French arms, whilst also brought to bear with effect by a judgment and tact of the kind that perhaps might be hopefully looked for in an accomplished diplomatist, yet, this time, were found in a veteran soldier who had shared in the Moscow campaign.* CHAP. IX.

Marshal Vaillant, too, wielded a power that aided his endeavour to mediate. The 'feeling of the 'army' in France was then a partly occult, yet always dominant, force understood to be day by day ruling the fate of Louis Napoleon; and this force Marshal Vaillant was not only able to gauge, but also in some sort to sway. His words, therefore, acted with cogency on the mind of the Emperor, and in that direction accordingly he was able to press mediation with the weight that belongs to authority. The power he wielded over the Emperor.

To Pélissier, on the other hand, the Marshal addressed himself in calming, persuasive words; and, although it is true, the fierce general was entreated to be more deferential to the Emperor, and even in some things more yielding, he yet found himself loyally sustained by the Minister of War. Nay, unless I mistake, one can read through the diction employed something like an assurance that, despite the sheer letter of the law, Pélissier's tenure of the com- His tone towards Pélissier.

* Rousset; and, I may add that the high praise he bestows is fully sustained by the correspondence he has disclosed.

CHAP. IX.

mand was resting, after all, on a basis—not sure, but still—rather more stable than the whim of Louis Napoleon. Pélissier was told that he had the full confidence of the French impersonal 'On'; and the circumstances were apparently such that this 'On' really meant something more than the personal Emperor—meant something indeed not unlike what men call 'the State,' so that virtually, the sovereign could hardly withdraw his general from the field and from the enemy's presence without first obtaining some sanction of a higher kind than his own unsupported will.

It is true indeed that the Emperor once came to a decision dismissing his contumacious general, replacing him by General Niel, and ordering his Minister of War to communicate this change to Pélissier; but he only, after all, gave occasion for one of those pranks which honest men, acting for the good of their country, are accustomed to play upon despots. Marshal Vaillant did so far obey as to despatch a letter to Pélissier in the terms commanded by the Emperor; but, instead of sending it by telegraph, as he had been ordered to do, he committed it to the railway, thus gaining a good deal of time for the object on which he was bent. Then, supported by General Fleury, he persuaded the Emperor to revoke his decision, and did this so quickly as to be able to stop—at Marseilles—the further flight of the letter he had sent off by mail to Pélissier.*

On the whole one may say that the too often

* Rousset, ii. pp. 292, 293.

threatening rupture between the Emperor and his general at the seat of war was always fended off by the Minister in time to avert public mischief.

Success of Vaillant's efforts to prevent a rupture.

Whilst thus achieving an object of vital moment to France, and, through France, to the whole Alliance, Marshal Vaillant, moreover, found time and gracious, considerate words, as from comrade to comrade, with which, in so far as he could, to soothe the wounded feelings of Niel whilst suffering under the treatment remorselessly inflicted upon him by a furious Commander-in-chief.

His endeavours to solace and pacify Niel.

Long concealment of the truth by the French Government.

However foolishly wielded, a Government of the sort called despotic in form may long maintain an appearance of something like competency by the simple expedient of selecting facts meet for disclosure, and hiding all its worst nonsense from the eye of the world. It was only after the fall of the second French Empire, and even indeed of Thiers (who was averse from disclosures he thought detrimental to France), that the antagonistic relations which long had severed the Emperor from his general in the field became known to more than a few.

Pélissier; his distinct individuality;

Without casting even one glance beyond the set bounds of this narrative, we have been able to see that the resolute Norman, Pélissier, was a man of other mould than the one in which France, since the

CHAP. IX.

Great Revolution, has commonly shaped down her people.

No man even in our own rugged Isles ever held his own better against effacing tendencies than did this strong wilful Norman. His idiosyncrasy bristled with a sharpness incessantly proving that he was Pélissier, intensely Pélissier, Pélissier plainly abounding, with faults and gifts all his own.

His great worth as a statesman upholding the great Alliance;

What, however, we here have to mark is his wealth in those qualities—honour, wisdom, the half-divine faculty of entering into the motives of others—which make a loyal ally. As was natural, he on some questions differed from Lord Raglan; but except during one little interval of twelve or fourteen hours, when the torments inflicted upon him by the electric wires had impaired for the time his self-command and his judgment, he always, so far as I know, was doing his best to maintain the great Alliance. From the miserable state into which the Alliance had fallen before his accession, Pélissier raised it to one of real cordiality, and thus gave signal proof that he had some at least of the statesmanship which we have seen to be more or less needed for the guidance of commanders in almost all great modern wars.*

and resisting his Emperor's

And again, in a very different way, Pélissier found himself called upon to take the main part in a strife

* The Prussians in 1870 gave outward expression to this belief, when they brought with them into the thick of the war their king, their war minister (Von Roon), and their Bismarck. Have the French any Bismarck in readiness to send with headquarters in their next campaign?

CHAP. IX.

interference in the conduct of the war;

which, though falling to the lot of a commander in the midst of raging war, was still in its nature a strife between statesmen—between a sovereign claiming full right to direct a campaign from afar, and a general in the enemy's presence declining to be bound by any such godlike prerogative. It was in resistance to this pretension that Pélissier served France, served her army, and served the Alliance with high courage, with unfailing resources of mind, and, above all, immense strength of will.

From almost the time of its opening in the last century, the undying French Revolution had often enough been presenting some new and strange phase to the eyes of astonished Europe; and the last of these novelties was a man on a throne called 'the 'Emperor,' neither bred to arms, nor gifted, so far as men knew, with any warlike capacity, yet not only enabled by letter of law to command the commanders of his armies and fleets, but determined to use his power in the Eastern war, and possessed, besides, with a notion that, acting in person, he could victoriously direct a campaign; or, if prevented from joining his army in a far-distant region, could still give it sure means of conquest by sending out his commands in letters and messages from the West to the East of Europe.

Whatever alarm might be raised by the prospect of a Louis Napoleon appearing in the Crimea, there seemed to be fair ground for hope that his contact with realities, the influence exercised over him by his surrounding generals, and his natural awe of Lord

CHAP. IX.

Raglan, would so far awaken him as to check his pursuit of dreams.

And again, when abandoning his project of going out to the Crimea, he resorted to the plan of conducting the war by letters, the French army, as we know, was in some sort protected from its sovereign by intervening distance; since lapse of time passing between the writing and the arrival of his missives allowed room for such change of circumstances as might warrant or excuse disobedience to imperial mandates.

But when in the beginning of May electricity overcame distance, and thenceforth the unfortunate Canrobert on the Chersonese, began to get pelted with orders despatched the same day by his master, the peril became acute, and was followed at once—not indeed by an actual and disastrous defeat in the field, but—by that recall of the expedition to Kertch (when already near the end of the voyage) which brought what the French call 'a Ridicule' on France, and through her, on the Great Alliance.

The cup was then full; and General Canrobert, in confusion and misery, withdrawing from the command, his successor (Pélissier) entered on that task of steadfast resistance to a dangerous sovereign which we have seen him maintain with high courage, though not without being so harassed by the difficult strife as to lose for a while the full command of his judgment.

CHAP. IX.

As a commander in war.

With respect to Pélissier's power as a commander in war, one of course must beware of founding conclusions too general on the merits and faults he disclosed within the time spanned by a narrative which ends with the 28th of June; for he then, as all know, was only in mid-campaign with a critical future before him.

From the moment of his acquiring an extended authority—and this occurred some weeks before his becoming the Commander-in-chief—he brought an immense strength of will to bear on the course of the war.

Far away from the Crimea, in the autumn of 1854, he had never of course shared the counsels which nailed victorious armies to ground on the south of Sebastopol, and his sense of not having created the wondrous predicament which, coming out some months later, he found closely fastened upon them, may have made it the easier for him to study with coolness the problem demanding solution.

Of all solutions, the ugliest was the one asking France and England, after hugely increasing their forces, to incur the needed sacrifices of life, however appalling, and carry the South Side by storm. To this conclusion, however, Pélissier came. He considered that the 'siege,' if so called, of an uninvested fortress was substantially a protracted battle with Russia, and that, to march troops away from the fight with instructions to begin, and to execute another campaign in another region, would be to run

CHAP. IX.

after 'adventures,' and violate the recognised principles which govern the art of war.

He acted up to his faith with a terrible energy.

In the last days of April and the beginning of May, whilst still only commanding a corps, and again three weeks afterwards, when placed at the head of the army, he attacked, as we saw, the Town counter-approaches, and carried them after incurring heavy losses of men. On attaining the supreme command, he hastened to wipe out the ridicule which Louis Napoleon's telegrams had brought on the Allies, and at once, in due concert with Lord Raglan, renewed the expedition to Kertch. Then he and Lord Raglan, co-operating, attacked the counter-approaches of the Karabelnaya, and carried them all; but the losses of the English were great, and those of the French enormous. Soon—brought about by the plague of Louis Napoleon's messages—there followed that interruption of Pélissier's sounder judgment which led him into several errors, and directly brought down on the Allies—French and English alike—the misfortunes of the 18th of June, quickly followed, however, by proof that the Norman was strong in adversity.

Pélissier in war did not seem to be a man caring at all for stratagems, 'diversions,' or feints. Revering the ascertained principles of the warlike Art, and keeping his mind in a state which ensured its consent (if his judgment so willed it) to terrible sacrifices, he instinctively sought to prevail by direct means, and by sheer force of character. His reluc-

tance to bend aside from any design once formed had a tendency, of course, to prevent him from showing in action any nimbleness of mind; so that hardly on the spur of the moment would he seize newly found opportunities with the requisite promptitude, or alter at once any project, because of a sudden confronted by grave though unforeseen obstacles. CHAP. IX.

Men disposed to believe that the key to Pélissier's character was a firmness so rigid as to be verging on blind, mulish obstinacy, will find their theory met by the changes we saw him effect when under the schooling of adversity. But he even then clung to one of his errors—that of declining to assault the Flagstaff Bastion—with a sinister tenacity, not improbably sustained by the fact that Niel on that question held strongly an opposite opinion; and it still may perhaps remain true that the paramount quality of this fiery commander was, after all,—strength.

It was after the period covered by this account of the war that Pélissier won his renown—renown due to one who, if only reducing by siege-work one part of a fortress, had still done enough by great qualities to govern events, and bring a bloody war towards its close.

CHAPTER X.

LORD RAGLAN: HIS (OF LATE) SMOOTH RELATIONS WITH THE HOME GOVERNMENT.—THE AFFLICTION HE SUFFERED FROM THE DISAPPOINTMENT AND LOSSES SUSTAINED ON THE 18TH OF JUNE.—HIS VITAL STRENGTH APPEARING TO GIVE WAY.—HIS GRIEF AT THE LOSS OF GENERAL ESTCOURT.—A SLIGHT AILMENT AFFECTING THE CHIEF.

I.

CHAP. X.

No tortures at all like in kind to those that Pélissier suffered under the attempted dictation of his Emperor had of late been afflicting the English Commander-in-chief; and indeed one may say that, since the time when our War Minister abandoned the favourite object of obtaining Lord Raglan's assent to a change in the Headquarters Staff, our Home Government and their General in the field had been thinking and acting together in friendly, harmonious concert. (1)

The Home Government co-operating harmoniously with Lord Raglan.

Whatever his faults, Lord Panmure was not an ungrateful, was not a cold-hearted man; and having pointed out his offence of the 12th of February in the way that I did, I now gladly open some glimpses of the altered spirit and tone in which he afterwards

used to address the English Commander :—'I have CHAP. X.
'just received your telegraph of yesterday. It gives
'me the greatest satisfaction, and I am sure we owe
'it to you and Lyons that our expedition against
'Kertch has sailed. The scheme from Aloushta I
'hold to be visionary, but I shall have full confi-
'dence in your decision.'*

'I cannot help being alarmed lest the indecision
'of the French should cause some serious outbreak
'here. Hitherto, our press has behaved better in
'that respect than we were warranted in expecting,
'but there is a limit to forbearance, and we are
'approaching to it.'†

'He [Lord Ellenborough] will fall foul of you and
'all of us for certain, and we must try and meet
'him with an effective fire.'‡

'You shall find me strictly honest in taking all
'my own responsibility, and backing you and your
'army with all the *esprit* of a quondam *soldado*.
'. . . The resolve of the country is for war, or
'an honourable§ peace, not such as Lord Grey and
'Milner-Gibson advocate, and for which I regret
'to hear Sir James Graham and Mr Gladstone are
'to speak and vote.'‖

'I begin to incline to your opinion of the advance
'from Eupatoria. That from Aloushta I always
'held to be visionary.'¶

* Lord Panmure to Lord Raglan, 4th May 1855.
† Do., 7th May 1855. ‡ Do., 11th May 1855.
§ Underscored in the original.
‖ Lord Panmure to Lord Raglan, 21st May 1855.
¶ Do., 28th May 1855.

CHAP. X.

'You cannot imagine how pleased every one is 'with the bloodless success at Kertch, and in the 'Sea of Azof. . . . I am longing for your despatch 'about the Bath, so that I may Gazette the batch 'at once. . . . You shall hear no more from me 'as to your Staff. I have told my colleagues that 'I acquiesce in your reasons for not submitting to 'a change, and that I will press it no further. * 'The complete success in the Sea of Azof has given 'immense satisfaction, and I am glad to find that 'you do not intend occupation by French or British 'troops.' †

'The Emperor is too much bent on commanding 'his army from Paris, and has, I learn, ordered the 'recall of his troops from Anapa, but which, I trust, 'may not be listened to by his new Commander-in-'chief in the Crimea. We are generally of opinion 'here, that you and Omar Pasha are right as to the 'movement from Eupatoria. . . . Would any of 'your Major-Generals wish to go to Malta? If so, 'send me a telegraphic message, and I will try and 'manage it for them.' ‡

'You spoil us by giving us a victory almost daily, 'and your last exploit in taking so many outer works 'from the enemy is indeed most gratifying. I may, 'however, tell you privately that I suspect these ac-'tions of the French, attended as they are by serious

* Lord Panmure to Lord Raglan, 1st June 1855. The last sentence, though quoted in a former volume, is here intentionally repeated.

† Do., 4th June 1855. ‡ Do., 8th June 1855.

'loss, are far from giving the Emperor the satisfaction which they ought. . . . I have no doubt that you know far better than he or we do how to take Sebastopol in the shortest time, and with the least sacrifice of our precious men. . . . The subject of Cholera, on which you have no notion how I have been pestered by every description of bore. Between ourselves Palmerston is naturally nervous for the army, and listens too much to people. Then come those who think they are entire controllers of cholera, and every other disease under the sun. Then the homœopathists insist on their nostrums. In short, all are alarmed, and insist on sending advice.' *

'The rapid tide of success which has poured in upon us has put down grumbling. . . . The papers sent home by you, and dating from 7th May, have given us an insight into your own proceedings, which you have done yourself injustice by withholding so long. I appreciate your good-natured motives, but I think you ought to consider yourself a little more, and your associates a little less. Make your communications as secret as you choose, but hide not your own light under a bushel. . . . However, it is easy to wage war on paper, and I rely on your local resolves as being by far the best for action. . . . He [the Emperor] will press Pélissier to invest [Sebastopol], and may soon issue such stringent orders as shall place Pélissier in

* Do., 11th June 1855.

CHAP. X.

'the dilemma of having to choose between his 'master's orders and his own conviction. We shall 'do all we can to prevent this.*

'The result of this failure on the part of the 'French will have very bad effects on the Emperor, 'and lead him, I fear, to issue some fettering orders 'to Pélissier which may annoy him and embarrass 'the future plans of both of you. He is singularly 'low † at present; and, as he has a tendency to 'depression of spirits, you can make allowance for 'his style of communication when in that condi-'tion.'‡

More and more, indeed every day from almost the first, Lord Panmure felt the safety, the comfort, the happiness of moving in the light of that guidance that reached him with every mail, with every electric message from the English Headquarters—guidance not, it is true, often given in the actual, set form of advice, but rather conveyed or instilled by the general tenor of the despatches and letters. To be receiving communications of this priceless sort twice in every week, and besides—since the first days of May—to be hearing from Lord Raglan with the frequency and the speed ensured by an electric telegraph, was to have the surest clue there

* Lord Panmure to Lord Raglan, 18th June 1855. The date is a sermon against premature exultation. A defect in the working of the electric telegraph made it possible for Lord Panmure, when he wrote, to be congratulating instead of condoling.

† Underscored in the original. ‡ Do., 23d June 1855.

could be for dealing not only with the business of war, but also with those anxious questions which touched, or bordered on touching, the state of our relations with France.

The Home Government was more impatient of French shortcomings than their general in the field; but his wise and moderate despatches brought them always into accord with his own judgment. They seemed to hang on his words.

II.

Lord Raglan afflicted by the disappointment and losses sustained on the 18th of June.

Resulting in painful losses, and the blank disappointment of hopes which at one time, we know, had run high, the engagement of the 18th of June laid so heavy a weight of grief on the mind of Lord Raglan, that for once he failed to throw it aside, and even confessed to our Government the bitter affliction he felt.*

So accomplished a soldier as he, knew of course that assaults on strong places are always regarded as tentative, may have to be often repeated, and, when failing, are only 'repulses' far enough from importing 'defeat.' And again—at least under one aspect—he might comfort himself by reflecting on the admirable conduct of our troops.

Having witnessed the advance of Yea's column with his own eyes, Lord Raglan was free to indulge a just pride when observing the valiant devotion

* Private letter to Lord Panmure, 19th June 1855.

CHAP. X. of his officers and his men under what was a heavier trial than soldiers commonly meet; but every thought of this kind must have carried its sting; for in proportion to the gallantry and devotion of the troops and the sailors advancing against the Redan, was the anguish of seeing men of so high a quality mown down without power to reach the enemy, and—unhappily—mown down in vain.

Men entitled to speak of the effect produced on Lord Raglan, are wont to agree that under this latest trial, more visibly than ever before, his vital strength seemed to give way. They, some of them, however, believe that this trial, though heavy, was still only one out of many that long had been straining his powers of endurance, and straining them so much the more since he had always held in horror the notion of showing depression, or seeming to harbour care.

Lord Raglan's vital strength seeming to give way.

The strain that had been put upon him.

And, great in truth was the sum of what within less than a year Lord Raglan had borne and achieved.

What within less than a year he had endured and achieved.

The task of firmly, gently discomfiting St Arnaud's early intrigues; the Cholera and the other fell maladies so fastening on our troops in Bulgaria, that even of those out of hospital none remained, it was said, in full health;

The dubious orders from Paris, the positive orders from London to cross the Black Sea, and at once invade the Crimea;

Lord Raglan's reconnaissances of the enemy's coast, and his choice of the landing-ground;

The embarkation; the protest in writing of

French officers; divided counsels at sea; Lord Raglan on board the Caradoc obeying his Government, and (with Lyons) forcing on the invasion; the Armada off Eupatoria and the coast further south;

The landing; the Cholera with all its fell company of maladies still pursuing our army; the march, grand to see, but performed by troops still more or less suffering from bodily weakness, and not indeed regarded as strong enough to be charged with the weight of their knapsacks;

The Alma, with at first for the Chief troubled, anxious, and harassing messages from French commanders; but then the strange inspiration which gave him—and within a few minutes—his sudden control of the battle;

The wounded, the dead, the too plenteous sorrows that gather in even the hour of victory;

The Heights overlooking the Belbec, overlooking the North or Star Fort, and beyond, nothing less than Sebastopol;

The valley of the Belbec, alluring to the eyes of the weary, with its gardens, and vineyards, and groves, but unhappily there, and in numbers appallingly great, our troops falling stricken by Cholera;

The French army brought to a halt with the Star Fort before it, and, owing to St Arnaud's illness, left palsied for want of a chief;

Lord Raglan undertaking the, if faulty, yet romantic Flank March, involving a farewell for ever to

CHAP. X.

the Western coast of the Crimea and a movement, guided by compass, over uplands and forests and plains all still in the enemy's power, and thence on to the southern shores of the Peninsula, where also the enemy was holding full sway;

Lord Raglan by sheer chance impinging on the ill-guarded rear of what proved to be a whole Russian army led by Prince Mentschikoff in person, and then easily taking possession of the Mackenzie Heights—Heights afterwards coveted with the passionate desire of great nations, yet never again to be reached by the invading armies;

The descent to the Tchernaya, and the march next day for that desired Southern Coast which people only knew of by maps; the march over a plain that seemed bounded southwards by a vast wall of hills with a small pool of water beneath them, but no visible sea, no visible opening, and soon, a highly perched fort, making bold to assail Lord Raglan with discharges of shell; then, however, mighty ships' guns heard roaring from behind the hills, and making all know that not only the sea, but Lyons himself must be there;

Pernicious dreams bringing the invaders to 'besiege' the then defenceless Sebastopol, instead of picking it up as a prize fairly won on the Alma;

The beginning of siege-work;

The 17th of October, a day fraught at one time with glowing hopes, and destined to exhibit not only the spectacle of French and English fleets striving to aid the land-service attacks, but also

the ruin of Todleben's defences in the Karabelnaya broken up by our siege-guns; all turning, however, to naught, because a French magazine had before been blown up by a shell, and Canrobert required a postponement that was only to last two days, yet lasted several months; CHAP. X.

The battle of Balaclava, resplendent and tragic, including Scarlett's great charge with the Heavy Dragoons—an achievement still growing in fame—and the wild mistake that laid open a path of self-destruction and glory for the Light Brigade under Lord Cardigan;

The great battle of Inkerman famous for the ascendancy of the resolute few over hugely gross numbers—a battle mightily swayed, and (according to Mentschikoff) won by a measure which, though called 'impossible,' Lord Raglan proved able to execute;

The storm of the 14th of November and all its distressing results;

The 'winter troubles' that followed — troubles even comprising the ill conduct of two successive English Governments, and almost, of England herself, towards their general in the field;

General Canrobert disclosing a spirit that seemed to threaten disunion; General Airey's negotiation and its results in change of plan, and changed positions of troops;

The vigour of the enemy beginning his counter-approaches in the teeth of the French;

General Canrobert, after one baffled effort, submit-

CHAP. X. ting to these bold aggressions with unexhausted patience;

The French army held back by a clog not plainly discerned at the time; but, as now we know, fastened upon it by Louis Napoleon;

During several months, the Emperor and the Emperor's plan sitting heavy as heaviest nightmare on the Allies, and staying the advance of the siege;

The April bombardment, a mighty and well-executed preparative for ulterior action, not, after all, destined to follow;

Caused in part by the Emperor's pressure, and in part by a too anxious temperament, the faltering of Canrobert carried to strange extremes;

The 1st Kertch Expedition; and, in sight of astonished Europe, General Canrobert (under torture applied by Louis Napoleon) recalling his troops and his ships from off the Kertchine Peninsula;

Lord Raglan's indignation, his sternness, his venturesome grant of authority empowering Sir George, if so minded, to remain unaltered in purpose by the secession of the French, and go on with his English alone;

The now rising authority of Pélissier, and his fiercely warlike resistance (rather suffered than authorised by Canrobert) to the latest of the counter-approaches; *the resignation* of Canrobert, and Pélissier *in command of the French*;

Pélissier inaugurating his accession by hard, victorious *fights*; his entire accord with Lord Raglan;

A renewal of the Kertch expedition, resulting in

the conquest of all the lands worth occupation in the Kertchine Peninsula, in the conquest and opening of the Cimmerian Bosphorus, the establishment of full dominion in the previously closed Sea of Azof, and the expulsion of the Czar from his two last remaining strongholds on the Circassian coast;

The Emperor and Pélissier directly opposing each other, one commanding again and again with dogged persistence, the other meeting dictation with flat disobedience supported by a fierce strength of will;

The victorious attacks of the 7th of June;

The discontent of the Emperor still 'galvanically,' as the victim expressed it, tormenting his distant general, and then the ill-omened 'eight days' interrupting Pélissier's command of his warlike faculties, and fraught with the mischiefs that followed in simply natural order;

The fell return of Cholera—striking down the brave Admiral Boxer, assailing too General La Marmora* — and of dysentery and fever to the camps of the Allies;

And, always meanwhile going on from October to June, the siege, the siege, the siege—to remember the course of events brought back, as it were, by the sound—the once familiar sound—of mere loosely strung words such as these, is to have some idea, though a faint one, of the strain undergone by Lord Raglan within the last year.

Yet this only one epoch in a glorious life.

Yet, this campaign—brilliant and troubled—was, after all, only one epoch in a glorious life that,

* The brother of the Sardinian Commander.

CHAP. X.

during the eight closing years of our war against France and Napoleon, the then youthful Lord Fitzroy Somerset had passed at the side of Wellington—a life that 'bore on its colours' (as soldiers say of a regiment) the names of Roliça, Vimieira, Talavera, Busaco, Fuentes d'Onoro, Ciudad Rodrigo, Badajos, Salamanca, Vittoria, Pyrenees, Nivelle, Nive, Orthez, Toulouse, and Waterloo.

There is therefore in known, outward circumstances some part at the least of a basis on which one might rest a belief that, long before Lord Raglan encountered the disappointment and losses sustained by Pélissier and himself in assaulting the works of the Karabelnaya, care—the care of the war—had been sapping his vital strength. True, one does not at first very easily learn to believe that he who ever had seemed to be meeting the trials of war with a nobly buoyant spirit, he who only a few hours before had—almost blameably—chosen to plant himself—at first with one other, and then all alone—within the scope of that torrent of grape-shot and balls which Colonel Yea's column was meeting, should all the while have been one on whom care had fatally preyed; but the animating emotion of combat may have naturally masked for the time any symptoms of undermined health; and besides, it is hard to understand how the Chief, if indeed what he had seemed, and therefore strong as strong iron whilst confronting the enemy's fire could presently, at the thought of his losses in killed and wounded, become all at once a changed man—a man not indeed

The belief that care had been sapping his vital strength.

stricken with illness of any ascertained kind, nor even so heavily grieving as to be robbed of the power to maintain his grand air of cheerfulness; but losing nevertheless that inner, that subtle force which is the mainspring of health and of life.

On the whole, one, I think, may agree that care had long since been weighing on the mind of Lord Raglan and slowly undermining his strength.

The change in his outward appearance.

A change in his outward appearance was remarked at Headquarters;* but it is evident that a change in the appearance of the Chief might less strongly impress those observers who were constantly with him than one who only saw him at intervals. Soon after the day of the action, an officer of the Coldstreams came to Headquarters, and transacted business with the Chief. After quitting him, the Colonel found himself in company with some of the staff, and what he said to them will convey an idea of the impression his mind had received. He said:—'Do you not see the change in Lord Raglan? 'Good God! he is a dying man.'†

III.

Lord Raglan afflicted by the death of General Estcourt.

A fresh sorrow awaited the Chief. His Adjutant-General—Estcourt—a man greatly loved by Lord Raglan, by all his friends at Headquarters, and

* Letters from Headquarters, ii. p. 351.

† I quote from memory of what the Colonel told me; but—having been much impressed—I can hardly be wrong as to the main purport of what is given in the text.

CHAP. X.

indeed by all who knew him, had been seized by Cholera on Thursday the 21st of June, and on the following Saturday, until evening came, he lay in a critical state; though the able medical officer (Dr Fowle Smith) who had watched him with ceaseless care was entertaining strong hope that the remedies employed would bring on the reaction desired. Then, however, there broke from a summer sky, not observed to be angered before, the extraordinary thunderstorm of the 23d of June, carrying with it great torrents of rain;* and the swift atmospherical change implied by an outburst so violent extinguished at once every hope of bringing about a reaction in the state of the patient. Estcourt died the next morning.

The grief of Lord Raglan was excessive, and his undermined bodily strength prevented him from keeping his feelings under rigid control.

Some who knew what Lord Raglan suffered from the loss of his friend have even said that his grief was, in some sense, the cause of what followed; but perhaps they rather meant that the death of General Estcourt was the last of many unnumbered sorrows which, taken together, had sapped the vital strength of their Chief.

IV.

23d June. Lord Raglan unwell;

On the 23d—the day of the singular storm—Lord Raglan was unwell, but not prevented from trans-

* These by suddenly flooding ravines caused, it seems, several deaths.

CHAP. X.

acting laborious public business. Thus on the same day (the 23d) he addressed to the Secretary of State four despatches, comprising altogether a great amount of careful, elaborate statement, and besides wrote to Lord Panmure a long private letter dealing with several matters of business, and amongst others, with the subject of recruiting. On the same day, he visited his troops in the front, inspected the hospitals, looking specially to the wounded men, and performed a great deal of the labour that would have fallen to the lot of the Adjutant-General, if he had not been struck down by illness. Towards evening also, he went to the hut of General Estcourt, and saw him for the last time.

but not prevented from transacting laborious business;

and not confined to his house.

On Sunday the 24th, Lord Raglan twice wrote to Pélissier, arranged with him for a meeting on that same day, and in answering an expression of regret caused by hearing of Lord Raglan's indisposition, assured the French commander that the ailment was nothing serious.*

On the 25th, Lord Raglan was preparing to attend the funeral of General Estcourt when he found himself so much overcome—not by illness, but grief—that—not perhaps thinking it fit to show emotions so strong in the presence of troops—he abandoned his intention; but he afterwards visited the tomb. On the same day, he reported the death of General Estcourt to the Secretary of State, and not only advised the Government on the choice of a successor, but stated the grounds on which he recommended Colonel Pakenham for the vacant post.

* 'Rien de grave.'

CHAP. X.

After the arrival on the same day (the 25th) of a despatch from the Secretary of State of the 11th of June, Lord Raglan dealt keenly with a suggestion it contained, and wrote with his own hand a minute recording the judgment he had formed.

Thus the circumstance of Lord Raglan's having been somewhat unwell on the 23d and 24th of June did not either prevent him from attending to public business, or confine him to the house. His indisposition appeared to cease; and the statements before me do not seem to connect it at all with the illness that soon after followed.

CHAPTER XI.

CONTINUING SIEGE OPERATIONS.

CHAP. XI.

From the engagement of the 18th of June to the close of the following ten days (when this narrative comes to end), the Allies and the Russians alike went on with their works of—respectively—siege and defence, continuing much as before to repair, to improve, to augment their respective batteries; but soon, the toils of the French began to take such a shape as to disclose Pélissier's intention of sapping up more and more closely to the enemy's ramparts in the Karabelnaya, whilst also showing him minded to establish new batteries on ground commanding the Roadstead, and so prevent the enemy's war-vessels from renewing attacks of the kind we saw made on Mayran's Division.

The French sapping more closely up to the works in the Karabelnaya;

and preparing to establish new batteries on ground commanding the Roadstead.

Amongst the toils of the English was that of fastening on part of the ground we saw conquered by General Eyre on the 18th of June; and they did this with skill, maintaining their full control of the graveyard forming part of the conquest, yet not there keeping their troops under the fire of the place. The great efforts made by the enemy to recover the

The English strengthening their hold of ground captured by Eyre;

CHAP. XI.

ground he had lost in this part of the field seemed to show that Eyre's conquest was of greater moment to the defence than our people had supposed it to be. Towards the close of the ten days that followed the 18th of June, our people handed over to Pélissier the charge of the ground they had won.*

and afterwards handing it over to the charge of the French.

Continuance of the mining and counter-mining operations.

From the days when the mining and counter-mining began in the way we observed, and thenceforth down to the time which at last has been reached by this narrative, the subterranean warfare undertaken by the French and the Russians was maintained on both sides with great bravery, devotion, and skill; so that near me—pathetic, and teaching the vanity of human affairs—there stand or lie down (as they have stood or lain down through long years), grand folios, and—ampler in number—grand quartos, achieved with mighty labour and skill, and not only laying before me minute and authentic accounts of the battles that raged underground during several months, but elucidating the proffered lessons by numberless elaborate plans, and by illustrations—some of them coloured—so apt for their purpose as to have in them a kind of beauty budding out amidst things strictly technical.

But after that day in April when the French miners opened three chasms in front of the Flagstaff Bastion, and so provided the rudiments of a

* On the 27th of June.

new parallel, the subterranean fights did not have such a visible and physical bearing on the course of events that they well can send down a narrator to the shades below in search of facts thought indispensable for a merely lay account of the siege.

The Russians, however, imbued with full knowledge of what they achieved in these arduous struggles, and trusting, besides, to the abundant and continuous accounts they received from French deserters, have maintained with full confidence that the energies of the counter-miner produced a moral effect which altogether upset the counsels of the French, drove them hurriedly into false paths, and long shielded the fortress from danger in what was its most tender part.

The moral effect attributed by the Russians to their vigorous countermining.

Why the French, having sapped their way up to close quarters with the Flagstaff Bastion, did not, after all, choose to assault it—this was naturally a question soon asked, and—till after the 19th of May—very easily answered by alleging the irresolution of Canrobert; but when the fiery Pélissier, having acceded to the command, was in this respect found to be following Canrobert's example, and when, after a while, he not only declared his resolve to abstain from assaulting the work, but even conducted himself with strange violence against a general officer who ventured to submit a contrary opinion, the question that before had seemed easy became one much harder to answer. We saw the solution of this lasting mystery which Lord Raglan accepted—one importing that, if the French soldiery should break its

CHAP. XI.

way into the town, it might become uncontrollable—but another explanation has been always preferred by the Russians. What they have said is, that the energy, the skill, the success of their counter-miners, soon fastened on the minds of the French soldiery a full conviction that the Flagstaff Bastion had been carefully mined, and that the dread thus felt by the men forced its way upon the counsels of their chiefs.

CHAPTER XII.

LORD RAGLAN'S INSISTENCE ON CHANGES IN THE PLAN OF THE SIEGE.

WITH a keener sense than all others of the danger that lay in such paths, but seemingly urged by convictions which forced him to encounter the risk, Lord Raglan had already insisted on changing the plan of the siege.

Memorandum of the 21st of June. Sent to the French Headquarters.

It was under the form of a memorandum prepared for Lord Raglan by our Chief Engineer, and then 'forwarded to the French Headquarters' that, so early as the 21st of June, the changes in question were broached.*

First suggesting that the counsels submitted to the Generals-in-chief for the taking of Sebastopol should be examined anew, the paper proposed nothing less than that the French should revert to their old design of pushing determined assaults against the town front of Sebastopol, and moreover declared that the English must at length give up as impracticable their only too long pursued task of besieging the Great Redan. The writer used very plain words,

* Journal of the Royal Engineers, vol. ii. p. 330.

CHAP. XII.

going even so far as to say:—'As an attack upon 'the Redan must be considered as abandoned, it 'remains to be decided what shall be the active 'part which the British troops shall take in the 'forthcoming operations;'* but there is ground for believing that what Raglan desired, and meant to press home on Pélissier was only an engagement providing that if the English Chief should consent to go on as before with his measures against the Redan, the French on their part would assault the town front, and in particular the Flagstaff Bastion.

Even when thus reduced and confined in its scope, the English demand plainly clashed with Pélissier's latest designs, but was based nevertheless on good grounds.

Objection to plans involving attacks on the Great Redan;

Since the time, when Sebastopol—under the eyes of the besiegers—had become a strong place, no reasoning strictly warlike could well have supported a scheme which directed against the Redan any real attack;† and, although it is true that the English undertook nevertheless to assail it, this was always, as Niel fairly owned, on the plain understanding that French attacks of the Flagstaff Bastion should go on hand in hand with the task assumed by our people;‡ so that, when Pélissier chose to abandon all the French part of this twofold undertaking, there remained of course no ground at all for asking that English troops should fling their strength from

more especially if the Flagstaff Bas-

* Journal of the Royal Engineers, vol. ii. pp. 330, 331.

† On account of the nature of the ground as long before shown.

‡ Niel's acknowledgment of this will be found, *post*, p. 273.

a distance against the Great Redan, whilst not only covered on its left by the still defiant Malakoff, but also on its right by a work which, although ripe for seizure, was not to be even assailed.

tion were not to be also assailed.

It is true that when Pélissier announced his determination to abstain from assaulting the Flagstaff Bastion, and nevertheless had persisted in desiring that our people should assault the Redan, Lord Raglan had yielded, and accordingly on the 18th had attacked it in the way we observed; but, experience painfully failing to justify the concession, he of course was unwilling to renew it.

Assaults on the Redan from a distance out of harmony with the new French design.

And Pélissier's latest resolve afforded yet one other reason against condemning our troops to adventure against the Redan any second assault. The ground in its front—rock thinly coated with soil—was of such a kind as to offer the English no prospect of ever proving able to drive their approaches close up to the Work; and therefore any endeavour to go on toiling against it was out of all harmony with the new French design—a design which, despite the huge losses entailed by such a resolve, aimed at pushing the siege-works close up to the counter-scarps, before renewing attempts to carry the defences by storm.

Despatch of the 23d of June.

In one of the despatches addressed to the Secretary of State on Saturday the 23d—the one marked 'Secret'—Lord Raglan said:—'General Pélissier 'has not yet announced to me his ultimate intentions as regards the assault of the place, and I fear 'he may still contemplate confining the attack to

CHAP. XII.

'the faubourg, leaving the town itself unassailed, 'notwithstanding that he is fully aware that his 'own Engineer Officers, as well as those of the Brit- 'ish Army, are satisfied that the more certain and 'readier way of success would be by assailing the 'whole of the enemy's front.'

. . . . . .

'I shall take an early opportunity of conferring 'with General Pélissier, and will inform your Lord- 'ship on Tuesday what course he is disposed to take.'

'On Tuesday;' but then on the Tuesday, would this faithful servant of the State have strength to write what he thus promised?

Interview between Pélissier and Lord Raglan fixed for the 24th of June.

The 'early opportunity' indicated by the foregoing despatch was taken by Lord Raglan on the morrow—that is, Sunday the 24th of June. Then, at his instance the two Chiefs agreed to meet. Pélissier had heard that Lord Raglan was indisposed, and the note he addressed to his colleague was couched in most friendly, in even affectionate terms. He engaged to hold himself at Lord Raglan's disposal on that same day, Sunday the 24th, and asked Lord Raglan to fix any hour after 11 o'clock that he might choose for the interview.

Abrupt cessation of the light shed by Lord Raglan's despatches.

The light hitherto thrown on my path by Lord Raglan's despatches and letters here, all at once, ceases to shine;* and I offer no account of the conference in which the two Chiefs were to meet.

* See *post*, p. 278.

The Chief French Engineer General Niel, to whom the Memorandum of the 21st had been addressed, imagined that the paper invited him to join with his English colleague in framing a set of counsels for the enlightenment of the Commanders such as that of the 10th of June, and he plainly did not think himself bound to communicate the mission to his Chief, or to answer it in a way that Pélissier could be expected to approve.

Niel's Note of the 26th of June.

Niel's answer was dated the 26th of June, and—speaking so far with authority, because he had been privy to the arrangements of the 2d of February—he frankly made this acknowledgment:—'It has 'always,' he said, 'been understood that the attack 'of the Redan was to proceed with that of the Flag-'staff Battery, so that the two sides of the valley 'can be held, and that if the French were to aban-'don their attack, the English, in accordance with 'the previous conventions, would on their side be 'free to abandon their attack of the Redan.' On the other hand, he insisted that, to propose the withdrawal of the English from their attacks would be almost the same as proposing to raise the siege.

The combined result of his two opinions imported that, if the siege were to be continued at all, the English must go through with their measures against the Redan, and the French on their part must resume their former design of visiting the Flagstaff Bastion and its neighbours with determined attacks.

Thus, as far as it touched the special question in

CHAP. XII.

hand, Niel's counsel was all in accord with the object pursued by Lord Raglan.*

Niel did not, however, speak hopefully of any measures applied to what, in his judgment, was an enterprise wrongly conceived; and very soon wound his way back to professions of that rooted faith which still warned him against ever assaulting Sebastopol without first investing the Place. 'Does,' continued General Niel, 'does a new attack offer 'sufficient chances of success to be tried? This is 'a question to be resolved by the Generals-in-chief, 'and which we have not to examine here."†

Degree of importance attaching to this Note.

The French Commander, if learning the purport of this Memorandum, would have been more prone to put the writer under arrest than to follow his counsels; for the tendency of the paper, if heeded, was to shatter Pélissier's plan of confining all attacks to the faubourg, and greatly to favour the attainment of Lord Raglan's object. It is true, as we have seen, that General Niel had personally less than no weight with the head of the army; but he was still, after all, the commanding Engineer of the French, and, besides, closely linked with the Emperor in his efforts to subjugate Pélissier—efforts now to be made once again at a time when the baffled Chief, no longer blessed with the power to answer a complaint with a victory, was under the curse of ill-fortune.

* As shown, *ante*, p. 269 *et seq.*

† Journal of the Royal Engineers, ii. p. 331.

On the whole, one can learn from papers of the 26th of June—the best indication before me—that the negotiation commenced on the 21st had—at least in one quarter—made way.

The negotiation making way;

And, moreover, we know with full certainty that, till after the 28th of June, the negotiation, whether prospering or not, was still remaining on foot.

and on foot till after the 28th.

All imbued with a knowledge of Lord Raglan's fixed opinion on the peril of 'discussions' with the French, will agree, I suppose, in believing that he would never have pressed, nor have suffered any other to press these sweeping demands on Pélissier, unless he had seen reason to think that they either were certain, or else, in a high degree, likely to produce a result; and one even indeed must surmise that, when taking the step, he had either received some encouragement in that direction from his friendly, impetuous French colleague, or else had determined to be peremptory in requiring that, if ever his troops were to hazard another march under the batteries of the Great Redan, the French on their part must be ready to storm the Flagstaff Bastion.

Presumption that in this matter Lord Raglan must have seen his way.

To act, and act cogently in that last direction, had, after the recent engagement, become a measure more clearly within the power of Lord Raglan than at any earlier time; for our Government and our

Circumstances now enabling Lord Raglan to act on Pélis-

CHAP. XII.

people, when disciplined by the painful experience of the 18th of June, might be safely expected to support him in requiring that any new assault undertaken by our devoted infantry should take place under fair conditions; and on the other hand, Pélissier, weakened by his recent discomfiture, and the reckless outbreaks of will by which he had brought it about, whilst also ill-regarded by his Emperor and by many of the generals under him, stood more than ever in want of the shield he had so often used—the shield he always extended against unwelcome advisers, when able to meet them, by saying: 'Lord 'Raglan and I are agreed.'

sier cogently.

Circumstances tending to show that Lord Raglan in this matter had before him a fair prospect of success.

Having learnt on good grounds to infer that Lord Raglan could not have brought himself to press forward his object, unless having before him a prospect so good as to warrant the venture; and considering that the halo of personal ascendancy, which distinguished him in the eyes of Pélissier from all other then living men, could scarce fail to give him great weight when undertaking persuasion; whilst remembering too, on the other hand, that, if forced to speak or act cogently, he at all events had the command of a powerful lever, with, besides, all the knowledge and qualities enabling him to use it with skill, one may rightly incline to believe that his continued persistence in the course already begun, would have compassed the object he sought.

On the other hand, we know well that none other than Lord Raglan himself could or would, for a

moment, go on with the measure on which he had ventured ; * and accordingly, all hope that our troops would be either relieved altogether from their wrongly allotted task of attacking the Great Redan, or else find themselves enabled to attack it under fitting conditions, depended on the life of one man.

CHAP. XII.

But not (in his place) any other.

* Proved by experience, see *post*, p. 288 *et seq.*

CHAPTER XIII.

THE DEATH OF LORD RAGLAN.

CHAP. XIII.

PURSUING his labours as usual, Lord Raglan, on the 26th of June, addressed a despatch to the Secretary of State on several matters of military business. He spoke with great satisfaction of the excellence of the Hospital arrangements. Announcing the death of an officer who had succumbed to Cholera, and of another killed in the trenches, he furnished the Government with a statement of their respective merits and services. He spoke with natural sorrow of the increase of maladies affecting the troops, but treated the matter objectively, saying nothing of his own health. He framed this—the last—despatch with all his accustomed grace, and perfect clearness of style. (1)

The last despatch of Lord Raglan.

This 26th of June was the 'Tuesday' which Lord Raglan had announced as the day when he meant to acquaint his Government with the result of the promised conference between himself and Pélissier; but before fulfilling the task, he felt unwell.

His illness.

His ailment was probably faintness; for Dr

Prendergast advised him to lie down. He did not feel equal to the effort of appearing at his dinner-table; but the doctor's report of his state was favourable.

The next day, the 27th, Lord Raglan's state not having improved, it was thought right to apprise the Home Government by telegraph that he was ill; but in the evening, a more favourable account was despatched.

Lord Raglan passed a tranquil night, and at the consultation which took place next morning, the 28th, between Dr Prendergast and two of our army surgeons, it was thought—at least by these last—that Lord Raglan was 'much better'; and a telegram to that effect was drawn up; but afterwards Dr Prendergast caused it to be modified, and the message sent home reported that Lord Raglan had passed a tranquil night, and was no worse. (2)

At about half-past three in the afternoon, Lord Raglan's servant came to Dr Prendergast announcing that his master was not so well as he had seemed to be a few moments before, and the doctor returning soon found that an alteration for the worse had taken place, though still he apprehended no immediate danger.

At half-past four o'clock, a sudden change came over Lord Raglan, and he was perceived to be sinking.

His faintly uttered words to General Airey.

General Airey's affection for his Chief was deep, and at this dreadful moment strained anxiously into the future that lies beyond the grave.

CHAP. XIII.

Approaching Lord Raglan closely, he said:—'Sir, 'you are ill; would you not like to see some one?' Faintly and gently Lord Raglan answered, 'No.' General Airey still persisted, and said—said indeed, more than once—'Sir, you are very ill; would you 'not like to see some one?' but the faint, gentle 'No' was still all the answer he drew. Then altering a little the scope of his question, General Airey said to him, 'Sir, you are very ill; whom 'would you like to see?' Lord Raglan gently answering, said, 'Frank,' meaning Lady Raglan's nephew, Lord Burghersh.

His last hours and death.

The foreshadow of death was then falling on the mind of the Chief, and he did not, I believe, speak again.

Lord Burghersh presently came, but the consciousness of Lord Raglan had ceased.

Thenceforth, during some three hours, the commander lay breathing and tranquil on his narrow camp-bed; but, when the descending sun had at last sunk low in the heavens, a great life seemed to be waning with the waning of the day.

The Chaplain of the Forces was present;* and he has recorded what followed: 'At this moment,' he said and wrote, 'I have before me one whom I 'had learnt to love, lying in his last moments upon 'a narrow camp-bed. The room was small and 'scantily furnished. Colonel Somerset and Lord 'Burghersh stood on one side of the bed, Dr Prendergast at its head, Lady George Paget was seated

* Archdeacon Wright.

'at the foot, Colonel Steele and General Airey on 'the other side. I stood close to the dying hero. 'As I uttered the words, "Peace be to this house '"and all that dwell in it," all fell on their 'knees, and I proceeded with the solemn order 'for the visitation of the sick. At the close of the 'heart-searching service, I placed my hand upon 'the forehead and commended the departing soul 'to the keeping of God, and scarcely had the 'last word passed my lips when the great man 'went to his rest. Colonel Steele then asked me 'to kneel down and pray that those present might 'be strengthened. I did so, and heavy grief sat 'upon the hearts of all who joined in that solemn 'appeal to Heaven.'(3)

Many know, and some envy, the blissful look of content that lights on the face of a soldier when slain by a gunshot wound; but the toils of a commander are toils of the mind, of the heart.

Expression of his countenance after death.

The expression that fastened on Lord Raglan's countenance in the moment of death seemed to tell of—not pain but—Care.

Generals and Admirals next day in the chamber of death.

On the morning that followed, the Commanders-in-chief of the four Allied armies, and the Admirals of the fleets, and besides, General Canrobert (the late French commander) came up to the English Head-quarters, and entered the chamber of death. Of

CHAP. XIII.

these—all of course men of action, and nearly all used to encountering the painful scenes of war—there were none who without strong emotion could look on the face—now rigid in death—of him who but yesterday was their beloved, honoured colleague. They yielded to grief. Both the late, and the then actual, commander of the French army had been closely associated with Lord Raglan in the business of the war; and, as was natural, they all the more felt the anguish of seeing him lifeless.

Pélissier's agony of grief.

General Canrobert, having felt towards the English commander a strong affection, now mourned him with all his heart. But the general who grieved the most passionately, was he who had seemed to be emphatically the hard man of iron. Pélissier 'stood 'by the bedside for upwards of an hour, crying like 'a child.' *

Official announcements and condolences.

On the same day, and issued by Lieutenant-General Simpson, then the senior officer present, the 'Morning General Orders' announced in simple terms to our army 'the death of its beloved com-'mander Field-Marshal Lord Raglan.'

From the structure of our administrative system as then constituted, it resulted that there were two high officers of State who, to meet an occasion like this, could legitimately give voice to the feelings of the Queen. 'I conveyed,' wrote the Secretary of State for our War Department, 'I conveyed your

* Letters from Headquarters, ii. p. 363.

'sad intelligence to the Queen. Her Majesty received it with profound grief. Inform the army that Her Majesty has learnt with the deepest sorrow this great misfortune which has befallen the army in the loss of its late distinguished Commander-in-chief. The country has been deprived of an accomplished soldier, a true and devoted patriot, and an honourable and disinterested subject.' *

The other high officer of State charged to speak in the name of the Queen was her Commander-in-chief at the Horse Guards; and if men observe, as they will, that the Paper issued under his orders is not only written with power, and the kind of eloquence fitted for a warlike theme, but also with evident knowledge of the sway that Lord Raglan in person had brought to bear on the Alma campaign, they will remind themselves that Lord Hardinge was himself a great soldier of the Wellington days, and a conqueror in more recent times.

GENERAL ORDER.

'HORSE GUARDS, *4th July* 1855.

'The General Commanding-in-chief has received 'Her Majesty's most gracious commands to express 'to the Army the deep regret with which Her 'Majesty has to deplore the loss of a most devoted 'and able officer by the death of Field-Marshal 'Lord Raglan, the Commander of the forces in the 'Crimea.

* Promulgated to the Army, 2d July 1855.

CHAP. XIII.

'Her Majesty has been pleased to command that 'her sentiments shall be communicated to the Army, 'in order that the military career of so illustrious an 'officer shall be recorded, not only as an honourable 'testimony of Her Majesty's sense of his eminent 'services, and the respect due to his memory, but as 'an example worthy of imitation by all ranks of her 'Army.

'Selected by the Duke of Wellington to be his 'Military Secretary and Aide-de-camp, he took part, 'nearly 50 years ago, in all the military achieve- 'ments of our greatest commander. From him, 'Lord Raglan adopted, as the guiding principle of 'his life, a constant, undeviating obedience to the 'call of duty.

'During a long peace, his life was most usefully 'employed in those unwearied attentions to the 'interests and welfare of the Army, shown by the 'kindness, the impartiality and justice, with which 'he transacted all his duties.

'When war broke out last year, he was selected 'by his Sovereign to take the command of the Army 'proceeding to the East; he never hesitated—he 'obeyed the summons, although he had reached an 'age when an officer may be disposed to retire from 'active duties in the field.

'At the head of the troops during the arduous 'operations of the campaign, he resumed the early 'habits of his life; by his calmness in the hottest 'moments of battle, and by his quick perception in 'taking advantage of the ground, or the movements

'of the enemy, he won the confidence of his army, 'and performed great and brilliant services.

'In the midst of a winter's campaign—in a severe 'climate—and surrounded by difficulties—he never 'despaired.

'The heroic Army, whose fortitude amidst the 'severest privations is recognised by Her Majesty as 'beyond all praise, have shown their attachment to 'their Commander by the deep regrets with which 'they now mourn his loss.

'Her Majesty is confident that the talents and 'virtues which distinguished Lord Raglan through- 'out the whole of his valuable life, will for ever 'endear his memory to the British Army.

'By command of the Right Honourable General 'Viscount HARDINGE, Commanding-in-chief.

'G. A. WETHERALL,
'*Adjutant-General.*'

Private letter of condolence from the Queen to Lady Raglan.

So early as the day next but one to that of the Field Marshal's death, the Queen was graciously pleased to address to Lady Raglan this letter:*—

THE QUEEN TO LADY RAGLAN.

'BUCKINGHAM PALACE, *June* 30, 1855.

'DEAR LADY RAGLAN,—Words cannot convey all 'I feel at the irreparable loss you have sustained,

* If I print this letter without having first asked for the writer's gracious permission, this is only because her Majesty at a former period allowed it to be published by Sir Theodore Martin. I may say that in

CHAP. XIII.

'and I and the country have in your noble, gallant, 'and excellent husband, whose loyalty and devotion 'to his sovereign and country were unbounded. We 'both feel most deeply for you and your daughters, to 'whom this blow must be most severe and sudden! 'He was so strong, and his health had borne the bad 'climate, great fatigues, and anxieties so well ever 'since he left England, that though we were much 'alarmed at hearing of his illness, we were full of 'hope of his speedy recovery.

'We must bow to the will of God, but to be taken 'away thus on the eve of the successful result of 'so much labour, so much suffering, and so much 'anxiety, is cruel indeed! We feel much, too, for the 'brave army whom he was so proud of, who will be 'sadly cast down at losing their gallant commander, 'who had led them so often to victory and glory! 'If sympathy can be any consolation to you, you 'have it, for we all have alike to mourn, and no one 'more than I, who have lost a faithful and devoted 'servant, in whom I had the greatest confidence. 'We both most anxiously hope that your health and 'that of your daughters may not materially suffer 'from the dreadful shock.—Believe me always, my 'dear Lady Raglan, yours very sincerely,

(Signed) 'VICTORIA R.'

If her Majesty by the terms of her letter may

this case I have not liked to render underscored words by a resort to italics. The words underscored by her Majesty are in the 1st line, 'all,' in the 6th line, 'deeply,' and in the 21st line, 'we all.'

seem to blend with her own, some other opinion, and one by her deeply valued, it will be borne in mind that the Royal Consort was versed in military business, had applied great care and thought to the subject of the then pending war, and had adopted the wise, wholesome practice of putting himself in personal communication with officers newly come from the East.

The void caused by Lord Raglan's death.

But apart from sheer grief was the void. Relations between the Home Government and Headquarters going on without any Lord Raglan? The army without Lord Raglan? The Alliance without Lord Raglan? A letter, a note, or a message to the oftentimes raging Pélissier without a Lord Raglan to frame it? It is believed that, whilst Lord Raglan lived, and daily appeared in his saddle, no such painful casts of thought had been made—not made at least in grave earnest by any of our Generals, still less by the army at large, which had toiled and suffered and fought with unswerving devotion to its Chief, and had never so far looked beyond—not even for argument's sake—as to dwell on what might follow 'if ever the king were to die.'

This acutely felt by the officer who succeeded to the command.

None perhaps felt the void more acutely than did the brave, honest, unselfish officer on whom the command had devolved. The words he addressed to our Government are touching: After speaking of the troops and 'their beloved commander,' he added: 'His loss to us here is inexpressible. The sympathy

CHAP. XIII.

'of our Allies is universal and sincere. His [Lord 'Raglan's] name and memory are all that remain to 'animate us in the difficulties and dangers to which 'we may be called.'

Immediate evil to our army resulting from Lord Raglan's death.

Even then, whilst he spoke from the heart, he also could speak from experience—experience showing that England, by the death of her General, had been all at once robbed of her weight in the Anglo-French Councils of war.

Abrupt abandonment of the negotiation he had opened with Pélissier.

We learnt what hope there was that, in compliance with a demand addressed to the French on the 21st of June, our troops would be either relieved altogether from their wrongly allotted task of attacking the Great Redan, or else find themselves enabled to attack it under fitting conditions, but also saw reasons for judging that the prospect of this happy change depended on the life of Lord Raglan.

The event of the 28th of June was pursued by its apprehended consequence with astonishing promptitude, for—even within a few hours of the English commander's death—our people gave up their demand, and submitted once more to that distribution of siege-work which was fated, as it had been before, to become a cause—plainly foreseen—of fresh disappointments and losses. (4)

Unable to divine other reasons for the extraordinary step of not only abandoning the resolve announced to General Niel on the 21st of June, but

allowing themselves to declare this abandonment on the very morrow of Lord Raglan's death, I am led to believe that our military authorities must have acted in haste, whilst still suffering under the shock occasioned by the loss of their chief, though also perhaps from a sense that, without him, they could not well even try to pursue any further the question—admittedly anxious and difficult—which he had ventured to raise.

Loss of weight in Anglo-French council, resulting from the death of Lord Raglan.

For our people this break wrought by death in the wholesome, accustomed relations between their chief and Pélissier was a grave and lasting misfortune. The prospect awaiting our army depended, of course, on its having a rightly allotted share of the great warlike business in hand; and the exigencies of the Alliance made it plain that every such needed apportionment of combatant tasks must be concerted with the French chief. Yet he who alone among men had proved able in council to deal with the fiery Pélissier, lay now in the chamber of death; and none coming after him knew how in treaty—in critical, perilous treaty—with the commander of 100,000 men to secure for our scantier numbers in the struggles to come a good, well-assigned fighting berth. In this way alone out of many, the death of the English commander brought down all at once on our army, and therefore of course on our country, a grave and abrupt loss of power.

Our country indeed every day was growing in strength—in material strength of the kind that is needed for war; but material strength, after all, is

CHAP. XIII.

only one part of greatness. Amongst those who remember the period not one, I imagine, will say that from the heartrending sunset of the 28th of June to the close of our war against Russia, the England of that time seemed equal to the England of those prior days when she still had the honoured commander of the Alma campaign to represent her in council, to represent her in arms.

One more year of life and of health vouchsafed to Lord Raglan must have seemingly altered, and altered in a happy direction, the subsequent course of events.

The sorrow of our troops.

The sorrow of our troops was proportioned to the unswerving attachment with which they had regarded the chief. It was seemingly on him, him alone, that they formed their ideal of what the true leader should be. When the new commander had braced himself for the labours before him, he frankly chose for his guidance the example of Lord Raglan. 'It 'will be the duty,' he announced, 'of the Lieutenant-'General to follow in the steps of his great Pre-'decessor.'

The example of Lord Raglan chosen as a guide.

Grief of Admiral Lyons and our seamen.

In even our army there could hardly be found deeper grief than that which wrung the heart of our Admiral—Admiral Lyons—nor sorrow more true than that felt by the officers and seamen of our fleet, who had devotedly taken their part in effect-

ing the descent on the coast near Old Fort, and in thenceforth pursuing the war both by sea and on shore with that joyous superlative zeal which few can even conceive unless they have seen naval officers with their men not only at work, but at work in the enemy's presence.

Feeling of the Sardinian army;

The Sardinian army, we know, had been under Lord Raglan's direction; and the feeling of these highly valued Allies was expressed by General La Marmora in his Order of the day. Whilst announcing to his troops that there had yesterday died 'the 'illustrious Commander of the English army,' he spoke of the Field-Marshal's long career, the services he had rendered to his country, his 'heroic courage,' and his 'exemplary constancy' in times of trouble, and declared the loss of such a commander to be a 'great calamity.'

and of Omar Pasha.

Omar Pasha showed his feeling towards the memory of Lord Raglan in the way we shall afterwards see.

Pélissier's celebrated General Order.

We saw the phrenzy of grief which mastered the iron Pélissier when he stood in the chamber of death; and afterwards, but on the same day, he issued this General Order—a paper long admired in the camps for its fervour and power:—

'Army of the East.—No. 15, General Order.

'Death has suddenly taken away while in full ex-

CHAP. XIII.

'ercise of his command the Field-Marshal Lord Rag-
'lan, and has plunged the British in mourning.

'We all share the sorrow of our brave Allies.
'Those who knew Lord Raglan, who know the his-
'tory of his life—so noble, so pure, so replete with
'service rendered to his country—those who wit-
'nessed his fearless demeanour at Alma and Inker-
'man, who recall the calm and stoic greatness of
'his character throughout this rude and memorable
'campaign, every generous heart indeed, will de-
'plore the loss of such a man. The sentiments here
'expressed by the General-in-chief are those of the
'whole army. He has himself been cruelly struck
'by this unlooked-for blow.

'The public grief only increases his sorrow at
'being for ever separated from a companion-in-arms
'whose genial spirit he loved, whose virtues he ad-
'mired, and from whom he has always received the
'most loyal and hearty co-operation.

(Signed) 'A. PÉLISSIER,
'*Commander-in-chief.*

'HEADQUARTERS, before SEVASTOPOL,
'*29th June* 1855.'

Feeling of the French army generally towards Lord Raglan.

Apart from the principle of 'representation' which entitled Pélissier not only to speak for himself, but to speak, as he did, for the whole of his 100,000 men, it seems to be true—and the truth is one of high value in several questions of moment—that the bulk of the French army in the Crimea—and perhaps more especially its rank and file—had been

long ago drawn towards Lord Raglan—at first with strong interest, and then—with a warm admiration, close followed by genuine trustfulness.

Amongst the French troops in the Crimea there had chanced to be none whose career carried back into the thick of the last mighty war; whilst in each of its eight latter years Lord Raglan, though not greatly older than General Pélissier, had had the good fortune to be not only engaged, but engaged on the Headquarter Staff, and at the side of Wellington.*

Accordingly it was in the English commander alone that the French army saw a Chief linking them with the days of the Great Napoleon. They had never been dull to the eloquence of the blue empty sleeve, that told of the wearer's sword-arm lost at Wellington's side, lost even near 'La Haie Sainte,' and not far from the moment of moments when 'the bravest of the brave,' Ney himself, was victoriously storming the farm. Yet he who thus recalled to French troops the days of the great war was in no sense what people mean when they speak of a 'veteran.'

Not for him—ever busied with present duties—was there time or desire to dwell on the past. With his always sustained animation, his beaming attention to what others said, his prompt, terse reply, his easy grace in the saddle, his ready hand-

* The difference of age between the French and English commanders was six years, but in point of activity, Lord Raglan was immensely the younger.

CHAP. XIII.

gallop, he had not only seemed like a man who (for purposes of warlike command) was still in the prime of life, but to have the air of an officer whose habitual activity of body and mind had been never at all interrupted by the languor of peace.

What soldiers now and then see of the bearing of Commanders observed to be conversing on horseback is not always without its significance; and when any such opportunities invited our Allies to form judgments of the quality of the English Commander, the keen-witted Frenchman could see that he held a great personal ascendancy, since other chiefs hung on his words, and seemed to be willingly governed, seeming also to be calmed and cheered by answers that fell from his lips.

But again, there is a spell in personal daring—where it chances to govern events—which carries the hearts of men. When Lord Raglan—not preceded, not followed by troops, but having seaman's blood in his veins *—cantered down to the Alma, and forded it, and rode on through the enemy's skirmishers, losing only two of his Staff, and at last crowned that knoll in the line of the Russian position where fortune gave him her welcome, he was under the eyes of French soldiers.† It could not but

* His mother was the daughter of Admiral Boscawen.

† Not *the same* bodies of French soldiers; for those who saw him ride down to the river did not see him in the cover beyond, passing through the enemy's skirmishers; and again, those who saw him in

be that the story of what these men saw would swiftly spread through their camp.

To Pélissier's troops, the late English Commander, of course, had been by nation a foreigner, had been also 'the ancient enemy,'—had, moreover, been 'Grand Seigneur,' and therefore, they imagined, born foe of the Tricolor Flag; but—taught by the warlike Zouaves, who then used to govern opinion in the camp of the French—their rank and file—after debate—got to hold that, in spite of all this, Lord Raglan was the true man of men they would choose to lead them in battle.

And now, when in mid-campaign, the hand of death struck down a Chief on whom they had thus set their hearts, the sentiment moving them harmonised with the judgment they had long ago formed of his prowess in strife at close quarters.

The mortal remains of Lord Raglan conveyed with military honours to the Bay of Kazatch.

The family of Lord Raglan, desiring that this warlike scion of their House should rest at the last with his ancestry, the Authorities determined to convey his remains for embarkation to the port of Kazatch; and, the Generals allied with our own all demanding for themselves and their troops that the removal should be attended with full military honours in which they might take their part, it resulted that he who in life had carried to even a fault, his hatred of all forms and ceremonies

the cover or fording the stream, could not afterwards see him on the top of the knoll.

CHAP. XIII.

attracting men's eyes towards himself, was in death to become the mute object—defenceless now against splendours!—of a homage bestowed by whole armies assembled for the purpose in strength, and assembled in the enemy's presence.

Many pageants have borrowed adornment from the presence of troops, without, of course, ever acquiring by any such shallow means the least semblance of true warlike dignity. Here, however, the war and the pageant seemed linked hand in hand; for the myriads assembling to honour the memory of the English commander were not only troops under arms, but troops in mid-campaign, troops acting beneath the rapt gaze they drew from the enemy's watch-tower. The whole movement from east to west, though solemn and mournful, was all the while nevertheless a movement slowly effected across the front of Sebastopol, and of course under such conditions, the pageant might lead to a battle.

In seizing the occasion that offered for an outburst of honourable sentiment, in giving to those martial honours which Circumstance seemed to enjoin their largely extended proportions, in bringing the design to completeness, and — more than all put together—in animating the outward form of the ceremony with the—partly, it may be, poetic, yet not less genuine—fervour of their many tens of thousands of troops, the French army took a main part.

The Allied commanders provided that before 4

o'clock on the afternoon of the 3d of July, the whole road from the English Headquarters to the port of Kazatch—a distance of about seven miles—should be lined on each side by double ranks of infantry; that at intervals on both flanks there should be posted not only other troops, but bands of regiments as well as field-batteries, and that the duty of escorting the movement along its whole course should devolve upon twelve squadrons of cavalry, with three troops of horse artillery. From the English to the French Headquarters the infantry lining the road was to be furnished by a contingent of officers and men told off for this honour from every one of our regiments, and beyond, along the remaining distance of six miles, by the Imperial Guard of the French and the troops of their First Corps. In the courtyard of what had been Lord Raglan's house there stood the Guard of Honour, one furnished by the Grenadier Guards, with the drums and regimental colours. In the vineyards adjoining were placed the bands of three regiments.

Making no other large exception than that of troops on duty in the trenches, or required for the safety of their camps, one may say that, to honour the memory of the English commander, the armed hosts of the Allies were assembled in all their martial splendour and strength.*

* Sayer's Collection, p. 229.—The narrator, though official, still does not refrain from saying that the appearance of the troops was 'splendid.'

CHAP. XIII.

Met first by the roll of the drums from the Guard of Honour, then emerging from the court of the house under the outburst of sound that opened the solemn Dead March, and thenceforth passing always between the serried infantry lines under the booming of minute guns, the darkly palled bier, covered over with the Flag of the Union, having on it the plumed hat and sword of him who but lately had worn them, with also the garland of immortelles affectionately placed near the sword by the hand of Pélissier, was slowly moved towards the west on a nine-pounder gun; and beside the four wheels of the gun-carriage there rode the four commanders of the four Allied armies. Next—led by two mounted orderlies—there followed—saddled and riderless—Lord Raglan's favourite charger—the one, the brown bay, he had ridden in the battle of the Alma and throughout the dim Inkerman day.

After officers related to the Field-Marshal and the members of his personal Staff, the column of march included unnumbered Generals of the four Allied armies, with their respective Staffs, included the Staff of Headquarters, included the officers chosen to represent every branch of the English land service, with also every regiment, and besides, the Naval Brigade and the Royal Marines. Further details are covered or merged by only saying once more that the bulk of the Allied armies was assembled, and assembled in strength.

Whilst the mournful solemnity lasted, the French

and the English engaged with siege duties in front refrained from inviting by fire the fire of Sebastopol; and, whether owing to chance, or to a signal and graceful act of courtesy on the part of General Osten-Sacken, the garrison also kept silence.

Received at the wharf of Kazatch by Admiral Bruat, by Rear-Admiral Stewart, and by a large concourse of officers from both the fleets, then placed in a launch—the launch of the English Flagship, which numbers of man-of-war boats lay ready to take in tow—then moved off from the shore under a salute of artillery, and borne thence with all naval honours, the bier at length reached the side of the vessel awaiting it, and was taken on board the Caradoc. (5)

On board the Caradoc! The sound, the bare sound of her name, carried with it a heartrending contrast between the past and the present. In those eager days, only ten months before, when Lord Raglan, in concert with Lyons, was forcing on the Invasion, it used to be from the Caradoc—men saw her then constantly signalling—that the Chief exerted his power; and now the same vessel, still ruled by the same devoted commander, was receiving Lord Raglan once more, but receiving him only in death.

Soon, the Carodoc moved, and was gliding towards the mouth of the bay, when a flutter appeared at her

CHAP. XIII. mast-head which showed her to be speaking once more. As though in imagined communion with the honoured freight lying on board, beneath the Flag of the Union, she flew out the signal—'Farewell!'

APPENDIX.

NOTES TO CHAPTER I.

NOTE 1.—*Allies of the Sultan.*—This was done by bringing about the dismissal of Riza, the Minister of War, who was believed to have been always intriguing against Omar Pasha.—Lord Raglan to Secretary of State, Secret, 5th June 1855.

NOTE 2.—*Feared to displease.*—There is nothing in history more certain than this. At the fatal Cabinet of July 1870, the Emperor had actually congratulated his Ministers on the diplomatic victory that he had achieved by bringing about the withdrawal of the Hohenzollern candidate, and all seemed to promise both peace and contentment, when Lebœuf interposed, and pronounced that the avoidance of war (after all the excitement stirred up) would cause an ill feeling in the army.

NOTES TO CHAPTER II.

NOTE 1.—*Once more recaptured the Work.*—That this was the ending of the fifth fight is asserted with precision by Niel (p. 254); and Todleben, with the statement before him, does

not really and effectually deny it, nor substitute for it any narrative of a Russian victory. He indeed writes in one place as though he understood that the retreat of the French a little before dawn was a movement caused by their being 'worn out' (*épuisé*), but he elsewhere says in terms that the fifth fight resulted in a capture of the counter-approach; and, as he also shows that the fourth fight had left it in possession of the Russians, it follows that the fifth capture was a capture by the French.—Todleben, pp. 242, 243. On the whole, I can say that, with the accounts of Niel and Todleben before me, I entertain no doubt that the fifth fight resulted in a victory for the French.

NOTE 2.—*By first reducing the Malakoff.*—I base my account of the foregoing occurrences detailed in this chapter upon the despatch of General Pélissier, and the official narratives of Niel, p. 250 *et seq.*, and Todleben, ii. p. 226 *et seq.*; and having said thus much, I consider myself entitled to disclaim responsibility for the accuracy of the three generals whose statements I follow. I don't overload the diction by saying in words at every sentence: 'according to Pélissier,' or 'according to Niel,' or 'according to Todleben,' but wish it to be understood that I do so in effect by means of this general indication.

NOTES TO CHAPTER III.

NOTE 1.—*Investing the place.*—This anterior purpose, as first declared by Pélissier, was only what one calls the 'repression' of the south side of Sebastopol. But he afterwards, as we have seen, insisted that its thorough conquest must be effected before resorting to field operations. After forming that last resolve, to which he always *in action* adhered, he once or twice *wrote* (inconsistently) as though the 'repression' might suffice.

NOTE 2.—*With scorn, and with victory.*—No one ought to forget that, in principle, resistance to lawful authority is an evil of formidable magnitude; but in that grave dilemma with which Pélissier dealt, the alternative was one that would hazard a hundred thousand French troops in what, as the wisest men judged, would have been a fantastic campaign, involving perhaps cruel sacrifices, not only of men, but also of warlike honour. See *post*, Appendix, Note 9, to chap. iv.

NOTES TO CHAPTER IV.

NOTE 1.—*Destroyed them.*—Todleben agrees, vol. ii. p. 280, that out of the Kertch flotilla three vessels were destroyed—viz., the Berdiansk (as mentioned in the text), the Mogoutchy, and the Jouets, but it might be inferred from his language (though he does not say so in terms) that the Argonaut and the Goëts escaped.

NOTE 2.—*For the protection of their lives and property.*—The word 'Tartars' must have been used by the deputation in a specific sense, indicating some known band or bands of men supposed to be bent on pillage; for the 'Tartars' in the villages generally were at this very time giving shelter and kindly help to the frightened refugees from Kertch.—Ibid. General Todleben nowhere calls the men 'Tartars,' but always 'marauders.'

NOTE 3.—*The piteous screaming of women.*—I have rightly spoken of the irruption of mounted Cossacks into a room as a fact of not unfrequent occurrence; but, as regards one particular instance of it, my informant, Sir Edmund Strelecki (phonetically, Streleski), long the favourite of the London world, was one of those present. He was a lad at the time. After the famous retreat from Moscow, he was at an evening

party going on upon the first floor when the Cossacks trotted up-stairs and rode into the drawing-room.

It was not without reason that the Cossacks used to keep their saddles when entering houses and rooms. They used to have plunder stowed on the backs of their horses, and feared that, if separated from them, they would be robbed of the spoil by their comrades.

In more recent times, the mounted Cossacks in the service of the State have been as much under control as the regular forces, and, although not yet famous for prowess in combat, they are made useful in numberless ways.

NOTE 4.—*Meant to defend the place.*—The summons demanded the surrender of—not the town, but—the Crown property. Whether General Krasnoff misread the summons, or only affected to have done so, I do not know.

NOTE 5.—*That that last vessel perished.*—Though accepted (through some inadvertence) by General Todleben, the story of a serious fight, and of bayonet-charges, effected in defence of the stores, is altogether a fable.

NOTE 6.—*Harm to the town.*—The story accepted by Todleben, of allied attacks made on some vessels that had sought refuge in the Gulf, and of the assailants having been beaten off by Kostrakoff with his Cossacks, is fabulous; not one man of the Allies, on the 5th of June, was either killed or wounded.

NOTE 7.—*To refrain altogether from sending it.*—Rousset, who had access to the papers at the French War Office, imagined that the Emperor's telegram had miscarried or been made to miscarry; but that, as we see from the text, was not the case. From the blank at the French War Office, coupled with the actual result, my surmise, put out under cover of a 'perhaps,' may derive some support.

NOTE 8.—*His sovereign's imperious mandate.*—Rousset, who had access to the papers in the French War Office, states that

the Emperor's telegram was inexplicably delayed in transmission from the 3d to the 8th of June. This, of course, was an error, because we know that Pélissier imparted the telegram to Lord Raglan on the 6th; but the statement, though erroneous in its conclusion, seems to show that down to the 8th no answer had come from Pélissier to the telegram of the 3d of June.

NOTE 9.—*Proved able to set him aside.*—The resistance of a general to the authority of the State is, of course, a grave matter, and cannot be justified on light grounds; but, as Pélissier retained his command, one, I think, may observe what passed, without being forced into the question of casuistry which presents itself when a general's disobedience breaks up his relations with the State.

NOTE 10.—*Protest against every such measure.*—'Je suis 'heureux qu'elle ait réussi; mais néanmoins je ne puis 'm'empêcher de considérer comme *fatal* tout ce qui tend 'aujourd'hui à disséminer vos forces.'—Emperor to Pélissier, 30th May 1855. The under-scoring of the word 'fatal' was an act of the Emperor.

NOTES TO CHAPTER V.

NOTE 1.—*Havoc and ruin.*—'Mais le comble du dommage 'auquel cet ouvrage était exposé lui venaient des batteries 'Anglaises qui savaient compenser la mesure un peu [illegible] 'leur feu par la précision remarquable de leur tir.'—Todleben, ii. p. 310.

NOTE 2.—*Accepted the Prince's bold story.*—The French say distinctly that after capturing the Work they spiked its guns (Rousset, ii. p. 235); and Todleben also admits this, as also that the embrasures were destroyed, saying that he himself

ordered the guns to be *un*spiked and the embrasures to be repaired, ii. p. 330. I suppose Prince Ouroussoff would hardly maintain that the destruction of the embrasures and the spiking of the guns could have been coolly effected at the time of his 'bayonet' charge.

NOTE 3.—*Respecting Skariatine, see Note in the Appendix.*—Skariatine (who had commanded the Selinghinsk Redoubt in February or March, and well knew the ground) was a Lieutenant in the Russian navy, and one of the most gifted of that superb body of men—the men of the Black Sea Fleet—who had gloriously defended Sebastopol in the early, the desperate time.

NOTE 4.—*Will attempt a recapture.*—When long afterwards he was borne off the field, his bearers trod on one of the 'infernal machines,' and the violent explosion that followed is supposed to have produced by concussion a permanent injury of the heart, bringing death very many years afterwards to the distinguished General Armstrong, then holding high office at the Horse Guards.

NOTE 5.—*To retake the counter-approaches.*—The Captain led five companies, equal, if the battalions had been at their average strength (which, however, was far from being the case), to about 935 men.

NOTE 6.—*Had been definitively won.*—On the morning of the 7th, Captain Dawson, R.E., was killed; and having been summoned to replace him immediately, Wolseley did not have the benefit of the arrangement which had wisely provided that those who were to attack the Quarries in the evening should be exempt from toil during the day, so as to enter fresh upon their work. Whilst speaking of Captain Wolseley, I may mention that for his services in the fights of 'the Quarries' he won twofold praise, from Colonel Tylden, commanding the Engineers, and from Colonel Shirley, commanding the combatants.

NOTES TO CHAPTER VI.

NOTE 1.—*Nothing that the Emperor ordered.*—Pélissier's method of resistance to his Emperor at the time indicated resembled the sustained contumacy of Lord Palmerston, when Foreign Secretary in the Governments of Lord Melbourne and Lord John Russell, as exhibited with great clearness in the Greville Memoirs.

NOTE 2.—*'By orders of the English Government.'*—If the Emperor meant (as he apparently did) that the Kertch Expedition was dictated to the commanders by the English Government, he was mistaken. The measure, as I understand, originated with Lyons, and had been warmly supported by Lord Raglan, before the London Government took any part in it.

NOTE 3.—*Might be well carried into effect.*—There were many apparent advantages in the plan of an attack from Eupatoria directed against the rear of the enemy's field-army:—

1. Eupatoria was a seaport town, and operations thence proceeding could and would be supported in many ways by the power of the Allied Navies.

2. The town was already held by Omar Pasha with an Ottoman Army which for months had successfully defied the enemy, and might advance in due order from its base, confronting of course the fair perils of war, but without plunging into 'adventures.'

3. The attack might be made without drawing [redacted] great body of infantry from before Sebastopol, Omar Pasha indeed declaring that he required no aid at all from the infantry arm.

4. What he mainly required was the assistance of cavalry, and that was a species of force which—because not in use for siege purposes—could be easily spared by the Allies confronting Sebastopol.

5. Eupatoria had already been linked to the French and English camps on the Chersonese by the submarine telegraph, and by means of that powerful aid the movements of the field army advancing from the seaport town could be made to take place in close concert with the operations of the besiegers.

6. With the aid of the cavalry that could be easily spared from before Sebastopol, any defeat sustained by Omar Pasha might be made to result in an orderly retreat upon his fortified base; and there was no apparent reason why even misfortune, if visiting this kind of attack, would be likely to result in disaster.

NOTE 4.—*Of all the projected assaults.*—The 'omission' was this:—

Bosquet had retained in his own hands a plan of the Malakoff which had been found in the pocket of a slain Russian officer instead of forwarding it at once to headquarters. Pélissier did not content himself with a single remonstrance but followed it up by another expressed in strong angry language.

NOTE 5.—*Confined to only a few score of men.*—For want of *separated* returns I am prevented from giving the exact numbers, but, although not precise, the statement in the text is well based.

NOTES TO CHAPTER VII.

NOTE 1.—*Scarce exceeding, he thought,* 150.—After seeing the statement of losses in text and footnote (p. 191), and making large allowance for the number of those who may have moved off with wounded men, one may understand how it could have become possible that this rough estimate was not far from the truth.

NOTE 2.—*A grape-shot striking his forehead.*—Observers at first all imagined that a grape-shot wound in the head which hurled down the general, and deluged him with blood, must almost of course be fatal; but it proved to be otherwise, and the veteran before long was again at the side of Lord Raglan.

NOTE 3.—*By a wisely designed cannonade.*—This is substantially a negative assertion; but is still, I think, warranted, because M. Rousset, who had access to all papers of the French War Department, and used them with great care and skill, has remained unacquainted with what in the text are called 'the governing facts.'

NOTE 4.—*Only some* 2000 *strong.*—General Todleben stated that the English led by General Eyre had been defeated; but what mainly seems to have brought him to a conclusion so far from the truth was an erroneous impression with respect to the *object* of the attack. He wrongly imagined that the object of General Eyre was to seize the Péressip batteries, and built on that idea a conclusion that the non-seizure of those batteries implied a defeat of the assailing force.

NOTE 5.—*These engagements of the* 18*th of June.*—The English Commander-in-Chief addressed to Lady Raglan a letter containing these words:—

'Before SEBASTOPOL, *June* 19, 1855.

'Yesterday we attacked a Russian work called a Redan, 'and the French attacked the works right and left of a tower 'called Malakoff; the object of both attacks being to possess 'ourselves of the Faubourg of Sebastopol. We had apparently 'subdued by the superiority of our fire the Russian artillery, 'and though the attacks could not be considered otherwise 'than formidable enterprises, yet the confidence of success 'was general, and I confess that I participated in that 'confidence.

'It had been determined that the attack should be made at 'five or half-past five in the morning, and that the interval

'between that time and daylight should be employed to bring 'as much artillery to fire upon the enemy's works as possible. 'Late, however, in the evening of the 17th I heard that General 'Pélissier had resolved to commence at three. I did not like 'the change, but it was too late to protest against it, and the 'necessary orders were given accordingly. The Redan was to 'be attacked by three divisions, and I gave Brown the com- 'mand of them, each division furnishing men for one column 'of attack. I left home shortly after two o'clock in the 'morning, and met Brown in the trenches at three. The 'French were to commence the attack by signal, and I was 'to order our advance when I should think proper. Unfor- 'tunately the French officer commanding the right column 'mistook a rocket that was fired for the signal, and began 'before his time. The general officer at the head of the next 'column, knowing the mistake that had occurred, did not push 'his troops forward, and the French left column, of course, 'remained stationary until General Pélissier gave the signal 'agreed upon. When they were all engaged they seemed to 'make so little way, and to meet with such resistance, that I 'thought it right to order our advance. They did so at once; 'but such a heavy fire, particularly of grape, was brought 'upon them, that few reached the Redan, and nobody got 'into it. In short, the operation failed, as well as that of the 'French; and we have to deplore the loss of many valuable 'officers and men. Other attacks went on at the same time, 'and loss was there incurred. We have to deplore the death 'of Major-General Sir John Campbell, an excellent officer, who 'has never given me one moment's trouble, and was always 'satisfied whatever I required him to do; of Colonel Yea, of 'the 7th Foot, who had devoted himself to his duty during 'the whole of the winter, and of many others, among whom is 'Lord Normanton's son, Captain Agar, of the 44th.

'You may imagine my disappointment at this failure—it 'is a great misfortune.'

NOTE 6.—*Were thrown back into the Ditches.*—'The number 'of troops they [the enemy] brought to the assault was 35,000,

'without counting their distant reserves. The French advanced on the right flank and centre, the English on the left flank. The besiegers, provided with ladders, fascines, and Sapper's tools, advanced rapidly to the attack. *Despite the heavy fire of grape and musketry we poured into them, their columns advanced, reached our Ditches, and commenced scaling the parapets.*

'But the line of the intrepid defenders of Sebastopol never swerved. *They received the daring assailants with the points of their bayonets, and threw them back into the Ditches.* The enemy's columns then threw themselves on the Gervais Battery, entered it, &c.'*

The beginning of the new sentence above quoted shows that the narrator, in making his earlier statements, was not referring at all to the affair near the Gervais Battery; and this being so, I can state without any qualification at all that the above passages distinguished by italics are not only fiction, but fiction unmingled with any grain of truth.

This fabrication is rendered beautifully consistent with itself by deliberately pointing out General Khrouleff as the officer 'to whom the chief honour of the day is due as commanding the whole of the line attacked,' by withholding all mention of the Engineers (including even Todleben!), and by blending the day's losses with those sustained the day before under the fourth bombardment.

Prince Michael Gortchakoff had the misfortune to become —at least formally—responsible for this fabulous statement; but I have always believed him to be a man of honour, and have taken refuge in the faith that he must have been imposed upon. His headquarters, it must be remembered, were not at Sebastopol, but at some miles' distance from the town on the 'Old City Heights'; and this circumstance naturally may have made it the easier to dupe him.

It will be observed that I see grounds for tracing the origin of the fabrication to the panic which seized upon the garrison when our siege-guns reopened, see chap. viii. p. 215.

* Ann. Reg. 1855, p. 242.

NOTE TO CHAPTER VIII.

NOTE 1.—*By their sacred costumes.*—This is or was distinctly the case in Russia. There the sacredness of a priest used to begin when he put on canonicals, and to end when he took them off.

NOTE TO CHAPTER X.

NOTE 1.—*Harmonious concert.*—A difference of opinion on one Home question—that of merging the Ordnance Office in the War Department—did not at all affect the spirit in which the Minister and the General co-operated in the business of the war.

NOTES TO CHAPTER XIII.

NOTE 1.—*Grace and perfect clearness of style.*—Of this any one acquainted with Lord Raglan's style may judge, for the despatch was published (Sayer's Collection, p. 219). I may here mention that the contents of this chapter are based upon the above and other despatches and official papers, upon the 'Letters from Headquarters,' vol. ii., upon communications from Lord Airey, from Archdeacon Wright, and from Dr Fowle Smith.

NOTE 2.—*Was no worse.*—It is stated that that day, the 28th, there issued a General Order in the name of the Commander-in-chief (Letters from Headquarters, ii. p. 364),

but I observe signs of mistake in the date; and at all events the act was not one that would require more than simple assent on the part of Lord Raglan.

NOTE 3.—*Appeal to Heaven.*—In a sense, others were present—that is, the Chief of the Staff and other members of the Headquarters Staff, and the whole of the personal Staff, and besides, Lord George Paget; but the bedroom being small, these stood, it seems, outside its open door.*

NOTE 4.—*Fresh disappointments and losses.*—See Memorandum by our Chief Engineer, dated 'Headquarters before 'Sebastopol, 29th June 1855,' Journal Royal Engineers, ii. pp. 332, 333.

His words were: 'It is not desired to abandon the attack 'of the Redan if it can be done with a chance of success and 'without sacrificing the lives of men uselessly. It is there- 'fore desirable to know whether the French will give any 'aid by directing a heavy and steady fire upon the batteries 'in the Jardin (of Bastion) du Mât and Garden batteries, 'whilst the English batteries in the Left Attack will assist in 'that important object, and at the same time bring a heavy 'fire upon the works on the right of the Redan and Barrack 'Battery; or in what way the French and English attacks 'can be combined for the success of the one grand object 'each have in view.'

Far from involving a return to determined attacks (*i.e.*, attacks culminating, if necessary, in assaults) on the town front, this request only pointed to assistance from the French artillery—a matter of course—and one is therefore well justified in treating our Engineer's consent to [redacted] Redan as substantially absolute.

It is true that our Chief Engineer some time afterwards tried, though in vain, to resume some part of the position he had taken up on the 21st, but that circumstance makes it so much the clearer that the surrender of the 29th was caused

* Letters from Headquarters, ii. p. 362, Private MSS.

by feelings resulting from the death of Lord Raglan in the evening of the previous day.

NOTE 5.—*On board the Caradoc.*—Still commanded by Derriman. Lyons was not present. The latter part of the mournful ceremony would for him have been hard to bear; for he was devotedly attached to Lord Raglan; but also he at this time had recently lost his son.

LIBRARY OF THE BOMBAY BRANCH OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

ADDENDUM TO THE INKERMAN VOLUME.

TO BE INSERTED AT THE CLOSE OF SEC. 2, CHAP. VIII.

If Russians butchered the wounded, there were also Russians—wounded themselves—who, although lying prostrate, persistently fired on our troops;* and at one time in a part of the field, there were so many of them busied in this way that their fire seemed at first to proceed from an organised body of infantry.

Captain (now General) Charles Morris, R.A., commanded a battery of field artillery belonging to the Light Division, which was sent to take part in the fight on Mount Inkerman;† and having in person moved forward between 10 and 11 o'clock with two of his guns to a position so chosen as to be almost over the crest of the hill, he was plying with 'case' a body of Russians advancing against the Second Division camp, when he found that his men were suffering under fire from another quarter—a fire that seemed to come from a distance of about 50 yards.

Thereupon, with only his trumpeter, Morris went to the ground whence the new fire had seemed to come, and soon discovered five wounded Russians who were coolly, yet busily, firing from under cover of the brushwood, upon the men of his battery.

Morris had his revolver in hand and advanced upon the offenders. They thereupon threw away their muskets, and prayed for mercy. Morris granted their prayer, and left them unhurt on the ground where they lay, but of course he took care to have their firearms broken.

* Supposing that they had not surrendered, these last Russians were not committing an outrage.

† Despatch of Col. Lake, R.A., 7th November 1855—a despatch awarding high praise to Captain, now General C. Morris.

INDEX TO THE WHOLE WORK.

This Index has been prepared to accord with the fifth edition of vols. i. and ii., third of vols. iii. and iv., second of vol. v., vol. vi. (1880), *and vols. vii. and viii.* (1887).

Aali Pasha, the Reis Effendi, at Vienna Conference, vii. 313.
Aarif Effendi at Vienna Conference, vii. 313.
Abattis, the, viii. 173, 185 *et seq.*
Abdelal, Major, iv. 265.
Abdul Medjid, i. 9.
Abercrombie, ii. 493 note.
Abercromby, Sir Ralph, ii. 127.
Aberdeen, Lord, i. 15 note, 36—his conference with Nicholas I. in 1844, 67—Prime Minister in 1853, 82—loving peace, yet responsible for a policy leading towards war, 177, 192, 330 *et seq.*—his evidence before the Sebastopol Committee, 339 note—relations of his Government with Louis Napoleon, *ib.*—his interview with Count Walewski, 371 *et seq.*—his Cabinet, after Sinope, first resolves to do nothing, then yields to the pressure of Louis Napoleon, 389-393 and note—continuance of his imprudent language, 405, 418, 422, 431, 447, 450, 453 note, 461, 473, 482, 485, 493, 497 *et seq.*—the instructions sent by his Cabinet to Lord Raglan, ii. 94—resignation of his Government, vi. 317—his only negative qualification for the Premiership in war-time, 318.
Abinal, Major, viii. 159, 199.
Acton, Lieut., at Inkerman, v. 159, 367, 368, 423—the combat undertaken by, 424, 426, 435 note.
Adams's brigade at the Alma, ii. 395—placed in line on the famous knoll by Lord Raglan, and forming the "scarlet arch," 496-503.
Adams, Colonel, viii. 203.
Adams, General, at the Alma, ii. 309—at Inkerman, v. 126, 161, 166, 182, 187, 188, 190, 192—forced back, 193, 194—he is mortally wounded, *ib.*
Adlerberg, General, viii. 20.
Admiralty, the, vi. 14, 45-47 *et seq.*
Adrianople, the treaty of, i. 16, 114.
Adrianople, i. 401, ii. 45.
Adye, Colonel, R.A., at the Alma, ii. 399 note, 414 note—at Inkerman, v. 333 note, 429.
Agreement, the, regarding the prosecution of the war, drawn up at Buckingham Palace, vii. 246.
Ainslie, Colonel, 93d Highlanders, at the battle of Balaclava, iv. 72.
Airey, General, Quartermaster-General, ii. 178, 395—his quick perception of the great need, *i.e.*, means of transport, 195—his seizure of a convoy, *ib.* 218, 221, 307—at the battle of the Alma, 358, 518, iii. 1, 86 *et seq.*, 90 note, 2[illegible] note—his letter to the Commander-in-Chief at the Horse Guards on the result of the Conferences taking place between the flank march and the siege, 270—at the battle of Balaclava, iv. 45, 68—he conveys message to Cathcart, 178—he writes the 'fourth order' addressed to Lord Lucan, 183, 185, 191, 192, 204, 219 note, v. 21, 186, 241, 242, vi. 270—his early and copious requisitions for things needed, 303 note—made by error the subject of an outcry in England, but praised by Lord Raglan, 311—the proposal to give him the command of a division, 313—Lord Raglan objects to the removal of his right-hand man, 314,

341—his address before the Chelsea Board of Inquiry, 343 note, 369, 370—conference of three, vii. 23—his mission to Canrobert, 28—his affection for Lord Raglan, viii. 279—at the bedside of his dying chief, 280.
Albanian Christians, attack on Colonel Kelly by, when lying wounded, vii. 96.
Albemarle, Lord, quoted, vi. 403 note.
'Albuera, Men, remember!' Captain Stanley's words to the 57th at Inkerman, and meaning of the allusion, v. 310.
Alexander II., Emperor, the, manifestoes of, vii. 312.
Alexander, Fort, iii. 119 *et seq.*, 395—its defences, 396 *et seq.*—the French attack on, and its result, 403 *et seq.*
Alfieri, Countess, vii. 214 note.
Alger, Sergeant, v. 253.
Ali Pasha, ii. 60.
Allied armies, the commanders of the French and English armies, ii. 1—Marshal St Arnaud, *ib.*—Lord Raglan, 13—Marshal St Arnaud and Lord Raglan brought together at the Tuileries, 22—and later, on the shores of the Bosphorus, 32—perverse attempts made by St Arnaud, and repressed by Lord Raglan, with the aid of Lord Stratford, *ib. et seq.*
Allied forces, the, which sooner or later were present on Mount Inkerman the day of the battle, v. 489.
Allied infantry, approximate computation of, on Mount Inkerman, which was still in an organised state at the opening of the third period, v. 502.
Allied troops before Sebastopool, numbers [illegible] vii. 351.
Allied strength of the, ii. 199—were to operate as a "movable column," *ib.*—the nature of their advance to Sebastopol, *ib. et seq.*—march of the, 253—their last halt before the battle of the Alma, 257—critical position of the Allies at Belbec, iii. 75—strength of the, at the opening of Pélissier's command, in May 1855, viii. 7.
Allix, Captain, v. 123, note.
Allowances, extra, of food and drink to the French soldier, vi. 471.
Alma, the, ii. 161, 176, 222, 224—the entrenched position on, 225—the position on the, 227 *et seq.*, 231 note, 234, 235, 237, 256, 257, iii. 16 *et seq.*
ALMA CAMPAIGN, THE: tidings which kindled in England a zeal for the invasion of the Crimea, ii. 49—siege of Silistria, *ib.*—the battle of Giurgevo, 57—the campaign on the Danube destructive to the military ascendancy of Russia, 62—the agony of the Czar, 63—Lord Raglan's dislike of undisciplined combatants, 64—importance to England of native auxiliaries, 65—the events on the Danube removing the assigned grounds for war, 68—helplessness of the French people, 69—course taken by the French Emperor, *ib.*—desire of the English for an offensive war, 70—Sebastopol, *ib.*—the longing of the English to attack it, 71—means of forming and declaring the opinion of the nation, 76—influence of the press, 77—demand for the destruction of Sebastopol, 88—the Government yields, 92—no good stand made in Parliament against the invasion, 93—preparation of the instructions addressed to Lord Raglan, 94—the sleeping Cabinet, 95 *et seq.*—instructions sent to the French commander, 97.
The Allies at Varna, 98—their state of preparation in the middle of July, *ib.*—their command of the sea, 99—information obtained by the Foreign Office as to the defences of the Crimea, 100—no information obtained in the Levant, *ib.*—Lord Raglan conceives that he is without trusty information, 101—the instructions for the invasion of the Crimea reach the allied camp, 102—the men who had to determine the effect to be given to the instructions, St Arnaud (having Admiral Hamelin under his orders), Lord Raglan, and Admiral Dundas, 103, 105—text of the instructions to Lord Raglan, 107—their extreme stringency, 113—considerations tending to justify this stringency, *ib.*—the power of deciding practically vested in Lord Raglan, 115—his conference with Sir George Brown, 116—his decision governs the counsels of the Allies, 123—he announces it to the Home Government, *ib.*—the Duke of Newcastle's reply, 124.
Conference at the French headquarters, 126—reconnaissance of the coast, 128—Sir Edmund Lyons, 129—rumoured change in the plans of the Czar, 131—second conference, 132—the French urge the abandonment of the expedition, 132—Lord Raglan's way of bending the French to the plans of the English Government, 133—preparations, *ib.*—ineffectual attempts of the Allies to deceive the

enemy, 135—fire at Varna, 136—cholera, *ib.*—weakly condition of the English soldiery, 138—arrangements first made for the starting of the expedition, 140—the embarkations, *ib.*—failure of the French calculations in regard to their steam-power, 143—excitement and impatience of St Arnaud, 144—he sails without the English, and without his steam-vessels, 145—the naval forces of the Allies, *ib.*—duty devolving on the English fleet, *ib.*—arrangements in regard to the English convoy, 146—troops and supplies left at Varna, 147—departure of the English Armada and of the French steam-vessels, 148—St Arnaud at sea without the English, 150—he sails back, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's reproof, 152—its good effect, *ib.*—his increasing ascendancy, *ib.*—the whole allied Armada together at sea, 152—the fleets again parted, *ib.*—step taken by French officers to stop the expedition, 153—conference on board the Ville de Paris, 154—St Arnaud disabled by illness, *ib.*—unsigned paper read to the conference, 155—St Arnaud leaves all to Lord Raglan, 156—conference adjourned to the Caradoc, 157—Lord Raglan's way of dealing with the French remonstrants, 158—his now complete ascendant, 159—the English fleet at the point of rendezvous, 160—Lord Raglan's reconnaissance of the coast, *ib.*—he chooses the landing-place, *ib.*—the whole Armada converges upon the coast of the Crimea, 162—St Arnaud's sudden recovery, 163—the progress made by Lord Raglan during St Arnaud's illness, *ib.*—our ignorance of the country and the enemy's strength, 164—gives to the expedition the character of an adventure, 165.

Unopposed seizure of Eupatoria, 166—the whole Armada gathers towards the chosen landing-place, 169—the landing-place, 170—step taken by the French in the night, 171—destroys the plan of landing, 172—Sir E. Lyons's way of dealing with the emergency, *ib.*—new landing-place found for the English at Kamishlu, 173—position of the English flotilla adapted to the change, 175—position of the inshore squadrons, 176—of the main English fleet, *ib.*—plan of the landing, 177—General Airey, 178—the first day's landing, 183—zeal and energy of the sailors, 186—wet night's bivouac, 187—continuance of the landing, 188—its completion, *ib.*—by the English, French, and Turks, 189—deputations from the Tartar villages to the English headquarters, 191—result of exploring expeditions, 192—freedom of the English army from crime, 193—kindly intercourse between our soldiery and the villagers, *ib.*—the duty of sweeping the country for supplies, 194—Airey's seizure of a convoy, 195—the forces now on shore, 199.

Nature of the next intended operations, *ib.*—comparison between regular operations and the system of the 'movable column,' 200—the allies to operate as a movable column, 206—perilous character of the march from Old Fort, 207—the fate of the allied armies dependent upon the firmness of the left, 209—the French take the right, *ib.*—their trustfulness and good sense, 210—the advance begun, the order of march, 211—the march, 214—sickness and failing strength of many of the soldiers, 215—the stream of the Bulganak, 216—the affair of the, 218—apparently dangerous position of the English army, 224—Lord Raglan causes it to bivouac in order of battle, *ib.*—position on the Alma, 227—Mentschikoff's plan for availing himself of the position, 235—his forces, 236—disposition of his troops, 239—forces originally posted in the part of the position assailed by the French, 240—in the part of the position assailed by the English, 241—the numbers actually opposed to the French and the English respectively, 245—forces of the Allies, *ib.*—the tasks taken by the French and the English respectively, 247—conference between St Arnaud and Lord Raglan, 248—the French plan, *ib.*—the part taken by Lord Raglan at the conference, 249—French plan for the operations of the English army, 250—St Arnaud's demeanour, 251—result of [illegible] march of the Allies, 253—causes delaying the march of the English army, *ib.*—the last halt of the Allies before the battle, 257—meeting between St Arnaud and Lord Raglan, 259.

THE BATTLE: Bosquet's advance, 261—he divides his force, *ib.*—disposition of the main body of the French army, 261—of the English army, 262—the leading divisions of the English army deploy into line, 264—the Light

Division not on its right ground, *ib.*—the march continued, 265—spectacle presented to the Russians by the advance of the Allies, 266—notion which the Russian soldiers had been taught to entertain of the English army, 267—surprise at the sight of the English array, *ib.*—fire from the shipping, 268—movement of Russian troops without orders, *ib.*—cannonade directed against the English line, 269—men of leading division ordered to lie down, 270—cannonade against Lord Raglan and his staff, 274—the Allies could now measure their front with that of the enemy, 276—the village of Bourliouk set on fire by the enemy, 278—effect of this measure on the English line of battle, 279—General Bosquet's operations, *ib.*—after a momentary check, he establishes himself on a cliff, 284—measures taken by the Russians, 285—the effect of Bosquet's turning movement upon Mentschikoff, 286—his measures for dealing with it, 287—cannonade between Mentschikoff's artillery and that of Bosquet, 288—Bosquet's position, 290—the order into which the Allies fell, 291—artillery contest, 292.

Canrobert's advance across the river, 293—his difficulty with his artillery, 297—St Arnaud pushes forward his reserves, 298—opportunities offered to Mentschikoff, 300—the battle languishing, 301—causes which occasioned the failure of the French operations, 303.

A desponding account of Bosquet's condition is brought to Lord Raglan, 304—he resolves to precipitate the advance of the English army, 305—order for the advance of the English infantry, 306—Evans detaches Adams with two battalions, and advances to the bridge, 308—the conflict in which he became engaged, 309—advance of the Light Division, 314—the task before it, *ib.*—means for preparing a [redacted] ordered assault [redacted] the assailants, 317—the Division not covered by skirmishers, 318—Sir G. Brown's order for the advance, 319—the left bank covered with the enemy's skirmishers, 323—nature of the duty attaching upon General Buller, 324—the 19th Regiment, 325—state of the five battalions on the left bank of the river, 326—Sir George Brown, *ib.*—General Codrington, 329—his resolve to storm the Great Redoubt, 352—Lacy Yea and his Fusiliers, 334—the gallant struggle on the banks of the river, *ib.*—the Russian column is defeated and retreats, 338—the storming and seizure of the Great Redoubt, 339—no supports yet coming up from the river's bank, 351—the Guards, *ib.*—the Duke of Cambridge, 354—halt of the 1st Division, 357—General Airey comes up, 358—his exposition of the order to advance, *ib.*—advance of the Guards to the left bank of the river, 361—advance of the Highland Brigade, 362—state of things in the redoubt, 366—the forces gathered against them, 368—our soldiery falling back from the redoubt, 378—losses of the regiments which stormed it, 382.

Cause which paralysed the Russians in the midst of their success, 383—apparition of horsemen on the top of a knoll forming part of the Russian position, 387, 388—the cause of the apparition, 389—Lord Raglan's advance in person, followed by his staff, but without troops, 390—his passage of the river, and advance to the top of the knoll, *ib. et seq.*—on his way, without stopping, he orders up Adams's brigade, 395—his position on the knoll, *ib.*—two guns ordered to be brought up, 398—causes of the depression which had come upon the French, 401—the mishaps which befell Prince Napoleon, 404—the head of Canrobert's division falls back, 412—the two guns brought to the top of the knoll, 415—their fire causes the enemy to withdraw his guns, *ib.*—and drives his reserves from the field, *ib.*—progress hitherto made by Evans, 417—he advances, 420—is joined by Sir Richard England, *ib.*—the strength of their joint battery, *ib.*—Evans's situation, 421—protracted fight between the 7th Fusiliers and the Kazan column, 422—defeat of the column, 431.

State of the field in this part of the Russian position, 434—the advance of the Guards up the slope, 435 *et seq.*—advance of the Highland Brigade, 443—Sir Colin Campbell's determination, 447—the nature of the fight about to take place on Kourganè Hill, 453—Prince Gortchakoff's advance, 456—Colonel Hood's manœuvre, 458—its effect, 459—engagement between the Guards and the Russians, 460—the stress which a line puts upon the

soldiery of a column, *ib.*—effect of the English array upon Kvetzinski, 461—his defeat, 470—and retreat, 471—the Duke of Cambridge master of the Great Redoubt, 472—Sir Colin Campbell's conception of his part, 474—the conflict of the Highland Brigade with several Russian columns, 476—defeat of four Russian columns, 488——losses sustained by the enemy on Kourganè Hill, 493—retreat of the last Russian battalions, 497—final operations of the artillery, 498—their losses, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's advance across the Main Causeway, *ib.*—meeting at no great distance from him of Mentschikoff and Gortchakoff, 500—the English army on the ground they had won, 503—restricted operations in pursuit of field batteries escorted by English cavalry, 504.

Progress of a French artillery train along the plateau, 506—its fire on the great Russian column, 507—Kiriakoff supposing this fire to come from the ships, draws the great column inland, *i.e.*, towards the east, *ib.*—flanking fire of the French artillery, 510—Kiriakoff, coming still farther eastward, and seeing that the English have vanquished all the forces before them, conforms to the rearward movement of his countrymen, and retreats, *ib.*—his words quoted, 509, 511, 512, 513—his retreat is not molested by the French, 514.

Great conflux of French troops towards the Telegraph, *ib.*—turmoil and supposed fight at the Telegraph, 515—St Arnaud and the position of the French troops, 517—opportunity of cutting off some of the retreating enemy, 518—Lord Raglan's vain endeavour to bring about the requisite advance of French troops, *ib.*—situation of Forey with Lourmel's brigade, 520—the array of the French on the plateau, 521—the position in rear and for covering the retreat taken up by Kiriakoff, *ib.*—he moves forward some cavalry, *ib.*—question as to the way in which the retreat should be pressed, 522—Lord Raglan's opinion, 523—his difficulties with the French, 524—the close of the battle, 525—the cheers which greet Lord Raglan, *ib.*—the allied armies bivouac on the ground they have won, 527—Colonel Torrens's force comes up, *ib.*—continuation of the Russian retreat, *ib.*—its degeneration into a disorderly flight, 528—loss of the French, 530—of the English, 531—of the Russians, *ib.*

Could the attack on the position of the Alma have been avoided? 532—the actual course taken, 534—summary of the battle, *ib.*—how far the Allies were entitled to take glory to themselves, 537—cause of any shortcomings on the part of the French army, 540—effect of the battle upon the prospects of the campaign, 543.

The long halt on the battle-field, advance on the Katcha and the Belbec, and the flank march, which brought the Allies to the south coast of the Crimea, iii. chaps. i., ii., iii., iv., v., and vi.

Alma, the battle of the, note respecting the order of time in which certain events occurred at, ii. 576—arrival in London of the tidings of, iii. 497—Duke of Newcastle on the victory of the Alma, 500—forecasting the battle of, 506—reception in France of the tidings of, 517—conversation between Lord Cowley and Drouyn de Lhuys on the, 522.

Almatamack, ii. 229, 232, 233, 236, 239 *et seq.*—Canrobert's batteries at, 506.

Aloushta, the French Emperor's project for assembling troops at, vii. 240, 242, 272, 284, 289; viii. 10, 28, 130, 132, 249.

'Ambulance Corps,' vi. 142.

Anangkie, ii. 90.

Anapa, ii. 112—attack on, recommended, viii. 78—attack of, peremptorily forbidden by Louis Napoleon, 79—Pélissier's determined resistance to the prohibition of an attack on, 80—fall of, 80, 81, 250.

Anderson, Captain, ii. 309.

Anderson, Lieut. Hastings, iii. 432.

Anderson, Lieut., viii. 117.

Anderson, Miss, vi. 415 note.

Angely, General Regnault St Jean, viii. 137, 155.

Anglesea, Lord, iv. 253.

Anglo-French Alliance, the, in danger, iii. 521—threatened rupture of the, 525.

Anglo-French fleet, guns of the, iii. 42, 275.

Anitchkoff, ii. 240 note *et seq.*, 294, 513 note.

Annenkoff, General, iii. 10 note.

Annesley, Captain, ii. 381 note, 437.

Anstruther, at the Alma, ii. 346 and note, 382.

Applethwaite, ii. 382.
Appleyard, ii. 431.
April bombardment, the, vii. 130 *et seq.* See Siege of Sebastopol.
Aqueduct, the, v. 404.
Arabat Isthmus, defence of the, vii. 252.
Arabat Spit, viii. 74.
Arabat, the port of, viii. 64.
Arab Tabia, the, ii. 51 *et seq.*
Arabtabia redoubt, iv. 36, 50 *et seq.*, 60, 70, 177-179, 187 *et seq.*, 217-220, 281, 329.
Arch, the scarlet, seen on the knoll at battle of the Alma, ii. 495.
Archer, Isaac, v. 251, 280, 283 *et seq.*
Ardent, Colonel, i. 403.
Argyline, Hussars stationed at, vii. 253.
Arguimban, Mr George, iii. 426 note.
Armada, the, converges on the coast of the Crimea, ii. 162—and gathers towards the chosen landing-place, 169—is seen from Sebastopol, iii. 132.
Armada, composition of the Kertch, viii. 39.
Armies, standing, i. 5.
Armies in the East, the way in which England and France ministered to their, vi. 93.
Armstrong, Captain James, Brigade-Major to Adams at Inkerman, v. 8 *et seq.*—his communication with the Duke of Cambridge, 188, 192, 196, 197—his stern and successful appeal to a French battalion, 289 *et seq.*—his brilliant and successful attack with the few men he could gather in the crisis of the battle, 427—his leadership at 'the 'Quarries,' of one of the two storming-parties which carried the work, viii. 113 *et seq.*—dangerously wounded, yet refusing to be moved from the field, still giving firm counsel, 114, 115.
Armstrong, General, note on, viii. 306.
Armstrong, Lieut. Arthur, at Inkerman, and there killed, v. 123.
Armstrong, Lieut. E., at the Alma, severely wounded, ii. 313.
Armstrong, Major James, viii. 113 *et seq.*
Army Medical Service, the, vi. 32, 41-49.
'Army of Diversion,' the, vii. 239—Emperor's plan regarding, 240, 372—English Government's opinion of plan, 241.
'Army of Operation, the first,' vii. 238—Emperor's plan regarding, 239, 372, 373.
'Army of Operation, the second,' vii. 239—Emperor's plan regarding, 240.
Army of Paris and their midnight work, i. 281.
'Army of Reserve' (French), orders to bring up, from Constantinople, vii. 259—how affected when hearing of the recall of Kertch expedition, 271.
Armytage, Captain, R.N., of the *Highflier*, ii. 174 note.
Arnold, ii. 57 *et seq.*
Artakoff Battery, the, viii. 170, 172 *et seq.*, 177.
Artilleur Battery, the, Kamtchatka Lunette assailed by, vii. 37 and note, 78, 185, 355.
Artillery Bay, iii. 193, 216.
Artillery Fort, iii. 119 *et seq.*
Ashe, Sergeant, v. 351.
Ashton, Sergeant, v. 10.
Astapoff, attack under, at Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 97—steps taken to repel the enemy, *ib.*—defeat of column, 98.
Astley, ii. 437.
Astley, Lieut., v. 369, 427.
Attack, the Left, iii. 488.
Attacks of the 17th and 18th June, see in vol. viii. the contents table for chaps. vi. and vii.—the true merit of the Russian defence, 205—Prince Gortchakoff's fabulous announcements, *ib.*—Pélissier's explanations, 207—the real cause of his failure, *ib.*—Todleben's comments, 209—costliness of General Eyre's victory in proportion to the advantages gained, 211.
Aubry, i. 256.
Aurep, General, i. 398.
Austria. See contents of vol. i. and vol. vii., chap. 12.
Austria and Prussia, union of, with Western Powers, vii. 301—anomalous character of union, 302—its benefits, 303—its defects, 304—defection of Prussia, 305—loyalty of Austria, 307.
Autemarre, General d', at the Alma, ii. 261—advance of, under Bosquet, 281—guns brought against him, 283-288, 305; v. 40, 74, 379—his brigade, 388, 401—opposes Krouleff's night attack, vii. 87—in command of troops against Kertch, 257; viii. 39, 43, 48, 50, 53—the imperfect discipline of his troops in the Kertchine peninsula, 55—his forces, 148-151—the movements of his forces on the 18th of June, 156—his attack, 157—his prospects, 158-160—messages from, 196—continued operations of his troops, *ib.*—his desire for reinforcements, 197—the conflict undertaken by his troops, 198—he is without support and withdrawn, 200, 207, 208-210.
Ayen Pass, the, movement of troops pro-

jected by the French Emperor, vii. 240.
Azof battalions, repulse of, at Eupatoria, vii. 56.
Azof, the Sea of, ii. 111, 164; viii. 39, 46, 59—the Allied admirals in the, 60—nature of the operations undertaken in the, 60-65—the loss of, 76, 81, 83, 250, 259.

Baidar, the valley of, iii. 293, 339; iv. 36, 43 *et seq.*, 50, 52—proposed placing of French troops at, vii. 285; viii. 28.
Baillie, iii. 447.
Bakshi Serāi, ii. 208, 528; iii. 24, 28, 38, 79 *et seq.*, 90, 92, 140, 158 *et seq.*, 162, 212, 232, 247, 249, 253, 282; v. 51—proposed movement on, vii. 285; viii. 28.
BALACLAVA, THE BATTLE OF, iv. 1—the task of selecting generals of cavalry for a campaign, *ib.*—Lord Lucan, 3—Lord Cardigan, 11—General Scarlett, 23—the isolated position of the forces defending Balaclava, 27—strength and boldness of the Russians in the valley of the Tchernaya, *ib.*—the Balaclava position, 28—the armament of the works, 36—the Kamara Height left in possession of the enemy, 37—Sir Colin Campbell's confidence in the maintenance of the position, 38—Mentschikoff's purpose of assailing the defences, 41—the object of the contemplated attack, 43—tidings of the impending attack, 45—advance of Lord Lucan and his staff in the direction of Canrobert's Hill, 46—orders from Lord Lucan for the immediate advance of the cavalry, 47—vigilance evinced by the Turks, *ib.*—the English soldiers' want of vigilance, 48—the enemy's advance perceived by Lord Lucan and Sir Colin Campbell, 50—intelligence sent off to Lord Raglan, *ib.*—Lord Lucan's demonstration with his cavalry, *ib.*—advance of General Gribbé from the direction of Baidar, 52—he seizes Kamara and establishes a battery, *ib.*—forward movement of the Russian forces, 53—Lord Lucan's decision, 54—Russian batteries established against Canrobert's Hill, 55—the fort on Canrobert's Hill silenced, 56—continued resistance of the Turks, *ib.*—the work stormed, 57—overwhelming strength of the Russians in point of numbers, *ib.*—abandonment by the Turks of the three next redoubts, 59—occupation of the three redoubts by the enemy, 60—observations on the first period of the battle, 61—Lord Raglan's post of observation, 65—Canrobert's dispositions, 68—Lord Raglan's new dispositions, 69—the concentration of the Russian forces, *ib.*—isolation of Balaclava, 70—the Russian forces secure for the time against the attack of infantry, 71—the forces now threatening Balaclava, 72—the forces that could be opposed to them, *ib.*—Liprandi's plan of trying a venture with his cavalry, 73—the design with which this was resorted to, 74—advance of the Russian cavalry, *ib.*—arrangements for defending the advance to Kadikōi, 75—advance of Russian horse, 76—flight of the Turks, 77—position of Sir Colin Campbell after the flight of the Turks, *ib.*—continued advance of the Russian squadrons, 78—altered movement of the assailing squadrons, 79—Campbell's counter-manœuvre, *ib.*—its effect, *ib.*—new foe encountered by the Turks in their flight, 81—want of arrangement for an effective look-out, 82—advance of the main body of the Russian cavalry, 83—march of the Heavy Dragoons under Scarlett, 84—cause which induced Scarlett to dispense with precautions, 84—sudden appearance of the enemy's cavalry on the flank of Scarlett's dragoons, 87—his resolve, *ib.*—his dilemma, 89—his decision, *ib.*—the part taken by Lord Lucan after hearing of the Russian advance, 90—meeting of Lucan and Scarlett, 92—Lord Lucan's part in the attack, 93—position of the six squadrons anterior to Scarlett's charge, *ib.*—the numbers of the Russian cavalry confronting Scarlett, 94—well-executed manœuvre of the Russian cavalry, 95—the Russians slacken pace, 96—deployment effected by the Russians on each flank of their column, 97—Scarlett's task, 98—the military spectators of the combat, 101—distinctive colours of the uniform worn by the Russians and the English dragoons, *ib.*—the group of four horsemen now collected in front of the Greys, 102—Scarlett's deviation from the accustomed practice, 105—his advance, 106—his distance from his squadrons, *ib.*—in the column, 108—the ancient friendship between the Scots Greys and the Inniskilling Dragoons, 109—unavoidable slowness of the advance in its earlier moments, 111—progress

of the advance, 112—Russian horsemen resorting to firearms, 113 — the officers who charged with the Greys, 113—do. with the Inniskillings, 114.

The charge of the three hundred, 115—the manœuvres of the two Russian wings, 136—Lord Lucan's orders and directions, 137—the order of the operations of our supports, 139—the 4th Dragoon Guards, *ib.*—the Royals, 142—the 5th Dragoon Guards, 145—change in the bearing of the combatants, 147 — efforts made to get the Greys together in the midst of the melley, 148 — the charge of Hunt's squadron of the Inniskillings, 151—the breaking of the column, 154—retreat of the whole body, *ib.*—attempts of our dragoons to get together in the melley, 155 — pursuit of the enemy by our dragoons, *ib.*—result of the fight between the Russian cavalry and Scarlett's brigade, 156—the admiration excited by the exploit of Scarlett's brigade, 157 — congratulation addressed to General Scarlett by Lord Raglan, 158—comments on the fight, *ib.*—the time occupied by the fight, 160.

The Light Brigade at the time of Scarlett's engagement, 161—impatience of the brigade and of Lord Cardigan, 162—the cause which palsied the Light Brigade at the time of Scarlett's engagement, 164—Lord Lucan's message of reproof to Lord Cardigan, 174.

Lord Raglan's perception of the new phase into which the battle had passed, 175—change wrought in the position of the Russians by the defeat of the cavalry, 176—Lord Raglan's purpose, *ib.*—circumstances under which Lord Raglan determined to appeal to his cavalry, 179—the third order, *ib.*—Lord Lucan's construction of it, 180—the impatience and anger of the Headquarters Staff, 182 — the fourth order, 183—Captain Nolan, 184—the position of the Russian army when Nolan reached Lord Lucan, 187—intentions of Liprandi at this period of the action, 189—Lord Raglan's perfect apprehension of the state of the battle, 190—two points in the enemy's position available for attack, *ib.*—position of our cavalry at this time, 191—arrival of Nolan with the 'fourth order,' *ib.*—text of the 'fourth order,' 192—Lord Lucan's reception of the order, 194—the altercation between Lord Lucan and Nolan, 195—Lord Lucan's determination, 202—his order to Cardigan, 203—dispositions for the advance of the cavalry down the North Valley, 207—Lord Cardigan and his staff, 208—his impression as to the nature of the task imposed upon him, 211.

Advance of Lord Cardigan and the Light Brigade, *ib.*—appearance of Captain Nolan in front of the brigade, *ib.*—his probable object, 212—Nolan's fate, 214—question as to the degree in which blame justly attached to Nolan, 215—movement on the part of the enemy which shows the exact adaptation of Lord Raglan's written orders to the exigency of the hour, 216—awakening of the Russians to the opportunity which our Light Brigade was offering them, 220—powerful fire upon the advancing brigade from both flanks, 221—officers acting with the two regiments of the first line, 222—continued advance of the brigade, 223—the pace, *ib.*—Lord Cardigan's rigid way of leading the brigade, 224—increasing difficulty of restraining the pace in the first line, 225 — state of the first line, *ib.* — Casualties in Lord Cardigan's personal staff, 225—continued advance of Lord Cardigan and his first line, 226—the advance of the three regiments acting in support, 230—officers present with the regiments, *ib.*—the order in which the supports advanced, 231—the near approach of our first line to the battery, 240 — Lord Cardigan's charge into the battery at the head of his first line, 241—portion of the first line led by Captain Morris, which outflanked the battery, and was immediately confronted by Russian cavalry, 243 — Morris's charge, 244 — Morris wounded and taken prisoner, 246—other incidents in this part of the field, 248—continued advance by Lord Cardigan in person, 249—his isolation, *ib.*—his advance towards a large body of Russian cavalry, 250 — endeavour to take him prisoner, 251 — the movement in retreat, by which he disengaged himself from his Cossack assailants, 252—the devotion with which, down to this time, Lord Cardigan had led his brigade, *ib.*—Lord Cardigan's return through the battery, 253—his predicament, *ib.*—his retreat, 256—the lancers who had charged under Morris, 258—the groups of combatants constituting the main remnants of the

first line, 259—Mayow's assumption of command then, 260—his charge, 261—his advance in pursuit, *ib.*—operations of the forces actively supporting the first line, 262—the feeling with which the French saw our light cavalry advance down the North Valley, 262—the Chasseurs d'Afrique, 263—General Morris, 264—his determination, *ib.*—D'Allonville's attack, 265—moderate extent of the losses sustained by D'Allonville in proportion to the service rendered, 267—the brilliancy of this achievement of the Chasseurs d'Afrique, *ib.*—the 11th Hussars, 268—the 6th Light Dragoons, 270—their entrance into the battery, *ib.*—the combat which followed then, 271—further advance of Lord George Paget, 273—the 8th Hussars, 274—state of the battle at this period, 275—the retreat of the Russian cavalry, 277—the need there was of fresh troops in order to clench the victory, 278.

Lord Lucan, 279—the question now forced upon his attention, 281—his decision, 282—the Greys and the Royals ordered to fall back, *ib.*—severity of the fire which had been sustained by these regiments, *ib.*—Lord Lucan's conclusion as to the use to be made of the Heavy Dragoons, 283—the brigade kept halted accordingly, *ib.*—General Scarlett and Colonel Beatson, *ib.*—the Light Brigade disappearing in the smoke at the foot of the valley, 284—the full import of Lord Lucan's decision, *ib.*—the Heavy Dragoons at the time when the Light Brigade was out of sight at the foot of the valley, 285.

The Light Brigade, 286—Colonel Mayow and his fifteen lancers, *ib.*—their junction with the 8th Hussars, *ib.*—Liprandi's battalions on the Causeway Heights, 287—three squadrons of Jeropkine's Lancers seen forming in rear of the 8th Hussars, *ib.*—Colonel Shewell, the senior officer, in this emergency, 288—his charge, *ib.*—defeat and flight of the Russian lancers, 290—Shewell's retreat, 291—the 11th Hussars and the 4th Light Dragoons, 294—their retreat, *ib.*—approach of the Russian cavalry in pursuit, 295—Lord George Paget's appeal to his regiment, *ib.*—its effect, 296—discovery of a body of Russian cavalry drawn up across the line of retreat, *ib.*—means for meeting the emergency, 297—position of the interposed force, 300—its formation and apparent strength, *ib.*—its sudden change of front, 301—advance and sudden halt of the column, 302—the nature of the collision which then occurred, *ib.*—continued course of the two retreating regiments, 306—Lord George Paget's inquiry as to the fate of the first line, 309—the escape of Sir George Wombwell, 310—the escape of Captain Morris, 311—Morris and Nolan, 313—the remnants of the brigade at this time, 314—Lord Cardigan's address to the men, *ib.*

The first muster of the Light Brigade after the charge, *ib.*—the killing of the disabled horses, 315—the losses suffered by the brigade, *ib.*—the supposed fate of Captain Lockwood, 317—the small number of prisoners taken by the Russians, 319—the small amount of loss sustained by our troops after closing with the enemy, *ib.*—who brought the first line out of action? *ib.*—and who brought out the supports? 320—interview between Lord Raglan and Lord Cardigan, 321—Lord Raglan's opinion of Lord Cardigan's conduct in the charge, *ib.*—interview between Lord Raglan and Lord Lucan, *ib.*—General Liprandi's questions respecting the exploit of the Light Brigade, 324—duration of the combat called the "Light Cavalry Charge," 326—Lord Raglan's privately expressed opinion on the charge, *ib.*—General Bosquet's criticism on the charge, 327.

Liprandi's counter-march of the Odessa battalions, 329—deliberations of General Canrobert and Lord Raglan, 330—the determination of the Allies, 332—close of the battle, 333—the kind of importance which attached to the battle of Balaclava, 334—summary of the battle, 335—the loss of ground sustained by the Allies, 339—the casualties resulting from the battle, 340—the barbarous treatment of the prisoners taken by the enemy, 341—with whom the victory? *ib.*—the effect of the battle upon the self-confidence of the Russians, 342—Lord Cardigan's action with reference to the charge, 345—his litigation, 347—his theory as to the duty of a cavalry officer placed in his circumstances, 348—his statements and explanations, 350—his written explanations of the course he took in retiring, *ib.*—counter-statements, 351—the definite question thus raised, 352—the

heroic character of Cardigan's attack, 355.
Balaclava, the plain of, iv. 31; v. 69.
BALACLAVA, THE RETENTION OF, v. 25—26th October, *ib.*—Lord Raglan providing against the occurrence of a disaster at Balaclava, *ib.*—the two plans which seemed open to him, *ib.*—his directions to Captain Tatham, 26—the advantages of abandoning Balaclava, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's inchoate resolve, *ib.*—conclusive objection to the plan interposed by the Commissary-General, 27—Lord Raglan's efforts to provide means of defending the town, *ib.*—sacrifices necessitated by the retention of the place, *ib.*—continuation of the enemy's apparent designs against Balaclava, 28—Lord Raglan's continued exertions for its defence, 29—the enemy's now settled purpose, *ib.*
Balaclava town, iii. 96—Lord Raglan before, 97—surrender of, 99—demeanour of the inhabitants of, *ib.*—smallness of its harbour, 101—the English retain possession of, 102, 116; iii. 195, 278—the English draw their supplies from, 286—a separate system of defence for, 291—the means adopted for strengthening it, 292—Sir Colin Campbell appointed to the command at, 293, 320, 455—extreme narrowness of the communication through, vi. 104—construction of the wharves at, 105, 108, 109—the defence of, 110, 112, 114, 139, 141—the town during the hurricane, 161, 190 *et seq.*, 231, 271—the road from, 289, 293, 294, 384, 395—the general hospital at, 417—defences of, strengthened, vii. 5—withdrawal of Russian camps from before, 39
Bu[illegible]gonie, Lord, v. 273.
[illegible]ljik, ii. 144-146, 148, 149 note, 151, 152, 163.
[illegible]lkan range, the, ii. 40, 41, 42, 44, 46, 103.
[illegible]kan, the, i. 401.
Ball, Mr Edward Charles, iii. 413.
Ballard, Lieutenant, ii. 55 *et seq.*
Baltchick, iii. 22.
Baltic, the, ii. 69—the operations in the, iii. 511.
Bamberg, the conference of, i. 443.
Bamford, Captain, v. 357.
Banat, the, i. 343—the position of the, 396, 437—the forces in, 444.
Bancroft, James, at Inkermann, v. 249—his hand-to-hand fight for life, 253, 282.
Baring, ii. 493 note.
Baring (Scots Fusiliers), iii. 354 note; v. 10 note.
Barker, iv. 75.
Barker's guns, iv. 156.
Barnard, General, viii. 163.
Barnston's, Captain, picket, v. 135.
Barrack Battery, the, its ruined state, iii. 488; viii. 139, 166.
Barrack hospital, the, vi. 148, 418—improved condition of, 438.
Barrier, the, loose stones so called at Inkerman, v. 103, 106, 164, 182, 189, 199 *et seq.*, 210, 295, 302, 305, 308, 317, 341 *et seq.*, 344, 357 *et seq.*, 364 *et seq.*—attack on the, repulsed by General Goldie and Haines, 356—the real dimensions of the fight at the, 384, 390 *et seq.*—still held, 406—continued defence of the, 419—skirmishing on the left point of the, *ib.*—the fight for the, 421.
Barrot, Odillon, i. 251.
Bartenoff, Captain, iii. 191.
Bartin, the port of, i. 378.
Bashi-Bazouks, Lord Raglan on the, ii. 64.
Basily, M., Russian Consul-General, i. 49.
Basset, iv. 145.
Bastion, Central, the, *iii.* 193, *216.*
Bates, George, v. 252.
Bathurst, ii. 382.
Bathurst, Lord, vi. 84.
Battery "Number Four," iii. 222.
Battery of the Point, iii. 193, 216; viii. 138, 139, 151, 209.
Baudin, Charles, i. 256—shot dead, 257.
Bayley, Captain, v. 165 note.
Baynes, Lieut., vii. 211 note.
Bazaine, General, vii. 206.
Bazalgette, ii. 383.
Bazancourt, M., iii. 108 note.
Baze, i. 243.
Beach, Thomas, v. 193.
Beatson, Colonel, iv. 25—his services in Spain, *ib.*—his appointment as extra aide-de-camp to General Scarlett, *ib.*—French officer expresses admiration of the exploit of Scarlett's brigade to him, 157, 283, 284 note.
Beatson, General W. F., record of military services of, iv. 368.
Beattie, Mr, engineer, vi. 385.
Beauchamp, General Earl, vi. 371 note.
Bedeau, General, i. 243.
Bélaieff, viii. 97.
Belbec, the river, ii. 161, 209, 544; iii. 16—the mouth of, assailable, 23, 28, 31—the Allies bivouac on the, 36, 39, 46,

49, 70, 75 *et seq.*, 95, 105 *et seq.*, 122, 140, 142, 148, 160 *et seq.*—upper do., 168, 187, 214, 222, 247 note, 268 note, 278, 284, 339, 448 note, 255 *et seq.*, 360.
Belbec, valley of the, viii. 218.
Belgrade, ii. 102, 109.
Bell, v. 85.
Bell, Captain, ii. 349, 379 note, 531.
Bell, Lieut.-General Sir John, vi. 371 note.
Bellairs, Captain, at Inkermann, v. 118, 126, 161—his perception of a sudden emergency, 162—the charge he led, 163, 173, 182, 188, 257, 342, 346.
Benedek, General, vi. 235.
Benoist d'Azy, i. 249.
Bent, Captain, ii. 57, 62.
Bent, Major, vii. 177 note.
Bentinck, General, ii. 358—his report on the battle of the Alma, 381 note, 441 note, 473 note; v. 197—interposition of, 203, 218.
Bentinck, Henry, Major-General, v. 39.
Bentinck, Lieut.-General, viii. 177 note.
Bentinck's camp, v. 145.
Berdiansk, the Spit of, operation off, viii. 63.
Berdiansk, the town of, viii. 64.
Berkeley, Colonel, ii. 437, 441.
Berkeley, General Sir George, vi. 371 note.
Bernard's, General, ulterior operations, viii. 193.
Berryer, i. 247.
Béruleff, surprise of advanced siege-works by, vii. 99—check of the enemy, *ib.*—and subsequent rout, 100.
Besica bay, i. 350, 485.
Besiegers and the garrison, strength of the, in Oct. 1854, iii. 571.
Betts and Peto, vi. 289, 385 note.
Beuret, General, viii. 19, 32.
Beville, Colonel, i. 238, 239.
Bibikoff, Colonel, v. 193.
Bigotte, Lieutenant, v. 362.
Bingham, Lord, iv. 45.
Bissett, ii. 313.
Bizot, General, iii. 69, 342, 372; vii. 23, 74, 78, 86, 196, 197, 360.
Black Sea, the, the Russian seabord of, i. 347, 392—use of, by Russian ships interdicted, 395; ii. 150—the storms of the, vi. 100-102, 141—expedients for repressing preponderance of Russia in the, vii. 318—difficulties of Vienna Conference regarding, *ib. et seq.*
Black Sea fleet, the Czar's, ii. 71, 99—strength of the Russian, iii. 120—its partial destruction by Mentschikoff, chap. viii.—the resolve to dismantle it, chap. x. sec. 8.
Blair, Colonel, v. 207.
Blake, Colonel, ii. 336, 382.
Blood-frenzy, iv. 272.
Bombardment, First, iii. chap. xvii.—Second, or April bombardment, vii. chap. vi.—Third, viii. 91 *et seq.*—its continuance, 126—Fourth, the, 17th June, 138 *et seq.*—its renewal on the 18th, 194—its effect, 213—the stress it put on the Russians, 214.
Boothby at the Alma, ii. 383.
Boothby's guns, v. 339.
Boothby's, Lieut., demi-battery, attack on, v. 323—capture of the demi-battery, 325—limited effect of the capture, *ib.*—recapture of the guns by a little body of Zouaves, *ib.*
Born, Captain, viii. 197 note.
Borodino Regiments, the, v. 133 *et seq.*
Boscawen, Admiral, viii. 294 note.
Bosphorus, the, i. 342, 346—the Sultan's ancient right to control the, and the Straits of the Dardanelles, *ib.*, 390, 403, 503; ii. 134, 147 note, 32, 43, 45, 70, 98; iii. 111; vi. 50 note, 93, 96, 97—confusion in the, 100, 103, 114, 144, 147, 181, 186, 321, 413, 420, 431, 437—proposed opening of the, vii. 319.
Bosquet, General, ii. 31, 32—at the Alma, chap. xvi.—at Inkerman, commanding the French 'army of observation,' his position and duty, v. 40, 41—detained for a while by Gortchakoff's menaces, 71—his meeting with Sir George Brown and Sir George Cathcart, 72—their rejection of his proposal to bring up troops to the support of the English, 73—soon undeceived, he at last sends two battalions to Mount Inkerman, then (bringing greater forces) goes thither in person, 382—his surprise upon entering the field of battle, *ib. et seq.*—the part that with chequered fortunes but at last with the brilliant charge of his Zouaves and Algerines he was able to take in the battle, 3[illegible] 406—in the action of the 7th of June, his strong resolve brought to bear with effect, viii. chap v.—his removal to another command, chap. vi.—his recall to his old command on the heights, and his opinion adopted by the Chief, *ib.*
Bouat, General, ii. 261, 282, 290, 298, 302 *et seq.*, 412, 526, 542.
Boudistcheff, attack by, at Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 92—opposed by Captain Hedley Vicars, *ib.*—then by Colonel

Kelly and Major Gordon, 93—defeat of Russian column, *ib.*—his attack, viii. 119, 139.
Bouet de Willaumez, Admiral, iii. 326 note, 391 note, 454.
Bourbaki, General, at Inkerman, v. 40, 74, 285, 289—meeting between the General and Colonel Horsford, 290, 362, 363.
Bourbaki's brigade at Inkerman, v. 211, 379 note, 381, 386—two battalions, 391, 395, 405.
Bourgas, ii. 40.
Bourlouk, on the field of the Alma, ii. 228, 232 *et seq.*—the village of, set on fire, 278, 304 note, 389 note—Lord Raglan after the battle there visits the wounded, 526.
Bournabat, ii. 40.
Bourqueny, Baron de, i. 466—at Vienna Conference, vii. 313, 320.
Boussinière, v. 358, 361.
Boussinière's guns, v. 315—in battery on the Fore Ridge, 379—his artillery men, 391, 392—the havoc wrought in his batteries, *ib.*—their removal from the Fore Ridge, 396.
Bowden, Lieut., iii. 426.
Boxer, Admiral, vi. 100, 145; viii. 259.
Boyd, iv. 113.
Boyd, Corporal, death of, vii. 173.
Bracebridge, Mrs, vi. 418.
Brackenbury, Mr (Crimean Army Fund), vi. 394.
Bramston, v. 298.
Brancion, Colonel de, viii. 106—his death, 107.
Brandling, Captain, ii. 492; iii. 98.
Braybrooke, ii. 383.
Breastplates for French army under orders from Louis Napoleon, vii. 41.
Brereton, General, iii. 393 note.
Bressonet, Captain, viii. 159.
Brigade, the Light, ii. 194.
Bright, v. 87.
Bright, Captain, v. 82 note.
Bright, Mr, his sterling eloquence and [illegible] general reprobation [illegible] i. 425 *et seq.*, 460, 497 *et seq.*
Brigstocke (Sub.), iv. 140.
British force, strength of the, ii. 199.
British Government, the, and Lord Raglan: the Home Government (after Lord Panmure's first errors, disclosed and condemned in vol. vi.) co-operating harmoniously with Lord Raglan, viii. 219.
Brooke, ii. 383.
Brown, Captain George John, iv. 230, 316.
Brown, Private, iv. 292.
Brown, Sir George, commanding the Light Division, ii. 116, 326—at Lord Raglan's instance gives his opinion upon the project of invasion, 116 *et seq.*—his zeal in making preparations, 133—his gallant, though artless, leadership of the Light Division at the Alma, 264, and in chap. xvi. secs. 18, 19, 20, 21, and 22—his vehement resistance to plans for drawing closer the investment, iii. 306—at Inkerman, see 'Contents,' table of, vol. v.—on the morning of Inkerman, he (as well as Sir George Cathcart) takes upon himself to decline the aid of troops which Bosquet was bringing to the support of Lord Raglan, 72, 73—leads a body of French troops, 325 and note—commands the British troops in both the Kertch expeditions, vii. chap. x., and viii. chap. iv.—his command on the 18th of June, 164—his orders to Lord West, 178, 179.
Browne, Captain Cavendish, at night attack on Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 97; viii. 117.
Brownrigg, Colonel, v. 73, 197, 273, 476.
Bruat, Admiral, ii. 126, 13[illegible], 157; iii. 326 note, 465 note—invited to attend conference, vii. 77—letter of Minister of Marine to, 228, 230, 232, 234—commands expedition against Kertch, 257—recalled, 262, 269—his report, 270; viii. 39, 79-83, 299.
Brunet, General, viii. 103, 148, 151, 155 *et seq.*, 158—his attack and death, 156, 158, 207.
Brunnow, Baron, i. 53, note—his departure for London, 192—remonstrance against the entry of the fleets into the Dardanelles, 374, 406, 482.
Buchanan, iv. 113.
Bucharest, i. 396; ii. 62.
Bucharest, the Treaty of, in 1812, i. 111 note.
Buckingham Palace, Council of War at, vii. 239—agreement of, 285, 288.
Buckley, Lieut., ii. 437; viii. 67, 71, 74.
Budberg, Baron, i. 435, 488.
Bugeaud, General, ii. 1, 6, 9—his order of battle, ii. 211; iv. 264.
Bujuk Aktash, ii. 197.
Bulganak, the stream of the, ii. 161, 170, 216—the affair of the, 218, 223 note, 224, 248—the English position on the, 253 *et seq.*
Bulgaria, i. 89, 397; ii. 41, 46, 98, 99, 132, 136, 139, 141, 147; iii. 111; vi. 93, 97, 100, 338.

Bull, Lieutenant James, iii. 432.
Buller, General, his brigade at the Alma, ii. 278, 301 note, 319 note, 323, 324, 325, 363, 364—his arrival at Inkerman with four companies of the 77th, v. 142—his advance against the enemy's approaching masses, *ib.*, 151—his terse order and victorious charge, 152—he is wounded, 157, 158, 173, 449, 466.
Bulwer, ii. 437.
Bunbury, Colonel, his office made to serve in the great war as a War Department, vi. 81, 82 note—his last memorable act, 84 note.
Bunbury, Major, at Inkerman, v. 83, 84 note, 120 note.
Bunbury, Sir Henry, vi. 59 note.
Buol, Count, i. 434, 466, 469, 470—president of Vienna Conference, vii. 313—debates opened by, 317—plans submitted by, 328—resolves of, on rejection of proposals, 348—character of, 350.
Buol, Count de, conduct of, vii. 308.
Buoy, wrongly placed by the French at the landing, ii. 171—correspondence respecting the, placed by the French, 547.
Burghersh, Lord, ii. 392 note; iii. 499, 520; viii. 280.
Burgoyne, Lieutenant, viii. 67.
Burgoyne, Sir John, advising Engineer officer, i. 403; ii. 160, 231, 439; iii. 23, 44 note, 48, 59, 62, 63 *et seq.*, 66, 68, 71, 231 note, 233, 235, 237, 238 note, 241 *et seq.*, 256, 259, 264 *et seq.*, 290, 302, 306, 307, 337 note, 476, 480 note, 485 note, 549; v. 20 note, 35 note, 43 note, 466 note; vi. 105, 109 note, 113 note, 115 note, 116, note, 219, 320, 422, 430 note; vii. 21, 23, 74, 76, 109, 110, 111, 112, 237, 356, 357, 358.
Burke, Ensign Henry, v. 334.
Burke, Lieutenant, ii. 57 *et seq.*
Burnaby, Captain, at Inkerman, v. 223, 248, 249, 250, 254, 261, 264 note, 272, 279, 283, 286, 287, 301, 479.
Burnett, Adjutant, v. 357.
Burno, General, iii. 124 note, 126.
Burroughs, Captain, iv. 78 note.
'Busby-bags,' iv. 262.
Butchering the wounded in battle, charge against the Russian soldiery of, v. 460—the supposed motives, 461.
Butler, 23d Regiment, ii. 382.
Butler, Captain, Ceylon Rifles, ii. 51, 52—his death, 54.
Butler, Lieutenant, v. 86 note.
Cabinet, English, [illegible]rpor of the, on 29th June 1854, ii. 543.
Cabrol, M., i. 228 note.
Calthorpe, Major, on the Cardigan case, iv. 171 note.
Calthorpe, Somerset, Captain, one of Lord Raglan's aides-de-camp, iv. 68, 184, 352; v. 306.
Calvert, Mr, ii. 166.
Cambridge, Duke of, ii. 28, 263, 265, 270—at the Alma, chap. xvi. sec. 23 *et seq.*—at Inkerman, vol. v. chap. iv.
Cameron, Colonel, ii. 475, 480.
Cameron (Grenadier Guards), iii. 354 note.
Cameron (Grenadiers), v. 10 note.
Camou, viii. 103—his division, 109.
Camouflet, driving of a, vii. 34, 356.
Camp, English, the, at Balaclava, iv. 343.
Campbell, ii. 349, v. 83.
Campbell, General Codrington's aide-de-camp, ii. 376.
Campbell (23d Regiment), ii. 382.
Campbell, Captain George, iv. 145, 283.
Campbell, Captain Newport, iv. 145, 146.
Campbell, Colonel Robert, viii. 113 *et seq.*, 121, 124.
Campbell, Mr, railway between Balaclava and camp made by, vii. 41.
Campbell, Sir Colin, at the Alma, ii. chap. xvi.—appointed to the command at Balaclava, iii. 293—at the battle of Balaclava, vol. iv.—his dispositions on the Inkerman day, vol. v.
Campbell, Sir John, v. 81; viii. 164, 166, 169, 170, 171—his death, *ib.*, 179, 180, 182-194.
Candia, i. 90.
Canning, Sir Stratford (Viscount Stratford de Redcliffe), ambassador at the Porte, i. 111 *et seq.*
Cannon, General (Behram Pasha), ii. 54, 57, 58 *et seq.*
Cannonade, effect of a wisely designed, viii. 309.
Cannon-ball, ways of a, vii. 147, note, viii. 363.
Canrobert, General, the expectations that had been formed of him, ii. 295—his command of troops prepared for the *Coup d'Etat*, i. 242; ii. 51, 131, 136, 155, 160, 161, 261, 277, 291 *et seq.*, 293—his military studies and services at the Alma, 295, 296, 303, 305, 401—his division, 406 *et seq.* 454, 501, 506, 511, 514, 518, 540; iii. 102, 105, 107, 108—acceding to the command of the French army, 109—his counsels and speech in favour of a siege as opposed to a prompt as-

sault, 236 *et seq.*, 255 note, 259, 260, 263 note — divides his army, 285, 292 note, 318, 328, 331, 349 note, 372, 373, 386, 388, 390, 392, 464, 477, 478, 484; iv. 40 *et seq.*, 64 note, 68, 94, 162, 330—his force before Inkerman, v. 33, 36, 41, 43, 44 note, 45, 53, 57, 77, 78, 129, 184, 214, 302, 316, 320, 389 — his presence at the seat of danger, 396, 397—the cavalry he had brought up retreating, *ib.*—his resources at this time (about 11 A.M.), 407—his interesting personal communications with Lord Raglan and Pennefather, 407 *et seq.*—his inaction, and definitive abandonment of the offensive, 410—the import of this, 411—when afterwards, at about 1 o'clock, the Russians (still assailed by our people) began to fall back, he refused to take any part in pressing their retreat, 431.

His counsel and resolve on the morrow of Inkerman to temporise and wait for reinforcements, 480 *et seq.*

In the time of the Winter Troubles he at last relieves our army from some portion of its toil, vi. 384, 388.

His negotiations and final agreement with Lord Raglan respecting the future conduct of the siege, vii. 27—his subsequent change, 30, 31—sanctions the French night attack of the 24th of February on the Selinghinsk Redoubt, 67—having been misinformed by his people, imparts to Lord Raglan the supposed success of the attack, 71—submitting henceforth to all the counter-approaches in the Karabelnaya, he from time to time gives reasons for his successive abstentions, 72, 81, 83 *et seq.*—the vast scope and ill tendency of his reasons against molesting the enemy, 81, 82—his gloomy apprehensions, imparted by himself to Lord Raglan, 84 *et seq.*—his anxious, and at last successful, endeavours to obtain aid from the Turks, 106, 107—he apologises to his Government for the victorious exploit of Pélissier as inconsistent with the Imperial plan, 208—he ignores, and even denies, the success of the April bombardment, 217—the miserable instruction he receives from his Emperor, 220—his state of mind, *ib.*—he makes an agreement with Lord Raglan for a specified attack, 222—abandons it three days afterwards, 223—agrees with Lord Raglan to undertake a general assault of Sebastopol, but withdraws from his agreement, 226-230—he concurs with Lord Raglan and the Admirals in despatching a joint expedition to Kertch, and (seceding from the English) recalls his force, naval and military, from off the Kertchine Peninsula, chap. x.—he peremptorily refuses in conference to engage any part of his army in the English trenches, and so breaks to pieces the Emperor's cherished plan, 285—he first vainly endeavours to rid himself of the command by an appeal to Pélissier under the Dormant Commission, 290—then by telegraph sends home his resignation, and by order of his Emperor hands over the command to Pélissier, 291 *et seq.*—the reasons he assigned for his resignation, 292 *et seq.*—comments made on him at the time by men in authority, 297 *et seq.*—the effect of recent disclosures in lightening or shifting the weight of blame thrown upon him 299, 300.

Canrobert's Hill, and small fort occupied by Turkish troops at battle of Balaclava, iv. 33 *et seq.* — strength of the works on, 36, 46 *et seq.*, 55, 56, 57, 59, 60, 63, 70, 71, 335, 343.

Canrobert's Redoubt, v. 73, 105.

Canterbury, Archbishop of, i. 80.

Caradoc, conference on board the, which (under Lord Raglan's impulsion) determined to effect the invasion, ii. 157 *et seq.*—reconnaissance on board her, effected by Lord Raglan, 160 *et seq.*—choice of the landing-ground made from her deck by Lord Raglan, 161—the assurance she seemed to give our assembled fleet when coming in from her survey, 161, 162—the freight she bore ten months later, viii. 299—her signal, 300 — her commander, Derriman, 314.

Cardew, ii. 383.

Cardigan *v.* Calthorpe, the affidavits in, iv. 351 note—the proceedings in, 353 note, 384.

Cardigan's, Lord, command, ii. 213, 218 *et seq.*, 505—his reconnaissance towards Sebastopol, iii. 33, 79, 90, 91 — his character and antecedents, iv. 10, 11, 12, 14, 17, 18, 19, 47, 83, 91—his inaction during the Heavy Dragoon charge, 162, 165 note—his misconception of Lord Lucan's order, 166, 172, 174, 177, 189, 191—the charge of the Light Brigade, 203 *et seq.*, 205, 208, 209, 211, 213, 220, 223, 224, 225, 226, 231, 243 note, 249, 250, 251, 252 *et*

seq.—his retreat, 256 note, 262, 280, 287, 309—the remnants of his brigade, 314, 316, 318, 321, 325, 338, 345, 346, 347, 348, 350, 351, 352, 353—the heroic character of the attack, 355, 362, 363; v. 1, 42—at Inkerman, but late, 388, 389 note; vi. 369, 370 note, 372; viii. 257.
Cardwell, Mr, vi. 318, 326 note, 351.
Careenage Ravine, the, v. 5, 9—progress of the fight in the, 12, 16, 36, 39, 65, 83, 84 *et seq.*—road along the channel of the, 99, 111, 114, 116, 132 *et seq.*—the Under-road column ascend the, 141 *et seq.*, 143, 145, 175, 180, 318, 383, 441, 448, 463, 469, 473; viii. 96, 98, 154 *et seq.*
Careening Bay, iii. 122 *et seq.*, 166 note, 289.
Carlton, Lieutenant, checks attack at Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 99.
Carmichael, Captain, v. 63, 118, 230.
Carmichael (95th), v. 255, 256, 261.
Carnegie, Admiral, iii. 416, 442.
Carnegie, Captain, iii. 458 note.
Carpenter, ii. 431.
Carpenter, Colonel, v. 135 note, 193.
Castelbajac, M., i. 188, 189, 482, 494 note.
Castlereagh, Lord, ii. 120 note.
Casualties, list of English, on Mount Inkerman, v. 446.
Cathcart, Augustus, v. 266.
Cathcart, Sir George, General, commander of the 4th Division, the Dormant Commission he held, v. 20—its apparent effect on his temper, 21, 22—his Division at the Alma, ii. 504—posted during the flank march on the Belbec with his own Division and some cavalry under orders to keep open free communication with the Katcha, iii. 79—his subsequent march to the south side of Sebastopol followed by a conviction that he had found a weak place in the defences, and could carry the fortress in a summary way, 237-239, and notes—the orders he received from Lord Raglan on the morning of the Balaclava battle, iv. 66—the strange colloquy that followed, *ib. et seq.*—he ultimately marched to the Col, 67—there he receives an order from Lord Raglan to 'advance immediately and recapture the redoubts,' 178—he advances, but leaves unexecuted the order to recapture the redoubts, *ib. et seq.*—required by the Government to give up to Lord Raglan the Dormant Commission, and does so becomingly, v. 22, 23—on the morning of Inkerman he (as well as Sir George Brown) takes upon himself to decline the aid of the troops which Bosquet was bringing to the support of Lord Raglan, 72, 73—arriving on the field of battle with his Rifle battalion, and asking Pennefather where its service was needed, he is answered by 'Everywhere!' and with generous readiness to answer appeals, he distributes, piecemeal, the 1700 men then already or nearly in hand, 235, 236, 237—having afterwards with him the 400 men forming the residue of his troops, he receives from Lord Raglan an order to move to the left in support to the Guards, and not to descend from the plateau, 241, 242—he, however, under some wild impulsion, moves down to his right and descends from the plateau, 243—after engaging his force (led by Torrens) in a charge triumphant and useless (244 *et seq.*) he soon finds himself under fire from a strong Russian column behind him, and with only 50 men of the 20th, undertakes to attack it, 266—the extraordinary conflict that followed, 267, 268—its result, 269—concerts further measures with Maitland, *ib. et seq.*—is killed, 270.
Cathcart's Hill, iii. 238; viii. 93.
Catherinburg battalions, v. 115 *et seq.*, 472.
Catherine, Empress, her ambition and plans, i. 86.
Catherine landing-place, iii. 375 *et seq.*
Cattle, large seizure of, vii. 4[illegible] and note.
Cattley's, Mr, warning regarding the prospect of having to winter the army in the Chersonese, iii. 491—Lord Raglan's reception of his statement, 493.
Caucasus, Army of the, ii. 100.
Causeway Heights, the, bridging over the plain of Balaclava, iv. 32 *et seq.*—the Russians place guns on, 55 *et seq.*, 84, 85—do. Ridge, *ib.* 91, 183, 187 *et seq.*, 212 *et seq.*—the Russian fire from, 221, 240, 275, 278, 279, 287, 291 *et seq.*, 306, 329, 337 *et seq.*
Causeway, or great Post-road, traversing the field of the Alma, ii. 230, 233—batteries, 241, 305, 3[illegible], 359, 384, 387—withdrawal of the batteries, 417, 422, 496, 527, 536.
Cavaignac, General, i. 243.
Cavalry for a campaign, the task of selecting generals of, iv. 1.
Cave, Lieutenant, viii. 176.

[illegible]vour, Count, intervention of, in the war, vii. 214, 370.
Cayenne, transportation of Frenchmen to the penal colony of, i. 298.
Central Bastion, the, iii. 123 note, 134, 302 *et seq.*, 310, 342 *et seq.*, 354, 356, 364 *et seq.*—partially destroyed, 367—silenced, vii. 187—new works in front of, 201—its part in the combat of the 22d of May, viii. 15, 18, 19—its batteries brought to ruin, but restored by Todleben, 20, 21.
Chadwick, Lieutenant, iv. 222, 248, 317.
Chaix, i. 256.
Chamberlayne, Count, iv. 222.
Champeron, Colonel, iv. 265.
Champion, Major, at the Alma, ii. 342, 343 note—at Inkerman, v. 6, 13, 14, 226 note, 255, 256—mortally wounded, 257, 258.
Champion's wing of the 95th happily placed at first, but subdivided to meet pressing wants, v. 226.
Changarnier, General, i. 243.
Chapman, Captain, at night attack on Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 100.
Chapman's or Left Attack, iii. 351, 362, 468 *et seq.*, v. 36 *et seq.*
Charge of the Light Brigade, led by Cardigan, iv. 161 *et seq.*
Charge of the Three Hundred, led by Scarlett, iv. 115 *et seq.*
Charlton (Sub.), iv. 145.
Charner, Admiral, iii. 326 note.
Charras, Colonel, i. 243.
Charteris, Captain, iv. 50 note, 280.
Chase, Lieutenant, iii. 428.
'Chasseurs d'Afrique,' iv. 263.
'Chasseurs [illegible]reen,' viii. 105.
Chatham, Lord, vi. 63 note.
Chelsea Commissioners on the road question, vi. 116 note.
Chelsea report quoted, vi. 138 note, 139.
Chelsea, the inquiry at, vi. 371—the report of the Board, 375, 376—the [illegible]rt of the report in which the Board showed the cause of the [illegible] sufferings, 377—acquiescence of the State in this decision, 378, 379.
Chenu's 'Rapport au Conseil de Santé des Armées' referred to, vi. 179 note.
Chermside, Captain, R.A., at Inkerman, v. 372, 417 note, 430.
Chersonese, the, iii. 58, 68, 105, 212, 245—the defence of the, 286 *et seq.*—the strength of the position, 290—English encamp on the, 295, 312, 319, 349 note, 490—difficulty of wintering the army in the, 491, 496.
Chersonese batteries, the, iv. 337, 340.
Chersonese Bay, the, iii. 389, 392, 400.
Chersonese plateau, the, iii. 115 *et seq.*
Chersonese steamship, v. 100.
Chersonesus, Cape, ii. 160.
Cheska Spit, viii. 39 *et seq.*
Chestakoff, viii. 97.
Chester, Colonel, ii. 349, 374 note—killed, 382.
Chetwode, Captain, iii. 88 note, 89.
Chetwynd, Captain, iv. 207.
Chewton, Lord, at the Alma, killed, ii. 437.
Chodasiewicz, Captain, ii. 240 note *et seq.*, 294—quoted, 455, 493 note, 515, 530; v. 134.
Cholera on board the French and English vessels, ii. 136 *et seq.*—virulence of, at Belbec, iii. 78; vi. 158; viii. 254 *et seq.*
Chopped straw, the forage of the Levant, vi. 293.
Christian subjects of the Sultan, the, vii. 318.
Churches, strife between the Eastern and Western, i. 53.
Cimetière counter-approach, the, viii. 20, 21, 26—its recapture, 301.
Cimetière Lodgments, the, attacked, vii. 203—at length destroyed, 204.
Cimetière Ridge, the, viii. 15—measures for securing it taken by the French and the Russians, 16—the counter-approach alongside it, attacked and ultimately conquered by the French, 24.
Cimmerian Bosphorus, the, vii. 249; viii. 81, 259.
Circassia, ii. 112.
Circassian coast, the enemy's forced abandonment of the whole of the, viii. 80, 259.
Citate, ii. 64.
City Heights, old, v. 29.
Claremont, Colonel, v. 389 note.
Claremont, Major, ii. 304 note.
Clarendon, Lord, Minister for Foreign Affairs, his instruction to Lord Stratford, i. 116 *et seq.*—recognises it as the duty of England to protect the Sultan, 178 *et seq.*—exposes the difference between the words and acts of the Czar, 179—his remonstrance addressed to St Petersburg, 190—the Danubian occupation, 194, 330—on the harmony of the Powers, 331, 342—his interview with Count Walewski, 371 *et seq.*—instructs Lord Stratford to send for the fleet, 373—his reply to Baron Brunnow, 374—on the French proposals, 394 note—his polished de-

spatches, 419—his collective note, 434 *et seq.*, 461, 466—the summons to Russia, 468, 471, 501 *et seq.*—despatch of, demanding the evacuation of the Principalities, 530 — at Councils of War, vii. 237, 239.
Clarke, Major, iv. 113, 114, 131, 149.
'Clarke, Mrs,' scandal, vi. 79 note.
Cler, Colonel, vii. 68, 359.
Cleveland, Cornet, iv. 222, v. 389 note.
Clifford, Lieutenant Hugh, his exploit against a Russian column, v. 143, 145, 149 note, 151, 158, 173, 463, 479.
Clifton, ii. 359.
Clowes, Cornet, iv. 231, 234.
Clowes, Lieutenant, iv. 292, 316.
Clutterbuck, Ensign, v. 356.
Clutterbuck, Lieutenant, iv. 231, 316.
Clyde, Lord, iii. 5 note.
Coast batteries at Kertch, viii. 41 *et seq.*
Cobden, Richard, and his opposition to war, i. 425 *et seq.*—his views on the Vienna Note, 463, 497 *et seq.*
Cockerell, Surgeon, vii. 175, 176.
Cockrell, killed, ii. 498.
Codrington, General, ii. 264, 312, 318 and note, 319, 321, 323—his services, 329 *et seq.*, 332—his brigade at the Alma storms and carries the Great Redoubt, 339 *et seq.*, 359, 364 note, 366, 376 *et seq.*, 417, 427, 439, 454, 535; iii. 98 note—at Inkerman, v. 6 note, 37, 39, 65, 81, 82, 83 and note, 85, 86, 99, 116, 141, 400 note, 429.
Coffee, green, the supply of, to the soldiers, vi. 137 note.
Col, the, iv. 65 note, 178 note, 33, 340; v. 36, 39, 41 *et seq.*, 75; vi. 107, 108, 109—Lord Raglan's measures with respect to the road by the, 114—vain efforts made to 'metal' it, 115—vital importance of having a metalled road, 116, 384.
'Col de Balaclava,' iii. 116, 286 *et seq.*
Col-Puygellier, Captain, i. 222.
Colborne, Colonel, iv. 116 note.
Coldstream Guards, the, ii. 442 *et seq.*—loss of the, 493.
Cole, Colonel, viii. 178.
Colebrooke, Sir Edward, quoted, ii. 168.
Coles, Commander Cowper, viii. 69.
Coles, Lieutenant, iii. 433.
Columns, movable, ii. 200.
Colville, Captain, ii. 324 note.
Combat fought by the 57th, under Captain Stanley, v. 310.
Combats, personal, v. 251.
Commander-in-Chief at the Horse Guards, vi. 23.
Commissariat Commissioners, their animadversions used as a ground for reviving the attacks of the previous year, vi. 370—judicial inquiry into the truth of their animadversions, *ib.*—constitution of the Court, 371—its proceedings, *ib.*—the report of the Board, 375—the now cleared and narrowed state of the controversy respecting the cause of the 'avertible' sufferings, 376.
Commissariat service, the, vi. 36.
Commissariat system, commission appointed to inquire into the, vi. 321—report, 368—animadversions on three general officers and one colonel, 369.
Commons, the vote of the, for a committee of inquiry, vi. 352, 353—committee appointed, 354, 355, 356, 357, 361—rejection of the motion to make the committee a 'secret' one, 362—its report, 364, 367.
Compass, march of infantry by, iii. 82 *et seq.*
Coney, ii. 431; iv. 145.
Conference of 14th April, the, vii. 218.
Conference of Three, the, vii. 23—Canrobert's agreement to decision of, 26—his condition imposed, 27, 353.
Conolly, ii. 313, 382.
Conolly, Captain, v. 165 note.
Conolly, Lieut., v. 8—in April bombardment, vii. 172.
Conolly, Major, iv. 99, 150-152.
Constantine, Cape, iii. 404.
Constantine, Fort, ii. 160; iii. 31—its great strength, 38-67, 119 *et seq.*, 391, 394—its nature and defences, 396 *et seq.*, 405 *et seq.*, 449-452, 464, 466.
Constantine of Russia, the Grand Duke, quoted, ii. 18.
Constantinople, reception there of news announcing recall of Kertch expedition, vii. 270, 374.
Conway, v. 160.
Cook, Captain Edwin, iv. 230, 316.
Cookery, defective, vi. 194—its effect on the health of the men, *ib.*
Cowper, Mr Henry, viii. 71 *et seq.*
Corbet, Lieutenant, v. 86 note.
Corps of Observation, operations against Malakoff entrusted to, vii. 36.
Corps of Reserve, French Emperor's concealment regarding, vii. 232, 234; viii. 7.
Cossack Knoll, v. 7, 91.
Cossack Rise, v. 91.
Cossacks, the, iii. 167.
Cossacks as they were in the great war, viii. 303.
'Cossacks of the Don,' the, viii. 61.
Council, the, of 4th March, vii. 74—of 6th March, 76.

Counter-approaches, the Russian attempt to retake the, viii. 306.
Countermines, Todleben's aggressive, vii. 16—Todleben's system of, 33, 354.
'Counterpoise' plan, the, at Vienna Conference, vii. 322, 331.
Counter-works on Mount Inkerman, import of, vii. 72, 74, 75, 76, 104, 356.
Coup d'Etat, immediate effect of the, upon the tranquillity of Europe, i. 324.
Covenanters, descendants of the, as warriors, iv. 124.
Cowley, Lord, i. 101, 177, 328, 388, 396 note; ii. 123 note; iii. 520—his remonstrance to the French Government against its accounts of erroneous statements regarding the battle of the Alma, 522, 524; vii. 237, 274—interview between French Emperor and, 339.
Craigie, Mr, iii. 437, 446 note.
Craven, Mrs Dacre, and the ladies of the Sisterhood, vi. 435 note.
Crim Tartary, ii. 164—winter in, vi. 95.
Crimean Army Fund, the, vi. 392—administered by Tower and Egerton, 393, 395, 396—success of the administrators, 399 *et seq.*—400 note—Lord Raglan's letter to the administrators, Tower and Egerton, 404.
CRIMEAN WAR, ORIGIN OF THE. See the 'Contents' table of vol. i.
Crofton, Colonel, ii. 431; v. 210, 244—his charge with some men of the 20th, 246.
Crofton's troops, v. 225, 226.
Crofton's wing, v. 237, 276.
Crow's Nest Battery, the, vii. 156 and note.
Cumberland, first Duke of, referred to by George III., vi. 19 note.
Cumming, Dr, vi. 443 note.
Cunynghame, Colonel, v. 246.
Curaçao, the war-ship, vii. 50.
Curie, Captain, viii. 114.
[illegible]e, ii. 383.
[illegible], ii. 493 note.
[illegible]r-worship, viii. 76.
Czar's declaration of war in 1828, i. 15 note.
Czar's infantry, the, in need of encouragement, viii. 215—whence apparently the fabrication of the 18th of June, *ib.*
Czars, ambition of the, i. 53.

Dacres, Captain, ii. 184 note, 186 note; iii. 21, 409 *et seq.*, 430 *et seq.*; v. 27; vi. 164 note.
Dacres, Colonel, ii. 309; v. 4 note, 183 note, 195 note; vi. 165 note; vii. 139, 167.
D'Aguilar, Captain, v. 372, 374, 431.
Dalesme, General, assumes provisional command of French Engineers, vii. 198.
Dallas, Captain, v. 82 note.
D'Allonville, General, iv. 68, 188, 202 note, 264—his attack, 265, 267, 275, 306—his brilliant achievement, 339—his Chasseurs, 344.
Dalrymple, Colonel, ii. 437, 441 note.
Dalrymple White, Colonel, iv. 112, 114, 116, 131.
Dalton, v. 126, 130.
Dalzell, Colonel, v. 356.
Damer, Dawson, v. 206.
Dandelion weed, the French soldiers used the, vi. 4 note.
Dannenberg, General, his command, i. 53, 98; v. 49 *et seq.*, 57, 75, 84, 87, 110—his attempt to overturn Mentschikoff's arrangements for the attack of Mount Inkerman, 111, 115, 177, 179, 199, 215, 240, 262, 312, 315, 316, 318, 369, 380, 401, 412 *et seq.*, 414, 420, 421, 428, 430—his altercation with Prince Mentschikoff, his ostensible chief, 433, 434, 436, 449, 453, 465 note, 468 *et seq.*, 473—removal of, from command of 4th Army Corps, vii. 39.
Danube, the, i. 361 note, 365; ii. 62, 63, 64, 90, 92, 97; iii. 253—freedom of navigation of, vii. 317.
Danube, Lower, the, the main outlet for the products of Central Europe, i. 31, 384, 397 *et seq.*—crossed by Gortchakoff, 475, 478; ii. 44, 49, 107, 109, 132, 136.
Danubian Principalities, the, i. 184—the Czar's scheme for occupying them, 185—orders for the occupation of, 194—Czar's occupation of, vii. 303, 305, 306.
Darby Griffith, Colonel, iv. 357.
Dardanelles, the, vi. 93, 147—proposed opening of, vii. 319.
Dardanelles, the Straits of the, i. 342, 343—policy of Russia in regard to, 347, 350—Lord Stratford on the passage of the, 373, 374, 403; ii. 43, 99.
Dariel Pass, the, i. 447.
Daubeney, Colonel, his singular charge at Inkerman, v. 334, 340, 350—its effect upon the issue of the combat, 352, 410 note, 479.
D'Aumale, Duc, iv. 263.
D'Aurelle's brigade thrusts itself forward

in front of Prince Napoleon, ii. 407 *et seq.*—movement of, 515, 520; v. 78.
Daveney, Colonel, iv. 72, 75.
Day, Lieutenant, viii. 68.
Dead, burial of the, by the French at night, vi. 186 note.
Deane (Sub.), iv. 140.
Deaths in the hospitals, vi. 215.
De Camas, Colonel, v. 213, 285, 289, 290—mortally wounded, 361, 448.
De Flotte, i. 256.
Delane, Mr, and his task as editor, vi. 245 *et seq.*, 254.
De Lourmel's brigade, v. 78.
Demeanour of England, vi. 221—the nation steadfast, 228.
De Nöé, Vicomte, iv. 164.
Derby, Lord, vi. 318.
Derriman of the Caradoc, viii. 314.
De Salis, Major, iv. 231, 288, 292.
De Sallis, General, vii. 206.
Desart Burton, Captain, iv. 145.
De Vine, Mr, at April bombardment, vii. 159 and note, 365.
Dew, ii. 498.
'Diamond' Battery, iii. 490.
Dickson, ii. 313.
Dickson, Captain, v. 165 note.
Dickson, Collingwood, v. 102 note, 372—he succeeds Gambier, 373, 375, 377, 395, 397, 416, 431, 437, 439.
Dickson, Colonel, ii. 399, 414, v. 186 note.
Diebitsch, i. 65.
'Die-hards' (57th) at Inkerman, v. 310 note.
Disappointments, fresh, and losses, note on, viii. 313.
Disraeli, Mr, vi. 317 note.
Ditch, the, viii. 158 *et seq.*, 173, 206.
Ditches, the, the Allies thrown back into, note on, viii. 310.
Division, 2d, strength of, present at battle of Inkerman under General Pennefather, v. 485.
Dixon, Major, v. 151, 158.
Dobrudja, the, i. 475; ii. 109, 135, 136, 137.
Dockyard ravine, the, iii. 471; v. 81; viii. 103, 158 *et seq.*
'Dog-tent,' the French, vi. 172 note.
Don, the mouths of the, viii. 61.
DORMANT COMMISSION, SIR GEORGE CATHCART AND THE, v. 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 242 note; vii. 290.
Douglas, Colonel, ii. 221; iv. 207, 230, 269, 273, 276, 294, 296, 298, 307, 321 note—narrative, ii. 452 note.
Dowdall, ii. 383.
Dowling, Lieut., v. 246.
Drouyn de Lhuys, M., i. 343 note, 40[illegible]—Lord Cowley's interview with, iv. 522, 524; vii. 313, 317, 320, 328, 335—interview between French Emperor and, 341—resignation of, 342, 344, 347.
Drummond (Adj.), at Inkerman, v. 207.
Drummond, Captain, iii. 35, 394, 395 note; vi. 161.
Drummond, Mr Henry, vi. 356, 361, 365 note.
Dubos, [illegible]89, 390, 402, 405, 410 note.
Ducasse, 'Précis Historique,' quoted, ii. 508.
Dudley and Ward, Lord, i. 15 note.
Dulac, i. 242.
Dumouriez's system of fighting, ii. 494; vi. 68.
Dundas, Admiral, his squadron, i. 373 note; ii. 101—commander of the English fleet, 105—his sterling, manful character, *ib.* *et seq.*—his strong common-sense, 106—his resolve, *ib.*, 143, 144, 146, 148, 151, 154, 157, 162, 176, 184 note; iii. 8 note *et seq.*—his squadron, 145—confronted by the inherent difficulty of navally attacking Sebastopol, 314, 319—Lord Raglan's letter to, 321, 326, 387 *et seq.*, 390, 391—his conference with his ship captains, 392—his attack on Sebastopol, 400 *et seq.*, 410, 419, 423 note, 445, 448 note, 455, 456, 459; iv. 36—hands over command of fleet, vii. 41.
Dundas, Mr Robert, iii. 56 note—his measure creating the third of the three new administrative forces, 80, 84.
Dunn, Lieut. Alexander, v. 230.
'Dunrobin' or 'Sutherland' Hillock, iv. 75.
Dupin, President of the French Chamber of Deputies, i. 244.
Duval, i. 256.
Duvanköi, the village of, iii. 28 *et seq.*, 161 *et seq.*

E[illegible]t Jut, v. 107, 133, 177, 199 *et* 21[illegible]5 note, 391, 438 *et seq.*
East Sapper's Road, cutting of, vii. 38.
Eastern campaign, the phases of the, in their bearing upon the question of supply, vi. 93.
'Eastern Question,' the, and its associations, i. 35.
Eddington, Captain, ii. 342, 383.
Eddington, the Younger, ii. 383.
Eden, Captain, iii. 409 *et seq.*, 429.
Edward, Prince of Saxe-Weimar, ii. 362 note, 489 note—at Inkerman, v. 71, 109—his successful attack, 145, 173.

dwards, Captain, vi. 212 note.
Egerton, Colonel, ii. 364—his magnificent charge at Inkerman, v. 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 155, 156, 157, 158, 173, 180, 320, 329 note, 331, 335, 338, 340, 367, 445—brilliant achievement by, vii. 209—death of, 210.
Egerton, Hon. Algernon, in conjunction with Mr Tower, administering Crimean Army Fund, vi. 392, 393 *et seq.*
'Egerton's Pit,' viii. 110, 116 *et seq.*
Egypt, the Czar proposing possession of, to England, i. 89.
Electric field-telegraph, construction of, vii. 41.
Ellenborough, Lord, viii. 249.
Ellesmere, Lord, vi. 393 note, 405.
Ellice, Mr, vi. 361.
Elliot, Captain, ii. 492 note.
Elliot, Lieutenant Alexander, iv. 24—his services in India, *ib.*, 41, 87 *et seq.*—takes part at Scarlett's side in the great Heavy Cavalry charge, 102, 106, 109, 128, 130 note.
Elliot, Sir Frederick, his gifts and experience, vi. 13 note, 45.
Elmsall, Captain, iv. 144, 283.
Elphinstone, Lieutenant, viii. 117.
Elrington, Captain, v. 84.
'Eltchi, the Great,' i. 94.
Elton, Captain, V.C., highly praised for his service in attack of the 'Quarries,' viii. 114.
Emperor of the French, Louis Napoleon appointed, i. 320—his visit to England and his campaigning plan, vii. 236 *et seq.*, 28[illegible], 374—conferences regarding, 28[illegible] 288, 289.
Empress, the French, in England, vii. 237.
England an enigma to political students of the Continent prior to 1851, i. 78.
England, constitutional system of, in its bearing upon the conduct of foreign affairs, i. 9—foreign policy of, 15 note, [illegible]4—its attitude on the maintenance of [illegible]e Ottoman empire, *ib.*
[illegible]land, her share in causing [illegible]war, [illegible]. 494.
England, Sir Richard, General, ii. 270, 401 note, 420, 421, 453, 504, 524; iii. 306 note; iv. 68; v. 35 note, 36, 67, 80 *et seq.*; viii. 194 note.
England, the war administration of, vi. 12.
English, loss of the, by the fight on Mount Inkerman, v. 444.
English, want of hands to make a road, vi. 384.
English army, freedom of the, from crime, ii. 193.
English army, the food provided for the, vi. 135—the shelter, 140—hutting the troops, *ib.*—warm clothing, 141—provision for the sick and wounded, 142.
English army, the sufferings of the, vi. 188, 190, 191, 193, 194, 195, 198, 199, 201, 206, 211, 212, 213—mortality in the hospitals on the Bosphorus, 215, 216—the strategic decisions which resulted in obliging the Allies to winter upon the Chersonese Heights, 219.
English fleet, extract from Admiralty return showing the number of men and the quantity of material landed from the, to aid the land forces in the siege of Sebastopol, down to the 28th of October, iii. 567.
English Heights, the, v. 93, 124, 155, 185, 210, 271.
English soldiery, undue amount of work cast upon the, vi. 155—their state of health, 157—overtasked, French aid to, vii. 29, 354.
English trenches, refusals of the French to guard the, in pursuance of their Emperor's plan, vii. 285.
Ennismore, Lord, ii. 437.
Enterprise the best means of extrication, extracts showing the opinion of French and English officers on, iii. 566.
Ergominischoff, Captain, iii. 472.
Ernshoff, viii. 126 note, 217 note.
Errol, ii. 321 note.
Eskel, the villagers of, and the Czars, i. 2 note; ii. 530.
Espinasse, iv. 68.
Espinasse, General, v. 40.
Espinasses, the, ii. 542.
Estcourt, General, ii. 505; vi. 196 note, 312, 342—the death of, Lord Raglan affected by, viii. 261—Lord Raglan's inability to attend the funeral of, 263.
Eupatoria, ii. 161—the occupation of, 166, 168, 176, 218, 233; vi. 121 note, 137—condition of things in and near, vii. 45, 46, 47—Mentschikoff's resolve to attack, 48, 49, 50, 51—the attack attempted by Khrouleff, and repulse of the Russians by the Turks, 55, 57—held thenceforth by Turkish troops unmolested till after the close of the war, 58.
Eupatoria cable, the, vii. 213.
Europe in 1850, i. 5—standing armies, *ib.*—personal government, *ib.*—comparison between this system and that of governing through a council, *ib.*—personal government in Russia, Austria, and Prussia, 9—administration of foreign affairs under the Sultan, *ib.*—

constitutional system of England in its bearing upon the conduct of foreign affairs, *ib.*—and of France down to the 2d of December 1851, 11—power of Russia, 12—power of Turkey, 13—the seeming decay of the Ottoman empire, 18—Russian longings for Turkey, 19—aspect of Europe in reference to the Turkish empire, 30—policy of Austria, Prussia, France, England, and the lesser States of Europe, 30 *et seq.*
Europe, lesser States of, foreign policy of the, i. 36.
Euxine, the, i. 346, 347, 350, 384, 388, 390—English and French fleets enter the, 395, 478—the Russian flag in, 483; ii. 44, 69, 90, 100, 193, 278, 510, iv. 28; vi. 100, 114—proposed feint on the, vii. 242.
Evans (23d Reg.), ii. 382.
Evans, Sir De Lacy, General, at the Alma; the important and effective step he took personally, ii. 360—a skilled tactician, 417—he understood the battle, 418—the effective part he took in the battle with the part of his division left under his personal control, chap. xvi. sec. 28—commanding at the Lesser Inkerman, his wise dispositions and prompt defeat of the assailing force, v. 3-19. See ii. 262, 264, 266 note, 278, 279, 304 note, 308, 310, 313, 360, 365 note, 413, 417, 418, 420, 421, 428, 454 note, 503; iii. 306 note; iv. 25; v. 4, 6 note, 7, 9, 14, 17, 38 note, 40, 62, 101, 124, 464 note—the counsel offered by, 482 and note.
Evans, William, ii. 347 note.
Ewart, Captain, v. 64, 66, 120 note.
Expeditions undertaken by England in the seventeen years from Feb. 1793 to close of 1809, vi. 453.
Eyre, General, ii. 497 note; v. 80; viii. 198—the attack victoriously led by, on 18th of June, 201—he is wounded, 203, 211, 213—the English strengthen their hold of the ground captured by, 265.

Failly, General, his brigade, viii. 97 *et seq.*, 154.
Fairclough, Captain, v. 357.
Farren, Colonel, v. 337.
Faubourg, counter-approaches of the, vii. 184; viii. 196 *et seq.*
Faucher, M., i. 232.
Faucheux's brigade, viii. 148, 152 note.
Fay, Captain, v. 72 note, 392 note.
Federoff's, Colonel, advance, v. 5, 6, 12—grievously wounded, 14, 464 note.
Fedioukine Heights, iv. 291 *et seq.*; v. 49.
Fedioukine Hills, the, iv. 31, 71, 155, 174, 176 *et seq.*, 187 *et seq.*, 205, 216, 220, 221, 240, 256, 265, 267, 275, 279, 306; v. 70.
Ferguson, Cornet, iv. 145.
Ferik, Bekir Pasha, ii. 58.
Fielding, Captain, ii. 441 note.
'Fifty-seventh, die hard!' v. 310.
Filder, Mr, Commissary-General, v. 27; vi. 2, 4 note, 37, 38—his authority a source of evil, 41, 94 note, 95 note, 102, 121 and note, 122—his request to the Treasury Board for 2000 tons of hay, 123, 126 *et seq.*, 136 note, 138, 163 note, 165 note, 363 note—his administration, 368, 376, 377.
Fin, Consul, i. 51 note.
Fisher (Sub.), iv. 140.
Fisher, Cornet, iii. 301.
Fisher, Lieut. A'Court, the engineer officer with Yea's column at the attack of the Redan, 18th of June, viii. 182, 185—his words to Yea at the verge of the abattis, and what followed, 187, 188, 189, 191, 308.
Fitzgerald, Captain, ii. 382, 431.
Fitzgibbon, Lieut. Lord Viscount, iv. 231, 234, 316.
Fitzmayer, ii. 309; v. 4 note, 106, 122, 174, 182, 323, 371 note, 431.
Flagstaff Bastion, the, iii. 123 note, 125 *et seq.*, 193, 216, 241, 302 *et seq.*—preparations to storm the, 312, 337, 342, 354, 356, 362, 377, 468 *et seq.*, 476, 484, 534, 538; v. 35, 38, 456, 480, 481; vii. 6, 11, 13, 21—French mining operations against, 32, 33, 35, 43, 180, 187 *et seq.*, 189, 191, 192, 198, 199, 200, 352; viii. 94, 135, 139, 234, 245, 266, 268—proposed French assault on the, 270, 275.
Flahault, Count, i. 245.
Flank march by the Allies: Lord Raglan favours an attack on the South Side, iii. 56—reasons for a flank march, 57—Sir John Burgoyne and his Memorandum, 63 *et seq.*—Lord Raglan instructs him to propound the flank march to Sir A. Arnaud, 68—Lord Raglan's conference with St Arnaud, 70—determination to attempt the flank march, 71—state of St Arnaud, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's uncertainty as to St Arnaud's motives, 72—the avoidance of the Star Fort, the second of the 'lost occasions,' 74—the Allies still in ignorance of the enemy's plans and movements, 75—virulence of cholera at Belbec, 78—Lord Raglan's dispositions

for the flank march, 79—commencement of the march, 81—Lord Raglan effects a reconnaissance, 83—comes in contact with a Russian force which proved to be the rear of Prince Mentschikoff's army, 86—his way of dealing with the emergency, 88—retreat of the Russians, 90—movements of Russian troops, 92—the march resumed, 94—surrender of Balaclava, 99—Lord Raglan's satisfaction on recovering sea communication, 101—he retains possession of Balaclava, 102—the Allies take up their ground in front of, 105—Cathcart's march, *ib.*—cessation of St Arnaud's command, 107—the command resigned into the hands of Canrobert, 109—death of St Arnaud, 112—statement by Sir Edward Wetherall regarding, 542, 545.
Flank march by Prince Mentschikoff with his field army, iii. chap. ix.
Fleets, the, ordered to move to the neighbourhood of the Dardanelles, i. 181—they enter the Euxine, 395.
Fleury, General, i. 225—his career as a soldier, 229—he searches Algiers and finds St Arnaud, 230—gratitude of the brethren of the Elysée due to, 317; ii. 7, 9, 541; viii. 240.
Fleury, Sergeant-Major, killed, ii. 515 note.
Food of the French army, vi. 134—Lord Raglan on, *ib.* note.
Food, the, provided for the English army, vi. 135.
Forage, the want of, vi. 12—recourse to England for hay, 122, 124, 321, 377.
Forbes, Mr, iii. 407.
Fordyce, Major, v. 126—his encounter with a Russian battalion, 146, 149 note, 173, 180.
Fore Ridge, the, v. 94 *et seq.*, 124, 166, 196 *et seq.*, 271, 316 note *et seq.*, 373, 379, 395 *et seq.*, 433, 451.
Frey, General, i. 242, 249; ii. 261, 413, 520, 542; iii. 285, 290, 310, 3[illegible] note; v. 35 note—position of his French siege corps, 36, 37, 77, 78, 87, 463 note, 473 note—removed from command of 1st Corps d'Armée, vii. 39, 40.
Forrest, Major, ii. 139.
Forster, Captain, iv. 140, 153.
Foster, M. M., iii. 436.
Four Demands, the, vii. 308, 317—attitude of Austria towards, 309—acceptance of, by Czar, *ib.*—new formulation of, 310.
Fourgeot, Colonel, v. 391.
Fox, Mr, vi. 27 note, 57.
Foy, General, iii. 298 note.
France, constitutional system of, in its bearing upon the conduct of foreign affairs down to 2d Dec. 1851, i. 11—one of the Great Powers of Europe, 32.
France, her share in causing the war, i. 491—the war administration of, vi. 6.
Francis Joseph, the Emperor, i. 9, 31, 436, 439—effect of personal government by, 478.
Franklin, Captain, ii. 309 note.
Frederick William, King, conduct of foreign affairs by, vii. 305—his exclusion from Conference of Great Powers, 311, 314.
French army, the character of, ii. 404 *et seq.*—food of the, vi. 134.
French army, the sufferings and losses sustained by the, vi. 171 *et seq.*—extent to which the sufferings and losses of the French as a whole became masked from observers on the Chersonese, 186, 187.
French army, *morale* of, under Canrobert, vii. 295—Lord Raglan on, 296—Rousset on, *ib.*—effect of Pélissier on, 297—feeling of the, generally, towards Lord Raglan, viii. 292, 295.
French attempt to annex an English trophy, ii. 531.
French fleet, the, suddenly ordered to Salamis, i. 101.
French infantry ceased to take part in the battle of Inkerman, authorities showing the time when the, v. 504.
French, loss of the, by the fight on Mount Inkerman, v. 448.
French losses, the, much more than compensated by reinforcements, vi. 383.
French reconnaissances of Balaclava plain, vii. 39.
French Republic, state of the, in November 1851, 205.
French troops, effect of anxious suspense upon, i. 313.
French, troubled counsels of the, vii. 216 *et seq.*
French works on Mount Inkerman, skill in construction of, vii. 38, 355.
Fuad Effendi, Turkish Minister for Foreign Affairs, i. 99.
Fuad Pasha and Neutrality principle, vii. 322.
Furious, the war-ship, vii. 50.
Fusiliers, 7th, note respecting the operations of, ii. 552.
Fyer, ii. 321 note.

Gagarin, Prince, i. 50.
Gallipoli, ii. 31, 39, 46, 136; vi. 239, 338.

Gambier, Colonel, v. 371 and note.
Gap, the, v. 189, 208—imperative need of troops at, 239, 241—left open, 303, 450.
Garari, Prince. See Gagarin.
Garden Batteries, the, iii. 468; vii. 153 note.
Garden-wall Battery, the, viii. 202.
Gardner, Colonel, viii. 21.
Garnier, viii. 158.
Garrard, ii. 383.
Garrison, strength of the, grounds of statement as to, iii. 571.
Gaussen, Lieut. S., iii. 442.
Gavin, Dr H., vi. 446.
Gendre, Captain, his 'Matériaux pour servir,' &c., iii. 40 note, 142 note, 146, 174 note, 185, 192, 368 note, 377 *et seq.*
Genitchi, viii. 64—operations at, 65, 74.
German Confederation, the, and their attitude on the Eastern Question, i. 491.
Gervais Battery, the, viii. 139, 151, 158 *et seq.*—the French operations against, 193, 196, 197 note—recapture of the, 199, 207.
Gheisk, viii. 64—operations at, 73.
Gibson, Lieut., v. 165 note.
Gilbert, v. 286 note.
Gipps, ii. 437.
Giurgevo, ii. 56—the battle of, 57—arrival of Gortschakoff at, 61, 63; iv. 41 note.
Gladstone, Mr, the share he had in bringing about the war, i. 388, 420, 422 *et seq.*, 460, 497 *et seq.*
Glazebrook, Captain, v. 347.
Glyn (Sub.), iv. 145.
Glyn, Lieutenant, ii. 61.
Glyn, Mr St Leger, vi. 394.
Goad, Captain, iv. 222, 229, 317.
Goad, Cornet G. M., iv. 222 note.
Golden Horde, the, viii. 56.
Golden Horn, the, i. 346; vi. 147.
Goldie's, General, brigade, strength of, v. 83 note, 237, 306, 310, 364—his command, 365, 366—he is slain, 369.
Goodlake, Captain, iii. 354 note; v. 5—his adventure with the enemy, 10—his body of volunteers, *ib.* note, 16, 53 note, 108—interposition of his moving picket, 116, 178.
Gordon, Colonel Alexander, the animadversions of the Commissariat Commissioners on, vi. 369, 370.
Gordon, Lieutenant Charles, viii. 180—a soldier marked out for strange destinies, 181.
Gordon, Lieut. Sir William, iv. 222, 229, 317.
Gordon, Major, iv. 172 note—in night attack on Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 91—in command of Engineers against Kertch, 257.
Gordon's or Right Attack, iii. 351, 468, 471; v. 36 *et seq.*, 469—Kamtchatka Lunette assailed by, vii. 185—fighting for lodgments in front of, 208; viii. 110, 118.
Gortschakoff, Prince Alexander, at Vienna Conference, vii. 313—character of, 316—as Minister at Austrian Court, 310, 347.
Gortschakoff, Prince Michael, and the evacuation of the Principalities, i. 361 note—he crosses the Lower Danube, 475; ii. 61, 62—the forces under his command, 241, 286, 316 note—his introduction of Todleben, iii. 176—the strength of his army-corps at Inkerman, v. 49, 66, 68, 69, 70, 71, 75, 87, 106, 110, 235, 261, 304 note, 312—his attitude, 379, 414, 418, 421, 434—inaction of, with 20,000 fresh troops, 455—its cause, 456, 473, 474—assumes command of Russian forces, vii. 108—fitness of choice, *ib.*; viii. 23, 41, 62, 65, 92, 206 *et seq.*, 226.
Gortschakoff, Prince Peter, commands the forces opposed to the English at Alma, ii. 370 *et seq.*, 429 note, 456—his narrative, 457 note, 465, 502—on the Russian retreat, 513 note, 537.
Gough, Major, ii. 382.
Gout and its power, vi. 329 note.
Government, personal, [illegible]5—comparison between this system and that of governing through a council, *ib.*—in Russia, Austria, and Prussia, 9—effect of, by the Czar, 477—by the Emperor of Austria, 478—by the King of Prussia, 479—by the French Emperor, *ib.*
Government, the new, the war measures of the, vi. 320—continued anger of our people, 322 *et seq.*
Go[illegible] Lieut.-Colonel, v. 362.
Grach[illegible]onel, ii. 50.
Graham, Captain, iii. 436, 441 note, 44[illegible] *et seq.*
Graham, General Sir Gerald, viii. 165, 167, 168, 169, 171, 175, 176—the admiration bestowed on his ladder-party, 177, 180.
Graham, Lieut., at April bombardment, vii. 152, 161—struck down by roundshot, 162 and note, 171.
Graham, Sir James, iii. 325 note, 408—refuses a receiving ship, vi. 145 note, 318, 320 note, 351; viii. 249.
Grand Dukes Nicholas and Michael, ar-

rival of, at Sebastopol, vii. 77—significance of their presence, 78.
Grant and Jeffreys, v. 157, 158—positions taken up and held by, at Inkerman, *ib.*
Grant, Colonel Thornton, his command at Inkerman, v. 63, 130, 132, 139, 148, 173, 180; viii. 116 *et seq.*
Grant, Mr, vi. 48 note.
Granville, Lieut., ii. 347 note.
Grape-shot wound on the head not resulting in death, viii. 309.
Graves, Lieut., and his ladder-party, viii. 182.
Greathead, Lieut., iii. 490.
Greek and Latin Churches, quarrel between the monks of the, in Palestine, i. 37.
Greek Church in Turkey, the, and a Russian Protectorate, i. 128, 144, 145—desire for the protectorate of, a cause of the war, 360; iii. 171.
Greenfell, Mr Henry, vi. 329 note.
Greenhill trenches, the, iii. 354 note.
'Green Hill,' the, iii. 305, 312, 351, 368, 468, 472.
Greenwood, Captain, ii. 382.
Gregg, Major, iii. 530 note.
Greig, Major, iii. 141.
Grenadier Guards, ii. 438 *et seq.*—loss of the, 493—combats sustained by the, v. 202.
Grenadier Guards and Sir George Brown, note on the, ii. 563.
Grenville, Lord, and 'The Talents' Administration, vi. 19 note.
Greville, Captain, v. 266.
Greville, Fitzroy, Captain, v. 263.
Grey, Lord, i. 453; viii. 249.
Gribbe, General, iv. 43, 52.
Griffith, Colonel, iv. 113, 131 note.
Guards, the, ii. 351—the rivalry between the and the line, 352, 361.
Guards of English trenches, fewness of, vii. 20, 352.
Gubbins, Captain, v. 102 note.
Gubbins, Lieutenant, vii. 212 note.
Guérin, Colonel, vii. 207.
Guthrie, Mr, President of the College of Surgeons, vi. 49 note.
Guyon, General, ii. 112.
Gwilt, Captain, vii. 211 note.

Hadji-Boulat, ii. 229.
Hadji road, ii. 285.
Hafiz Pasha, i. 50.
Haines, Colonel, v. 357—undertakes the defence of the Barrier, 364, 366, 367, 369, 370, 384, 406, 418, 422, 426.
Halford, Lieutenant, iv. 145.
Halkett, Major, iv. 230, 316.
Hall, Dr, vi. 146—his examination of the hospitals in the Levant, 149—his reports on the medical stores, 341.
Hamelin, Admiral, ii. 102, 105, 109, 126, 143, 151, 154, 176 note, 246 note, 326 note, 331, 370, 387 *et seq.*—his signal to his fleet, 401, 402, 453 *et seq.*, 463.
Hamilton, Captain, ii. 197.
Hamilton, Colonel Sir Charles, ii. 381 note, 441, 458.
Hamilton, Colonel F., v. 198 note.
Hamilton, Lieutenant Robert, ii. 439.
Hamilton, Mr, in Eupatoria; ii. 168, vii. 45.
Hamilton, iv. 75 note.
Hamley, Captain, v. 4 note—his arrival with three guns, 195—his successful use of the pieces, *ib.*, 196, 197, 273.
Hamley's, Colonel, 'The Campaign of Sebastopol,' ii. 462 note.
Hampton, Cornet, iv. 145.
Hancome, Mr, iii. 446 note.
Harbour ravine, the, iii. 285, 482.
Hardenberg, i. 340.
Harding, Captain, v. 340 note, 347.
Harding, Lieut.-Colonel, vi. 292 note, 343.
Hardinge, Colonel, at Inkerman, v. 241, 243.
Hardinge, Lord, General Airey's letter to, on the siege of Sebastopol, iii. 270; iv. 21, 25—Commander-in-chief at the Horse Guards, vi. 30, 50, 305, 311, 351 note—his general order on the death of Lord Raglan, viii. 283.
Hardy, Captain, v. 237 note, 244.
Hare, ii. 431.
Harris, Captain, v. 357.
Hartopp, Lieut., iv. 145, 222.
Harward, Lieut., v. 372, 374, 375.
Hasfort, Mount, iv. 31.
Hassan Pasha, ii. 56, 57, 58, 60.
Haughton, Lieut. Powell, iv. 230, 317, 352 note.
Hay, the delay in sending, to the troops, vi. 125, 127, 131, 132.
Haygarth, Colonel, ii. 437.
Head-quarter Staff, eagerness of the Government to remove Lord Raglan's, vi. 347.
Health from the percentage of sick, note showing the French reinforcements interfered with the expedient of judging, vi. 474.
Health of our army, improvement in the, after 22d February, vi. 405—restored health and strength, 406.
Heath, Captain, v. 26.
Heights, the, viii. 234, 255 *et seq.*
Hellespont, the, i. 342, 343.

Heneage, Cornet, iv. 231, 316.
Henri IV., saved crew of ship, vii. 50.
Henry, Captain, in command of No. VII. battery, vii. 172, 174, 176, 368.
Henry, M., iii. 108 note.
Henry, Serjeant-Major, v. 323.
Hepburn, Colonel, ii. 437.
Herbert, Colonel Percy, ii. 304 note, 308 note, 313; v. 8 *et seq.*, 91 note, 101, 108, 122, 126, 127 note, 161, 174, 182, 288, 297, 299, 316, 407 note.
Herbert, Mr Sidney, at the War Office, vi. 14 note—his evidence before the Sebastopol Committee, 36 note, 50, 91, note, 318, 326 note, 351, 408, 410, 416, 420 *et seq.*, 440 note.
Heskith, v. 329.
Hewitt, Mr, v. 5—his fire from the Lancaster gun, 16, 84 note; viii. 73.
Heytesbury, Lord, i. 418.
Hibbert, Colonel, v. 6 note; viii. 192.
Hibbert, Lieut., ii. 431 note.
Hiblak, Mount, iv. 28, 31.
Higginson, Captain, v. 273 *et seq.*
Highland Brigade, advance of the, to the left bank of the Alma, ii. 362, 443, 475—their engagement with several Russian columns, 476, 488, 490, 491, 493.
Hiliban, Lieut., iii. 479.
Hill Bend, v. 101 *et seq.*, 159—the state of the fight at, 161, 188, 196 note, 211, 304, 319, 337, 374, 437 note.
Hill, Edward, v. 251, 280, 283 *et seq.*
Hinde, ii. 55 note, 57 *et seq.*
Hobson, Adjutant, ii. 431 note.
Hodge, Colonel, iv. 137, 138 note, 140, 153, 155.
Hodson, ii. 65.
Hoey, Colonel, ii. 312, 419.
'Holland,' iii. 142.
Home Government, its harmonious concert, viii. 312.
Home, Major, ii. 441.
Home Ridge, v. 7 *et seq.*, 92, 93 *et seq.*, 121, 124 *et seq.*, 132, 138, 159 *et seq.*, 171, 174 *et seq.*, 187, 196 *et seq.*, 209, 294, 297, 300 *et seq.*, 310 *et seq.*, 316 *et seq.*, 341 *et seq.*—the combat on the, 345, 361, 373, 383, 384 *et seq.*, 406 *et seq.*, 417, 420, 433, 450 *et seq.*
Homeric resource, v. 222.
Hood, Colonel, ii. 431, 438, 439 note, 441, 446 note, 457 note—his manœuvre, 458, 459, 464 *et seq.*, 468, 470 note, 481, 498 note—death of, iii. 489—Lord Raglan on, *ib.* note.
Hopkins, Captain, v. 84, 85.
Hopton, ii. 382.
Horn, Colonel, v. 82 note, 237 note, 306, 309, 310, 384, 387.
Horse Guards, the, i. 23 *et seq.*, 47 *et seq.*, 55.
Horse Guards, the, before 1778, vi. 452.
Horsford, Colonel, v. 82 note, 210, 226—strength of his force, 237 note, 290, 297, 314 note, 369, 384, 426, 427, 475.
Horton, Lieutenant-Commander, viii. 69, 73.
Hospital, General, the, at Scutari, vi. 146 *et seq.*—defective equipment of, 153.
Hospital, note regarding the causes of admissions into, vi. 471.
Hospitals, English, the causes of maladministration in the, vi. 407, 408, 409, 410, 411—the hospital at Kullali, 413—the one on a new principle at Smyrna, 416—hospitals in the Crimea, *ib.*, 417, 418—Miss Nightingale, *ib.*, 420, 430—the untiring zeal of our medical officers, 435, 436, 438, 439, 445, 448.
Hospitals, mortality in the, on the Bosphorus, vi. 215.
Hospitals, the French, vi. 407.
Hospodar, i. 184.
House of Commons, motion in, for a Committee of Inquiry, vi. 317—resignation of Lord Aberdeen's Ministry, *ib.*—formation of Lord Palmerston's Government, 318—the two displaced Ministers, *ib.*—general import of the change of Ministry, 320—Lord John Russell attacked in, vii. 329, 345—injustice of attack in, 345—vote of, regarding war, 347.
Hugo, Victor, i. 256.
Hume, ii. 322, 383; v. 298, 299, 410.
Humphrey, Assistant-Surgeon, v. 159.
Hunt, Captain, iv. 139, 150—the charge of his squadron, 151, 352 note.
Hunt, Cornet, iv. 230, 271.
Hunter, iv. 113.
Hurdle, Colonel, iii. 292; iv. 29.
Hurricane of 14th November, vi. 160—the destruction caused by, 162—Lord Raglan's sense of the disaster, 164—his measures, 166.
Hutchinson, vi. 60.
Hutton, Captain, iv. 230, 316.

Iakoutsk battalions, the, v. 178 *et seq.*
Ilynsky, Captain, iii. 365.
Imperial plan of campaign, Crimean generals made acquainted with, vii. 245.
Inglis, Captain, iv. 145; v. 310 note, 311.
Inglis, Major, at Inkerman, v. 310 note—on the 18th of June, viii. 173 *et seq.*

INKERMAN, AFFAIR OF THE LESSER, v. 1—26th Oct. *ib.*—Balaclava still the object of the enemy's designs, *ib.*—effect of the Balaclava battle upon Liprandi's troops, *ib.*—its effect upon the spirit of other Russian troops, 2—its effect on the garrison of Sebastopol, *ib.*—object of the attack then planned, *ib.*—circumstances giving an interest to the Lesser Inkerman combat, 3—the enemy's dominion over the northern part of Mount Inkerman, *ib.*—his plan of attack, *ib.*—General Evans and his resources, 4—troops occupying the Careenage Ravine, 5—Federoff's advance, *ib.*—his engagement with our pickets, and continued advance to Shell Hill, 6—his guns on Shell Hill, 7—engaged by those of Evans, *ib.*—continued pressure upon our pickets, *ib.*—the spirit in which they fought, 8—the policy of Evans, 9—advance of the separate column, *ib.*—Captain Goodlake's adventure with the enemy, 10—progress of the combat in the Careenage Ravine, 12—continuation of the enemy's efforts on Mount Inkerman, 13—defeat of his columns advancing in support, 14—his entire defeat on Mount Inkerman, 15—Hewitt's fire from the Lancaster gun, 16—the enemy also defeated in the Careenage Ravine, *ib.*—duration of the combat, 17—its results, *ib.*—its pith, *ib.*—its effect upon the soldiery of our 2d Divison, *ib.*

INKERMAN BATTLE OF, v. 31—*state of the Sebastopol campaign in the beginning of Nov.* 1854, *ib.*—approach of the peril incurred by giving the enemy time, *ib.*—reinforcements despatched to Mentschikoff, 32—strength of the Russians on the eve of Inkerman, *ib.*—of the Allies, 33—motive for immediate action on part of the Russian field army, 34—position of the Allied armies, 35—their left, 36—the primary task of these troops, 37—their distances from Mount Inkerman, *ib.*—Codrington's brigade and its position, *ib.*—disposition of the troops which covered the siege, 38—the French Army of Observation, 40—Bosquet's primary duty, *ib.*—conditions under which he might march to the support of the English at, 41—Canrobert's Turkish auxiliaries, *ib.*—Vinoy's brigade, *ib.*—duties devolving upon Sir Colin Campbell and Vinoy, 42—position of the Allied cavalry, *ib.*—the want of any collected body of infantry reserves, 42—circumstances under which the defence of Mount Inkerman must be left, in the first instance, to a small body of men, 43—Lord Raglan's perception of the condition of things imparted to our Government on the 3d of November, 44—anxiety in England and France, 45—*dispositions for a general engagement*, 48—the conflict of 5th Nov. regarded as a general action, *ib.*—disposition of the Russian forces on the eve of the battle, *ib.*—the enemy's projected front of battle, 49—the numerical strength of the contending armies, 52—the numbers the enemy could spare for aggressive purposes, 53—amount of reinforcing power possessed by the Allies, 54—the enemy's plan, 56—the immediate object of the battle contemplated by the enemy, 58—ulterior prospects resulting from the anticipated success of the attack, *ib.*—measures tending to inflame the zeal of the Russian soldiery, 59—*eve and early morning of the 5th of November in the Allied camp*, 62—the English camp on the eve of the 5th of November, *ib.*—the early morning of the 5th November in the English camp, 64—the first intelligence of the attack, 65—Lord Raglan in the saddle, 66—firing heard in many directions, 67—Lord Raglan's conclusion, *ib.*—his measures and immediate departure for, *ib.*—great proportion of the forces under Gortchakoff and Möller, 68—*operations on Gortchakoff's front*, 69—the part allotted to Prince Gortchakoff's corps, *ib.*—his operations, 70—the Guards not detained in the front, *ib.*—Bosquet's troops detained for a while by Gortchakoff's menaces, 71—and afterwards by mistaken assurances of Brown and Cathcart, 73—Bosquet's clear perception of the enemy's real purpose, *ib.*—the reinforcements which Bosquet, at intervals, was able to bring to the field of Inkerman, 74—the power of Sir Colin Campbell and Vinoy neutralised, 75—circumstances under which Gortchakoff's force became paralysed, *ib.*—*operations on the Sebastopol front*, 77—the garrison forces before 9.30 A.M., *ib.*—Canrobert's endeavour to draw reinforcements for Inkerman from his siege corps, *ib.*—troops remaining with Forey at 9.30 A.M., 78—Timovieff's sortie, *ib.*—the part taken by the garrison in the Karabel Faubourg, 80—English reinforcements marched towards Mount Inkerman, *ib.*

—advantages resulting from General Codrington's firmness on the Victoria Ridge, 86—result of the efforts made by the garrison, 87—general failure of the enemy's auxiliary operations, 88—the enemy's main attack, see Fight on Mount Inkerman.

INKERMAN, THE FIGHT ON MOUNT, the ground, v. 89 *et seq.*—*its defences*, 99—fixed batteries and ships by which the Russian army might be aided in the battle, 100—northern half of Mount Inkerman left in the enemy's power, *ib.*—slight efforts to strengthen the English position, 101—strength of the force under Pennefather in charge of Mount Inkerman, 106—*arrangements of the Picket system*, *ib.*—the chain of outposts maintained on Mount Inkerman, *ib.*—*the enemy's confused and clashing counsels*, 109—Prince Mentschikoff's written orders for the attack on, 109—the subsidiary directions framed by Soimonoff and Pauloff, 110—interposition of Dannenberg, *ib.*—his first set of instructions, *ib.*—his subsequent attempts to overturn the accepted plan, and cause Soimonoff to attack by the Victoria Ridge, 111—*the enemy's final determination*, 112—Soimonoff's final resolve, *ib.*—its effect, *ib.*—the ascent of Mount Inkerman as about to be actually undertaken, 113.

First Period from 5.45 A.M. *to* 7.30 A.M., 113—Soimonoff's march, *ib.*—continuation of Soimonoff's march, 114—his advance in order of battle, 115—Captain Goodlake's interposition, 116—the reserves, 117—the Under-road Column, *ib.*—Soimonoff's undisturbed advance to the verge of Shell Hill, 118—the English pickets at night, Grant, Sargent, Carmichael, Morgan, *ib.*—part taken by Captain Sargent, 119—the 2d Division called to arms as usual before sunrise, 120—the relief of the pickets, *ib.*—the new pickets, 121—the enemy at length discerned and checked by Rowland's picket, *ib.*—Russian batteries established on Shell Hill, *ib.*—the first measures taken on the Home Ridge, 122—the direction of the Russian cannonade, *ib.*—havoc in the camp of the 2d Division, 123—the ease with which the Russians had thus far carried their enterprise, *ib.*—the plan of defence conceived by Evans, 124—the one adopted by Pennefather, 125—the position taken up by his regiments, 126—scantiness of the force left to defend the heights, 127—these dispositions practically irrevocable, *ib.*—Pennefather's control not superseded by Lord Raglan's presence on the field, 128—Lord Raglan's order to bring up guns from the siege-train park, 129—Soimonoff's intention at this time, *ib.*—the occurrence which changed his resolve, 130—Grant's encounter with a Russian column, *ib.*—acceleration of the impending contest, *ib.*—commencement of Soimonoff's attack, 131—progress of the Under-road Column, 132—Soimonoff's apparent purpose, *ib.*—simultaneous advance of 6000 men belonging to Pauloff's corps, 133—advance of the Taroutine battalions to the front of the Sandbag Battery, *ib.*—their seizure of the work, 134—junction of the Borodino with the Taroutine battalions, 135—their array, *ib.*—the enemy's entire front of battle at this time, 136—formation adopted by his assailing forces, *ib.*—general character of the attack now proceeding, 137—numbers of the enemy at this time engaged, 138—his numbers, *ib.*—numbers available for the defence, *ib.*—arrival of the first English reinforcements, 139—advance of Townsend's battery, *ib.*—three of his guns exposed to the power of the Russian columns, 140—singular conflict undertaken by Lieut. Miller and his artillery-men, *ib.*—the three English guns in the possession of the Russians, 141—the Under-road Column closing upon Pennefather's camp, *ib.*—result of the Russian attack up to this time, 142—arrival of General Buller with some men of the 77th under Egerton, *ib.*—his advance against the enemy's approaching masses, *ib.*—Lieut. Hugh Clifford's exploit against the Under-road Column, 143—Prince Edward's successful attack from the other side of the Well-way, 145—[illegible] comfiture of the enemy's turning movement, 146—the order of the successive combats, *ib.*—Fordyce engaged against the 1st Catherinburg battalion, *ib.*—defeat of the battalion, 148—halt of the 2d and 3d Catherinburg battalions, *ib.*—Grant's retreat stopped, *ib.*—Egerton's advance, 149—the forces he was confronting, *ib.*—the force most directly confronting him, 150—the quality of his small force, *ib.*—its advantage in respect of mounted officers, 151—hesitation of the Russian force, *ib.*—General Buller's terse order, *ib.*—the

order given by Egerton, *ib.*—the volley of the 77th, *ib.*—their charge, *ib.*—overthrow of the loose masses forming the Russian front, 153—overthrow of the close column in their rear, *ib.*—melley of intermingled combatants, *ib.*—Egerton's unrelenting pursuit, 155—the 77th at length halted in an advanced position, 156—General Soimonoff mortally wounded, *ib.*—Egerton's retention of the ground he had won, *ib.*—effect of Egerton's victory upon the 3d and 4th Catherinburg battalions, 157—renewed advance of Grant and Jeffreys, *ib.*—recovery of the lost English guns, 158—positions taken up and held by Grant and Jeffreys, *ib.*—names of the officers who took part in Egerton's charge, *ib.*—resolute advance farther east of six Russian battalions, 159—separation of one battalion from the others, *ib.*—continued advance of the remaining five battalions, 160—their overthrow under a fire of case-shot, *ib.*—their retreat, pursued by foot-soldiers, 161.

The state of the fight as seen at Hill Bend, 161—Bellairs's perception of the emergency, 162—charge executed by Bellairs with his men, 163—overthrow and retreat of the Kolivansk column, *ib.*—array of 6600 Russians between the head of the Quarry Ravine and the Sandbag Battery, *ib.*—the sole English forces opposing it, 164—advance of the Borodino battalions, *ib.*—Mauleverer's counter-advance with a wing of the 30th Regiment, 164—his charge, 165—overthrow of the two Borodino battalions immediately confronting him, *ib.*—retreat of the four Borodino battalions, 166—advance of General Adams in person with the 41st Regiment, *ib.*—his defeat of the 4000 men before him, *ib.*—the defeated body of 6600 finally removed from the field of battle, 167—circumstances under which the Taroutine and the Borodino regiments fought, 168—result of the first or early morning's fighting, ending at 7.30, *ib.*—comparison of the numbers engaged in this early fight, 171—the strength of the ground not taken advantage of by the English infantry, 172—effect of the mist on the respective forces, *ib.*—quality of the English officers when isolated with only a small body of men, 173—the English troops fasting, 174—want of ammunition, *ib.*—effect of the early fire from Home Ridge, *ib.*—failure of the enemy's numerical strength in each separate encounter, 175—circumstances which marked the defeat of the twenty battalions, and impaired its moral effect, *ib.*

Second Period, 7.30 A.M. *to* 8.30 A.M.—fresh troops and guns brought forward by the enemy, 176—Dannenberg's assumption of the command over both the corps d'armée, *ib.*—Prince Mentschikoff, 177—Dannenberg's dispositions, *ib.*—advance of his 10,000 fresh troops, 178—resources of the English, 179—the neutralised part of their force, 180—troops guarding Pennefather's left rear and left front, *ib.*—the two other third parts of the English infantry, 181—the 'spent forces,' *ib.*—strength and disposition of the collected troops remaining to Pennefather, 182—the approaching reinforcements, 183—continued impression of the English as to the dimensions of the conflict, 184—conduct of the fight still left to Pennefather, 185—Lord Raglan and his staff, *ib.*—the enemy's entire change of his fighting battalions not perceptible to the English at the time, 187—the error which began to entangle our troops on wrong ground, *ib.*—the force near the Sandbag Battery, 188—Armstrong's communication with the Duke of Cambridge, *ib.*—the position of General Adams as against the approaching forces, *ib.*—the fight maintained by Adams towards his front, 190—the flank attacks, *ib.*—their effect, 191—General Adams, 192—continuance of the fighting, 193—Adams forced back, *ib.*—third capture of the Sandbag Battery, 194—the force under Adams drawn back towards Mount Head, *ib.*—Adams mortally wounded, *ib.*—arrival of Captain Hamley with three guns, 195—his successful use of the pieces, *ib.*—repression of the troops which had fought against Adams, *ib.*—the footing on which the defence stood for the moment, 196—positions taken and retained by the batteries newly brought, *ib.*—the Grenadiers and the Scots Fusiliers at Hill Bend, 197—course taken by the Duke of Cambridge for informing himself, *ib.*—advance of the battalions of Guards, 198—array of the forces opposed to them, *ib.*—the Duke, being left unmolested on his left, continues his advance, 199—strength of the forces

directly opposing the Duke's 700 men, 200—charge of the Grenadiers, *ib.*—fourth capture of the Sandbag Battery, *ib.*—the enemy able to rally in safety beneath the ledge, *ib.*—the Grenadiers fronting eastward, 201—the Sandbag Battery, *ib.*—combats sustained by the Grenadiers, 202—advance of the Scots Fusiliers against two columns on the north front, *ib.*—interposition of the Duke of Cambridge, and change of direction, 203—interposition of Bentinck, and countermarch of the battalion, 204—the mass opposed to them, *ib.*—first charge of the Scots Fusiliers, *ib.*—change of front effected by the Grenadiers, *ib.*—position of the two battalions of the Guards now formed up together, 205—the enemy's means of repeating his attacks, *ib.*—conditions under which the Guards had to fight, *ib.*—the Sandbag Battery vacated, 206—entered by the Russians, and recaptured by Damer, *ib.*—second charge of the Scots Fusiliers, 207—third charge of the same force, *ib.*—the Duke of Cambridge's expedition in search of reinforcements, *ib.*—the Gap, *ib.*—imprudence of reinforcing the Guards without also securing the Gap, *ib.*—reinforcements nevertheless obtained, 209—succours drawn from the 2d Division, *ib.*—from the 4th Division, 210—the waste of power caused by drawing these succours to the Kitspur, *ib.*—failure of the Duke's application to Cathcart, 211.

Arrival of two French battalions, 211—their reception on the battle-field, 212—failure of the English endeavours to make them advance, 213—impatience of our people with the two battalions, *ib.*—the Duke's return to the Kitspur, 214—the results of the expedition in search of reinforcements, *ib.*—Dannenberg's preparations for his next attack, 215—fire of Russian artillery, *ib.*—advance of the assailing battalions, 216—comparison of numbers, *ib.*—the great column advancing from the north, *ib.*—the fire of the Scots Fusiliers, 217—continued advance of the column, 218—the colonel of the Scots Fusiliers, *ib.*—his two first wounds, *ib.*—his visit to the Sandbag Battery, 219—Selinghinsk troops on the top of the parapet, *ib.*—Colonel Walker's third wound, *ib.*—devolution of the command upon Colonel F. Seymour, 220—the measures he took, 220—relinquishment of the Sandbag Battery by the English, *ib.*—their change of position, *ib.*—the Sandbag Battery entered by the Russians, 221—the opposing forces standing at bay, 222—charge of the Grenadiers, 223—the Russians overthrown on each front by the Guards, *ib.*—seventh capture of the Sandbag Battery, 224—speedy cessation of the enemy's retreat, *ib.*—his return to the conflict, *ib.*—false position of the Grenadiers within the work, 225—reinforcements brought to the Kitspur, *ib.*—the Duke of Cambridge's intended disposition of them, *ib.*—the Gap still open, 226—the actual disposition of the fresh troops, *ib.*—the real exigency not met by this accession of reinforcements, 227—the general tenor of the fight on the Kitspur after the accession of the reinforcements, 228—attack on the north front and the left shoulder of the Sandbag Battery, 230—its result, *ib.*—a lull on the north front, *ib.*—distinct character of the fight on the eastern front, *ib.*—the last of the enemy's attacks on the Kitspur, 234—its defeat by some men of the Coldstreams, 235.

Sir George Cathcart's arrival, 235—his conversation with Pennefather, *ib.*—the great bulk of Cathcart's troops distributed piecemeal, 236—the small force of 400 men remaining under Cathcart's personal control, 237—its importance, 238—the vice of the position maintained at the Sandbag Battery, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's determination, 239—imperative need of troops at the Gap, *ib.*—endeavours to induce Cathcart to act in the required direction, 240—his own conception, and his consequent resistance to entreaties, 241—Lord Raglan's order to Cathcart, *ib.*—the st[illegible] of Cathcart's temper in the Crime[illegible]2—question as to the cause which induced him to disobey orders, 243—his determination to attack the enemy's extreme left, *ib.*—one of the effects of this resolve, *ib.*—his fatal descent from the high ground, 244—continuation of the fight on the Kitspur, *ib.*—Cathcart now a partaker in it, *ib.*—charge of Cathcart's 400 men under Torrens, *ib.*—Colonel Crofton's charge with some men of the 20th, 246—impatience of the troops in the Sandbag Battery, 247—Sir Charles Russell advancing over

he parapet and ou[illegible] on the ledge, *ib.* —weakness of the defenders at the flanks of the battery, 248 — the enemy's advance against its right shoulder, *ib.* — Captain Burnaby, *ib.* —his first attempt to make the men charge, 249 — his resistance at the parapet, *ib.*—his charge with six or seven men, *ib.*—the Russians thrown back some paces, 250—their rally, *ib.*—more men of the Guards now out on the Ledge-way, *ib.*—the fighting there, *ib.*—personal combats, 251—downward rush of the troops on each flank of the battery, 254—state of the troops within the work, 255—outburst of troops from the battery, 256—flight and pursuit of the Russians in front of the battery, *ib.*—column in St Clement's Gorge confronted by troops of the 95th Regiment, 257—Captain Sargent with the Grenadier company, *ib.*—charge by the 95th, *ib.*—its effect, *ib.*—true extent of the overthrow sustained by the Russians, 258 — a false victory, *ib.* — westward direction taken by a few, 259—course taken by the bulk, *ib.* — the high ground almost denuded, *ib.*

The newly approaching battalions seen by Percy, 259 — his measures, *ib.* — movement effected by the bulk of the soldiery who had fought on the Kitspur, 260 — Percy's return from the fight, 262 — supplies of ammunition, 263 — reorganisation of the dispersed soldiery, *ib.*—state of the troops coming in by the Tchernaya flank, *ib.*—the 200 still on high ground, 264—Cathcart surprised by a fire from the heights behind him, *ib.*—the interposed Iäkoutsk battalion, 265—Cathcart, *ib.*—his resolve and scant means, 266—the attack made by fifty men of the 20th, 267—result of the [illegible]k, 268—Cathcart's words to Mait[illegible], 270—his further efforts, [illegible]ath of Cathcart, *ib.*—Seymour killed and Maitland wounded, 271—the remains of the fifty assailants, *ib.*

Position of Iäkoutsk battalion on the Fore Ridge, 271—troops on the Duke of Cambridge's left front as well as in his rear, 272—Burnaby's measures, *ib.*—critical position of the Duke of Cambridge and the colours of the Grenadier Guards, *ib.*—the interposed force discovered, 273—orders given in consequence, 274—movement of the Iäkoutsk battalion, *ib.*—and of the men with the colours of the Grenadier Guards, *ib.*—the Duke of Cambridge and some of his troops scraping past the interposed force, 275—the band of English directly confronted and attacked by the Russians, *ib.*—Dr Wolseley's charge, 276—the double peril to which the colours are now exposed, 278—Burnaby and his men interpose themselves between the retreating and the pursuing force, 279—Burnaby's rear-guard action, *ib.*—opportune advance of the French 6th of the Line, 285—retreat of the Okhotsk battalions, *ib.*—extrication of Burnaby and the other survivors of his little rear-guard, 286—complete success of Burnaby's rear-guard operations in covering the retreat of the colours, 287—complete extrication of the 150 English who had been surrounded by the enemy, *ib.*—anxiety suffered by the Duke of Cambridge, 288—his joy upon witnessing the return of the men with the colours, *ib.*—continued retreat of the enemy's columns, 289—Russians in the gorge of the Sandbag Battery, *ib.*—hesitation of the French 6th of the Line, *ib.*—Captain Armstrong's exertions, 290—recapture of the Sandbag Battery, *ib.*—continued advance of the French 6th of the Line, *ib.*—meeting between General Bourbaki and Colonel Horsford, *ib.* — retrospect of the fights on the Kitspur, 291—their results, 292.

The centre, 294 — Pennefather's method of defending it, *ib.* — Mauleverer's wing of the 30th Regiment, 295—its protracted resistance to the enemy's advancing columns, *ib.* — the 30th men at length pressed back to the crest-work, 297 — continued advance of the Iäkoutsk column, *ib.*—till attacked and defeated by a wing of Horsford's Rifle battalion, *ib.*—Hume's wing of the 95th thrown forward towards the Barrier, 298—result of the combat it there sustained, 299—Russian column torn and driven back by some of Turner's guns, *ib.*—a Russian column on the crest of the Home Ridge, *ib.* — but it is charged and driven back by the men of the 30th, 300—scantiness of the English forces in front of their centre, *ib.*—the mist, *ib.* — General Pennefather, *ib.* — the Gap left open, 303 — and not closed by Colonel Upton's manœuvre, 304—illusion created by the stubbornness

of the fight at the Barrier, 305—the enemy's undertaking to attack the Home Ridge, *ib.*—to be met by 400 fresh troops under General Goldie, 306—combat fought by Colonel Horn and his wing of the 20th, *ib.*—combat sustained by Captain Stanley at the head of the 57th, 310—result of this Russian attack against the Home Ridge, 311 — the result of conflicts which took place during the Second Period, 313.

Third Period. — 8.30 A.M. *to* 9.15 A.M.—Strength of the Russians on Mount Inkerman at this time, 315—strength of the Allies, *ib.*—plan of the Russians, 316—their dispositions for the attack,' 317—the great trunk column, *ib.*—the flanking troops, 318—the vanguard, *ib.*—strength of the assailants, *ib.*—strength and disposition of allied forces available for resistance to this attack, *ib.*—Russian artillery-fire, 320—circumstances distinguishing this attack, 321—the enemy's advance not effectually obstructed this time by out-fighting troops, *ib.*—Pennefather assailed on his own ridge, 322—the attacks delivered by the enemy's vanguard, *ib.*—attack on Boothby's demi-battery at the western extremity of the Home Ridge, 323 — capture of the demi-battery, 325—limited effect of the capture, *ib.*—recapture of the three English guns, *ib.*—position reached by the 600 men of the 4th Division, 326—circumstances tending to mask the enemy's advance, 327—the 100 men of the 55th surprised and driven back, *ib.*—attack on the right half of Turner's battery, 329—the fire and the well-timed withdrawal of three guns, *ib.*—movement of the enemy's vanguard, *ib.*—hesitation of the French battalion, 330 — its defeat, *ib.* — peril resulting from the defeat of the French battalion, 331—anger of Lord Raglan, *ib.*—the step he took, 332—the enemy's artillery-fire, *ib.*—General Strangways mortally wounded, 333—what the source of Lord Raglan's confidence at this crisis, *ib.*—the victorious charge of 100 men of the 55th, 335—its result, *ib.*—Egerton's advance up the reverse slope, *ib.*—advance of 7th French line on Egerton's right rear, 336 — withdrawal of the enemy's vanguard from the crest, *ib.* — continued advance of the great trunk column, 337—forces that could be collected to meet it, *ib.* — accession of a truant captain of Zouaves with sixty men, *ib.* — his opportune assistance, 339 — Pennefather's disposition of the Anglo-French force, *ib.*—strength of the combatants about to engage on the Ridge, 341—English soldiery interposed between the great trunk column and the enemy's advanced troops, *ib.*—advance of the great trunk column to the Barrier, 343—retreat of the few English troops in this part of the field, *ib.*—preparations for the combat between the great trunk column and the Anglo-French force on Home Ridge, 344—the combat, 345—Colonel Daubeney's singular charge, 350—its effect upon the issue of the combat, 352—conclusion of the combat, *ib.*—retreat of the great trunk column, pursued by Anglo-French troops, 353—exultation of the French soldiery, *ib.*—engagement between the right wing of the enemy's assailing forces and the 600 men of our 4th Division, 354—diagonal advance of the 600, bringing them into the central part of the field, 356—their engagements with troops there assembled, *ib.*—their advance into the opening of the Quarry Ravine, 357—limit reached by Colonel Haines, *ib.*—the left wing of the assailing force simultaneously driven back with slaughter by the fire from a gun on Home Ridge, 358—close of the Third Period, 359.

Fourth Period. — 9.15 A.M. *to* 10 A.M.—Limits of the advantage obtained by the Allies, 360—the French 6th of the Line driven back, 361—course taken by the enemy's pursuing column, 362—its effect, *ib.*—appeal to Bosquet for aid, 363—opportunity lost by the enemy, *ib.*—ground yielded by the English on the line of the Post-road, 364—Haines undertaking the defence of the Barrier, *ib.*—General Goldie, 365—attack on the Barrier repulsed by General Goldie and Haines, 366—steps taken for obtaining small reinforcements, *ib.*—the success obtained by Ramsay Stuart, 367—march of some 77th men under Pennefather's directions, 368 — the 'hay picket' brought up, 369—accession of Horsford with a few score of men, *ib.*—General Goldie slain, *ib.*—Haines in full command, 370—his continued defence of the Barrier, *ib.*—the enemy once more in the ascendant, *ib.*—execution of Lord Raglan's orders to bring up two 18-pounder guns, *ib.* — these

[illegible]lanted in battery by Colonel Collingwood Dickson, 373—the Guards brought up in support, *ib.*—the great relative power of these guns, *ib.*—engagement between these two guns and the batteries on Shell Hill, 374—ascendant obtained by the two 18-pounders, 376—the scope of the change thus wrought, 377—Boussinière's guns in battery on the Fore Ridge, 378—arrival of General Bosquet with reinforcements, *ib.*—condition under which Dannenberg would now have to act, 380.

Fifth Period.—10 A.M. *to* 11 A.M.—Bosquet's original intention to support Lord Raglan, and act in concert with him, 380—the appeal which changed his resolve, 381—and hurried him into an isolated course of action, *ib.*—surprise felt by Bosquet upon entering on the field of battle, 382—the scenes presented to his observation, *ib.*—the real dimensions of the fight at the Barrier, 384—general character of the English fore-front, 385—the 'Gap,' *ib.*—Bosquet's erroneous impression, *ib.*—Bosquet's disposition of the 450 Chasseurs, 386—combat maintained by them with the aid of some 'Twentieth' men against two Russian columns, *ib.*—arrival of more French reinforcements, 388—the great power now in Bosquet's hands, 389—demeanour of the two fresh battalions, *ib.*—Bosquet's advance to the Inkerman Tush, 390—his array when there, 391—advance of a Russian column on Bosquet's left, 394—peril and escape of Bosquet, *ib.*—divergent retreat of the French, 395—the havoc wrought in Boussinière's batteries, *ib.*—their removal from the Fore Ridge, 396—the Russians blind to their opportunity, and attempt no pursuit, *ib.*—Canrobert at the seat of danger, *ib.*—his cavalry brought up, 397—its retreat, [illegible] despair of the French, *ib.*—their [illegible]derate intimation to Dickson [illegible] present effect of the reverse sustained by the French, 398—the Allies in jeopardy, 399—the enemy's inaction, 400—encouragement derivable from the continued success of the English, *ib.*—aspect of things on Home Ridge, *ib.*—returning hopefulness of the French troops, 401—Bosquet's measures, 402—the wing of the 95th in St Clement's Gorge, *ib.*—advance of the Zouave battalion, *ib.*—reappearance of some Coldstream men, 402—signal defeat of the Selinghinsk battalions by Zouave and Algerine troops, 403—operations of the 7th Léger and 6th of the Line, 405—the Barrier still held fast, 406. 11 A.M., close of the combats undertaken by French infantry, *ib.*

Sixth Period.—11 A.M. *to* 1 P.M.—Strength and disposition of the French and English infantry, 406—the apparently great power and opportunity of Canrobert at this time, 407—Lord Raglan and Canrobert, *ib.*—Pennefather's message to Lord Raglan, 408—his interview with Lord Raglan and Canrobert, 409—Canrobert's continued inaction, 410—his definitive abandonment of the offensive, *ib.*—the import of this resolve, 411—the enemy's condition and prospects, 412—Dannenberg's object at this time, 414—Canrobert's course of action in accordance with Dannenberg's wishes, 415—non-concurrence of the English in Canrobert's plan of abandoning the offensive, *ib.*—the shot thrown to St George's Brow, 416—the enemy's hold now only challenged by 3000 English and the 18-pounders, 417—state of the field on a large part of the ground now occupied by the Allies, 418—the way in which the English were gradually drawn on to take the offensive, *ib.*—Haines's continued defence of the Barrier, 419—skirmishing on the left front of the Barrier, *ib.*—transition from the task of defence to that of attack, 420—tenacity of the Russians, despite their shattered state, 421—ambition of Haines in the direction of his left front, 422—Lord West, 423—his order to Acton, *ib.*—the combat undertaken by Acton, 424—retreat of the assailed battery, 426—men drawn forward by Armstrong, 427—advance over ground forming part of the Shell Hill position, *ib.*—the effect this incident was calculated to produce, *ib.*—1 o'clock P.M., Dannenberg's orders to begin the retreat, 428—the beginning of the retreat descried by Codrington, 429.

Seventh Period.—1 P.M. *to* 8 P.M.—Advance of the infantry directed to cover the retreat, 430—its discomfiture, 431—the Russians in peril of being overtaken by a great disaster, *ib.*—refusal of Canrobert to take any part in pressing the retreat, *ib.*—no pursuit undertaken by the Allies, 433—Prince Mentschikoff's attempt to countermand the retreat, *ib.*—his altercation with Dannenberg, 434—Mentschikoff de-

liberately set at nought by Dannenberg, 435 — Dannenberg's method of conducting the retreat, 436—difficulty of withdrawing the Russian artillery from Mount Inkerman, *ib.* — circumstance favouring the task, *ib.*—the two last Russian batteries on Shell Hill, 437—Lord Raglan's way of accelerating their withdrawal, *ib.* — the last gun withdrawn from Shell Hill, *ib.* — 3 o'clock, the toplands of Mount Inkerman now clear of Russian forces, 438—fire from the two Russian steamships, *ib.* — 3.30, advance of French battery supported by two battalions, *ib.* — result of this movement, *ib.*— General Canrobert and Lord Raglan on the heights vacated by the enemy, 439 —retreat of the artillery brought up from Sebastopol, 441—Colonel Waddy's enterprise, *ib.* — its frustration by Colonel de Todleben, 442—8 o'clock, the enemy's retreat accomplished, and the Inkerman fight at an end, 443—losses sustained in the fight on Mount Inkerman, *ib.*—by the Russians, *ib.*—by the English, 444—by the French, 448—outline of the fight, *ib.*—First Period, 5.45 A.M. to 7.30 A.M., *ib.*—Second Period, 7.30 A.M. to 8.30 A.M., 449—Third Period, 8.30 A.M. to 9.15 A.M., 451—Fourth Period, 9.15 A.M. to 10 A.M., 452—Fifth Period, 10 A.M. to 11 A.M., *ib.*—Sixth Period, 11 A.M. to 1 P.M., 454—Seventh Period, 1 P.M. to 8 P.M., *ib.*

Close of the General Engagement.— How the enemy's failure on Mount Inkerman paralysed his action elsewhere, 455—inaction of the garrison along the main part of their front, *ib.* —inaction of Prince Gortchakoff with 22,000 fresh troops, 456—its cause, *ib.* —inaction of the French forces fronting the Flagstaff Bastion, 457 — the bearing of the main fight on the general engagement, *ib.* — and of the combats elsewhere on the main fight, *ib.*—losses resulting from the general engagement, 458.

INKERMAN NARRATIVE, SEQUEL TO THE, v. 459—rejection of the proposal that Russians should come out to bury the dead, *ib.*—charge against the Russian soldiery of having butchered the wounded in the battle, 460—the motives which caused the atrocities, 461 —the diligent fire maintained by Russians when lying wounded, note, viii. 314 *et seq.*—Captain C. Morris, R.A., *ib.* —were the English surprised at Inkerman? v. 463—efforts made to account for the defeat of the Russians, 467—what if Soimonoff had ascended by the Victoria Ridge? 468—real extent of the advantage possessed by the Allies in point of arms, 474—causes most strongly tending to account for the defeat of the Russians in combat with our troops, 475—the ground, *ib.*—the mist, 476—the enemy's gross way of fighting, 477—quality of the English officers and men, 479—magnitude of the results that might have followed a Russian victory at Inkerman, *ib.*—how the Allies abstained from using their victory as a means to a greater end, 480—and even allowed themselves to be checked by the battle, 481—one of the enemy's objects attained, *ib.* — impression produced on the Allies by the enemy's exhibition of numerical strength, 482—counsel offered by General Evans, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's appreciation of the conditions under which he must act, 483.

Inkerman, iii. 142, 289, 293 note.

Inkerman battle-field, v. 453; viii. 35.

Inkerman Bridge, iii. 116 *et seq.*, 161; v. 63, 96 *et seq.*, 133, 436—destruction of, vii. 38, 355.

'Inkerman heights,' the, iii. 142 note, 289 note; v. 89 note—the defence of, vi. 112.

Inkerman, losses resulting from the general engagement at, v. 457.

Inkerman march, v. 429.

Inkerman Mount, iii. 289, 303; v. 89—its shape, 90—the brushwood clothing, 95, 100—its characteristics as a battle-field, 89 *et seq.* — the southern part of, including the English Heights, might have offered a good defensive position to a whole army-corps, but could be so used by Pennefather, 104 —new Russian works on, vii. 63 *et seq.*

Inkerman ridge, the, v. 44.

Inkerman ruins, iii. 287 note; v. 4

Inkerman spur, v. 63.

Inkerman, the battle of, viii. 257.

Inkerman, the scene of, ii. 355 note.

Inkerman Tusk, the, v. 95, 106, 178, 198, 291, 384, 386, 390 *et seq.*, 452.

Inkerman valley, the, iii. 286 *et seq.*

Inlong, Surgeon, iii. 95.

Iskender Bey at battle of Eupatoria, vii. 55.

Issakoff, Colonel, ii. 429.

Istomin, Admiral, iii. 134, 217, 335, 345, 360, 381; v. 442—death of, vii. 109.

J[illegible]rokritsky, General iii. 220, 221; iv. 42, 43 *et seq.*, 71, 7[illegible]—infantry and artillery, position of, 177, 187, 218, 265, 275, 278, 337; viii. 91.
Jacob, ii. 65.
Jagoudil, the, iii. 351.
Jeffreys, Colonel, v. 158, 180.
Jeffries, Colonel, v. 82 note.
Jenyns, Captain, iv. 222, 259, 292, 309 note.
Jerome Bonaparte, i. 245, 311—natural anxiety of his, 312.
Jerome, Prince, ii. 28 *et seq.*
Jerpkine, Colonel, iv. 53 note, 94, 189, 202 note—his lancers form in rear of the 8th Hussars, iv. 287—his discomfited lancers, 292, 299, 306—his forces, 269 note, 277.
Jervis, Lieut. Edward Lennox, iv. 222.
Jervis, Major, iii. 58.
Jervis's, Colonel, map, iii. 244.
Jesse, Captain, viii. 187.
Jesse, Captain, statement regarding the conflict in the streets of Paris, i. 265 note, 268 *et seq.*
Jocelyn, Colonel, ii. 381 note.
Johnson, Lieutenant, v. 308.
Jolliffe, Lieutenant Hedworth, iv. 230, 496.
Jones, ii. 431.
Jones, Captain, iii. 435 note *et seq.*
Jones, Ensign, v. 86 note.
Jones, General Sir Harry, vi. 320—at Council of 4th March, vii. 74—commander of military engineers, 109; viii. 189 note, 193.
Jordan, Captain, viii. 212 note.
Jordan, Lieutenant, at night attack on Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 95, 97.
Journalism, triumphs of European, vi. 232 note.
Journalists, English, the tasks of, vi. 250.
Justice, Lord Chief, on Lord Cardigan's conduct, iv. 348 note, 355 note.
Juts, the, v. 360, 411.

K[illegible] country, the, viii. 28.
K[illegible]koi, the village of, 97 *et seq.*, 292—the gorge of, iv. 28 *et seq.*—the Turkish camp at, 43, 67 *et seq.*, 72, 74 *et seq.*; 76, 84, 91, 142 note, 151, 396 *et seq.*; v. 36, 41, 49, 456 note; vi. 384, 396 *et seq.*
Kaffa, ii. 155, 156.
Kainardji, the treaty of, i. 105, 195.
Kalafat, i. 397, 398; ii. 64.
Kalamita Bay, ii. 169; iii. 133.
Kamara, the village of, iv. 52, 58—the heights of, 31 *et seq.*, 55, 62, 70, 218; v. 49, 70.
Kamiesch, iii. 278—the French draw their supplies from, 285; vi. 97, 103, 176 note; viii. 23, 38.
Kamiesh, bay of, iii. 103 *et seq.*, 295; v. 26.
Kamiesh, depot at, endangered by Emperor's plan, vii. 278.
Kamish Boroune, landing-place at, vii. 252; viii. 40, 42.
Kamishlu, the Lake of, ii. 170, 173, 176—beach of, 213.
Kamishlu, ii. 527-544.
Kamtchatka Lunette, formation of, vii. 79, 80, 83, 86, 89, 109—the, 185, 186; viii. 87, 90 *et seq.*, 103 *et seq.*, 106, 110.
Karabelnaya, the, or Karabel faubourg, iii. 84, 117, 121 *et seq.*, 193 *et seq.*, 218, 237, 245, 290, 336, 367, 374, 378 *et seq.*, 468, 470, 478, 489; v. 3, 5, 50, 57, 61—the garrison of the, 80, 87, 97—the batteries of the, 100, 113, 440, 473—effect of April bombardment on, vii. 136; viii. 11, 17, 25, 87, 95 *et seq.*, 100, 135 *et seq.*, 150 *et seq.*, 198 *et seq.*, 221, 237 *et seq.*, 257, 260, 265, 308.
KARABELNAYA, ATTACK OF THE COUNTER-APPROACHES IN, viii. 87—resolve of Pélissier to attack the counter-approaches in the Karabelnaya, *ib.*—concord of Lord Raglan and Pélissier, *ib.*—the shield thus afforded against Louis Napoleon, 88—the vain resistance of Niel, *ib.*—the French Emperor's prohibition, 89—persistence of Pélissier, *ib.*—the contemplated attack, 90—resources and preparations of the garrison, 91—resistance to Todleben, *ib.*—its consequence, *ib.*
Opening of the Third Bombardment, 6th June, 92—Pélissier warmly greeted by the English troops, 93—significance of their cheers, *ib.*—the bombardment at night, 94—bombardment of the 7th of June, *ib.*—effect of the bombardment, *ib.*—the force of the English guns, *ib.*—crippled state of the enemy's works concerned in opposing the French, *ib.*—the less injured state of those opposing the English, 95—the time for the bayonet, *ib.*
Plan and preparations for the assault, 96—attack and seizure of the two White Redoubts, 97—seizure and abandonment of the Zabalkansky battery, 98—the Russians throwing forward two battalions of their Moroum Regiment, *ib.*—movement of Colonel d'Orion under Bosquet's orders, *ib.*—his overthrow of the two Moroum battalions, 99—400 Rus-

sians surrendering, *ib.*—French soldiery far out in front, *ib.*—fruitless advances of Russian troops, 100—their reported achievements, *ib.*

The French troops preparing to assault the Kamtchatka Lunette, and harangued by Bosquet, 103—their advance in a state of warlike effervescence, 104—the Vivandière, *ib.*—their seizure of the Lunette, 106, 107—their impetuous advance on the Malakoff, 107—their retreat when attacked in strength by General Khrouleff, *ib.*—Khrouleff's recapture of the Kamtchatka Lunette, 108—General Bosquet's measures, *ib.*—second and definitive capture of the Lunette by the French, 109—the Malakoff in imminent danger, *ib.*

The 'Quarries,' 110—the enemy's measures of defence, 111—Lord Raglan's disposition for the attack, 112—advance of our storming-parties under Colonel R. Campbell on one flank, and Major James Armstrong on the other, 113—their seizure of the Work, *ib.*—capture of the collateral entrenchments, *ib.*—flight of the defenders, pursued by our troops, 114—our men in the extreme front, *ib.*

The tasks yet awaiting our people, 115—Major Armstrong, *ib.*—Colonel Campbell's command, *ib.*—Colonel Grant's meeting with Colonel Tylden, 116—the great strain put on the powers of those who remained, *ib.*—Colonel Tylden, Thornton Grant, and Elphinstone, 117—Captain, now General Viscount Wolseley G.C.B., *ib.*—contests maintained by infantry between two opposite batteries, 119—Boudistcheff's attack, *ib.*—the English driving the Russians back into their fortress, *ib.*—attack made by the Volhynia Regiment, 120—its progress, *ib.*—and final discomfiture, *ib.*—conditions under which our troops fought, *ib.*—Colonel Shirley, 121.

Another Russian column advancing to attempt the recapture, 121—prostrate condition of our men, *ib.*—show of resistance attempted by some officers and men, 122—its effect, *ib.*—the Russian column faltering and coming to a stop, 123—and falling back, *ib.*—the English at break of day still retaining their hold, *ib.*

The share Fortune had in bringing about this result, 123—execution meanwhile of the needed works, 124—strange prostration (from fatigue) of officers after the victory, *ib.*—Colonel Campbell, Captain Wolseley, *ib.*—killed, wounded, and missing, 125—spoils, *ib.*—the Allies on their advanced front, *ib.*—change experienced by the garrison and inhabitants, 126—continuance of the third bombardment, *ib.*

Kartacheffsky Battery, the, iii. 405 note.

'Kartaschewsky' or 'Telegraph' Battery, iii. 420.

Katcha, the valley of the, ii. 131, 155, 161, 522, 527 *et seq.*—advance on the, iii. 26—the village on its banks, [illegible]—the Allied army bivouac on the, 29 *et seq.*, 71 note, 75, 79, 95 *et seq.*, 138, 139 *et seq.*, 168, 226 note, 339, 399, 419.

Katchinsky, Captain, iii. 472.

Kazan column, defeat of the, ii. 431.

Kazatch, bay of, iii. 103 *et seq.*, 278; v. 26; vi. 97, 103.

Kazatch, the port of, Lord Raglan's body conveyed to, viii. 295—the road to, lined on each side by double ranks of infantry, 297.

Keith, Lord, vi. 84 note.

Keller, M., vi. 160 note.

Kelly, Colonel, opposes night attack on Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 90, 91, 93, 94, 95—wounded and taken prisoner, 96 and note.

Kennedy, Mr, viii. 176.

Kentugai, ii. 192.

Ker, Captain, v. [illegible]2 note, 85 note, 87 note.

Kertch, the recalled expedition to, and effect of the recall, vii. chap. x.

KERTCH, THE RENEWED EXPEDITION TO, WITH ITS SEQUEL IN THE SEA OF AZOF, AND ON THE CIRCASSIAN COAST, for preliminary statements, see part of vii. chap. x., and in particular, pp. 252 to 257—happy effect produced by the enemy's mere sight of the stir observed in the port of Kamiesh, viii. 38—disposition of the armada, 39—its [illegible] 40—the strength of Baron W[illegible]gel, *ib.*—his retreat, 42—unopposed landing of troops, *ib.*—Sir George Brown's measures on shore, 43—Baron Wrangel's destruction of his coast batteries, *ib.*—retreat of Russian troops, *ib.*—destruction of food by Baron Wrangel, 44—the squadron of, *ib.*—M'Gillop's exploits, *ib.*—the fate of the squadron, 45—disembarking operations, 46—channel into the Sea of Azof found and buoyed, 46—Miranda reaching the

ntrance of the Se[illegible] of Azof, *ib.*—advance of the la[illegible] forces through Kertch, 47—to Yeni Kalé, *ib.*—disorders that followed the invasion, *ib.*—the limited authority of Sir George Brown, 48—prayer of the people of Kertch to Sir George, *ib.*—his rejection of their entreaties, 49—disorders on the march and in Yeni Kalé, *ib.*—cessation of all misconduct of the English troops, 50—measures taken by Sir George Brown for the maintenance of discipline, *ib.*—their result, *ib.*—the Tartars in Kertch destroying and plundering, *ib.*—the measures taken by Brown and the people of Kertch, 51—failure of the measures taken, 52—continued disorders in, 53—the committers of outrages, 54—further continuance of disorders in, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's indignation, *ib.*—his approval on 31st May of Brown's measures, *ib.*—Sir George not blamable for omitting to repress the disorders of the French, 55—friendly disposition of the Tartars, *ib.*—sufferings entailed on the sick and wounded Russians by the pillaging of the hospitals, 57—letter on their behalf from Baron Wrangel, *ib.*—the meeting at Yeni Kalé, 58—first results of the expedition, *ib.*—the main object gained, 59—the Allied admirals entering the Sea of Azof, 60.

Captain Lyons (Miranda) takes the command of the united flotilla, 60—nature of the operations undertaken in the Sea of Azof, *ib.*—fate of the four surviving war-ships of the Kertch squadron, 61—unchallenged mastery of the Allies in the hitherto closed sea, *ib.*—access thus obtained to the interior provinces of Russia, *ib.*—the seat of industry that Lyons disturbed, 62—his task not one leading to battle, *ib.*—his task against vessels found at sea, 63—[illegible] those that had fled towards land, [illegible] operations off the Spit of Ber[illegible]k, *ib.*—the wrecks of the four war-steamers that had escaped from Kertch, 64—off the town of Berdiansk, *ib.*—Lyons engaging the port of Arabat, *ib.*—plan of summoning the authorities, *ib.*—the rejections they elicited, *ib.*—these compared with the acts of the authorities professing defiance, 65—operations at Genitchi, *ib.*—operations at Tagonrog and the mouths of the Don, 67—the good seamanship manifested by the French and the English, 72—operations at Mariupol, Gheisk, and on the shore of Kiten Bay, 73—losses of the Russians, 74—of the Allies, *ib.*—causes of their immunity, *ib.*—greatness of the havoc, *ib.*—many of the vessels destroyed Greek, *ib.*—the moral stress put on Russia by taking the Sea of Azof, 76.

Attack on Soudjak-Kalé and Anapa recommended, 78—troops despatched for the purpose, *ib.*—fall of Soudjak-Kalé, *ib.*—attack of Anapa peremptorily forbidden by Louis Napoleon, 79—Pélissier's determined resistance to the prohibition, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's censure on the French Emperor, *ib.*—fall of Anapa, *ib.*—the enemy's forced abandonment of the whole Circassian coast, *ib.*—troops left to guard the Straits, *ib.*—the rest brought back, *ib.*

General results of the Kertch Expedition, 81—these not attained by surprise, 82—the true explanation found in the Czar's sheer want of power to withstand the two invasions, 83—Lyons the originator and eager advocate of the Expedition, *ib.*—his zeal shared by Admiral Bruat, *ib.*—and he received from Lord Raglan a warm, never-failing support, 84—still Pélissier, by his propulsion of the measure against the will of the Emperor, became the conqueror of the greatest obstacles, *ib.*

Effect of the success on Louis Napoleon, 85—in the camps of the Allies, *ib.*—on the Russians, *ib.*—the stress it put on their Czar, 87.

Kertch, Straits of, vii. 249—enemy's endeavours to guard, 250—the town of, iii. 159; vii. 250, 253—the Peninsula of, 250, 251.

Kertchine Peninsula, the, vii. 250 *et seq.*; viii. 7, 39, 43, 47, 56, 58, 81, 82, 258 *et seq.*

Kesler, i. 256.

Key and star, the delivery of the, to the Latin monks, i. 325 note.

Khantor Pass, iii. 105.

Khomatoff, General, iii. 37, 127, 158, 214; viii. 78, 80, 82.

Khomenko, viii. 119.

Khrouleff, General, attacks Eupatoria, vii. 92—his defeat, 55—leads sortie against the French, 87—his repulse, 89; viii. 17, 21, 92, 100 *et seq.*, 107, 108, 150, 159, 197.

Khroustchoff, General, vii. 66 *et seq.*

Kidd, Lieut., viii. 176.

King Battery, the, vii. 37 and note, 78, 355.

King, Captain, vii. 211 note.
King, Cornet William Affleck, iv. 230.
King, William, v. 351.
Kingscote, Colonel Nigel, vi. 208, 341.
Kingscote, Nigel, v. 389.
Kingsley, ii. 383.
Kinloch, Captain, v. 250.
Kiriakoff, General, ii. 236 note, 238, 240, 241 note, 268, 285, 289, 292, 294, 300; ii. 401, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412 note, 415 note, 420 note, 499, 507, 508, 511, 513 note, 514, 521, 527, 535 *et seq.*—his stand after the battle of the Alma, iii. 33, 160 *et seq.*, 228.
Kiten Bay, operations on the shore of, viii. 73.
Kitspur, the, v. 95 *et seq.*, 106, 134, 167, 178, 187, 194, 196, 197 *et seq.*, 203, 208, 210, 214 *et seq.*—reinforcements brought to the Kitspur, 225, 226, 227, 228, 230, 234, 238, 239, 241, 244, 257, 258 *et seq.*—retrospect of the fighting on the, 291—their results, 292, 313, 314, 341, 386, 388 *et seq.*, 406 *et seq.*, 450 *et seq.*
Knollys, Lieut.-General, vi. 371 note.
'Kokana,' the, iv. 81.
Kolivansk battalions, the, v. 114 *et seq.*, 131.
Koolikoff field, iii. 150.
Korniloff, Vice-Admiral of the Russian navy, i. 98; iii. 24 note, 43, 121, 129 *et seq.*—his ride to the Alma battle-field, 136, 137—instructed by Mentschikoff to close the entrance to the harbour of Sebastopol, 138, 140, 141 *et seq.*, 147—fruitless resistance to Mentschikoff's plan, 159 *et seq.*, 160, 167 note—commander of the forces on the north side of Sebastopol, 170, 171, 183, 184, 185, 188, 190—he moves to the south side with a strong force, 191—he is invested with the supreme command, *ib.*, 192—he joins with Todleben in attempting to defend the south side, 193, 197, 199, 200—he joins with Todleben in ordering the fleet to be dismantled, and applying its resources to the defence of Sebastopol, 203, 211, 214, 215, 217, 222 note, 223, 230, 332, 334, 345—his training and services, 360—his staff, 361, 362, 363, 365, 366—his conversation with Mentschikoff, 375, 377, 378, 379—his presence in the Redan, *ib.*—his visit to the Malakoff, 381—the wound he received there, 382—his death, 383—the heroic quality of his nature, *ib.*, 384, 385, 569; vii. 43; viii. 224, 228, 229.
Korte, i. 242.
Kostmaroff Battery, the, injuries to, v. 190.
Kostrukoff, Colonel, viii. 73, 83.
Kotzebue, General, iii. 124 note.
Kouban, the fortress of, viii. 80, 81.
Koudriazell, Ensign, v. 14.
Koullali, hospital at, vi. 147. See Stanley, Miss.
Kourganè Hill, the, ii. 231 and note, 235, 238, 242, 243 *et seq.*, 286, 305, 310, 314 *et seq.*, 366—warlike display of the Russians on the, 368, 384, 416, 421, 422, 434—the attack on, 453, 462 note, 476, 489, 492, 495 *et seq.*, 536; iii. 137.
Kraievsky, Colonel, viii. 100 *et seq.*
Krasnoff, General, viii. 70, 83.
'Kriegbereitschaft,' the condition of, as regards Prussia, vii. 307.
Kronsikoff, v. 170 note.
Krüdener, Baron, iii. 366.
Krudener, Colonel, iv. 57.
Kullali, the hospital at, vi. 215, 413.
Kvetzinski, General, ii. 243, 286, 314, 370, 375, 379, 384, 386 *et seq.*, 416, 417, 461, 462 note—his defeat, 470—and retreat, 471—is wounded and disabled, 473, 513 note, 537.
Kynaston, Commander, iii. 438, 448 note.

Laboratory Ravine, the, vii. 104 note.
Lagondie, Colonel, ii. 225.
'La Haie Sainte,' viii. 293.
Laing, Dr Sidney, vi. 443 note.
Lainsecq Battery, the, v. 438 note.
Lake, Colonel, v. 183 note.
Lake, Lieut.-Colonel, ii. 128.
Lambert, Commander, viii. 64.
Lamoricière, General, i. 243.
Lancaster Battery, the, v. 107, 433, 469 note; viii. 103, 153, 156, 195.
Land Quarantine Bastion, iii. 125 *et seq.*, 302, 342 *et seq.*, 365 *et seq.*—partially destroyed, 367.
Landrey, Lieut., viii. 188.
Land service, the, strength of England in 1809, not including her Indian establishments, vi. 461.
Land-transport corps, formation of a, 385.
Laufrey, M., referred to, vi. 70 note.
Lansdowne, Lord, vi. 318.
Larchey, General, on dangers of electric communication, vii. 258, 271.
Lawrance, Colonel, ii. 262 note, 301, 318 note, 321 note, 324 note, 325 note, 337 note, 339 note, 347 note; iii. 80, 89; v. 85 note.
Lavalette, M. de, i. 46, 53, 130, 325.
Lavarande's, General, brigade, viii. 97 *et seq.*—his death, 102.

Lawaestine, General, v. 234.
Layard, Mr, iv. 327 note.
Layland, Thomas, v. 351.
Lazareff, Admiral, iii. 121.
League, the, for the defence of the Sultan, i. 505.
Leaven bread for soldiers, vi. 10 note.
Le Bris, Captain, at Kertch Expedition, vii. 269.
Ledgeway, the, v. 250, 254, 274 *et seq.*
Liftô, General, i. 243.
Leiningen's, Count, mission to the Porte, i. 72—result of, 91, 486; ii. 61.
Le Jeune, i. 256.
Le Jeune, Captain, viii. 71.
Lemprière, Captain, death of, vii. 209, 211 note.
Lemprière, Lieutenant, v. 159.
Leslie, Captain, ii. 391, 472.
Letter of Service, quaint expedient of, vi. 29.
Letters of Service, vi. 56, 83, 86.
Levaillant's division, v. 78.
Levant, engineer officers sent to the, i. 403—our hospitals in the, vi. 213.
Levoutsky, General, advance of his force, iv. 53, 58.
Lewin, Lieutenant, v. 165 note.
Lewis, Sir George, vi. 378 note.
Lidwell, Lieut., ii. 365 note, v. 87, 82 note.
Lieven, Madame, on new Czar's policy, vii. 312.
Light Brigade, the charge of the, iv. 161 *et seq.*—the wild mistake of the, viii. 257.
Lighthouse, the guns near the, v. 100.
Likhatcheff, Admiral, iii. 142 note, 174 note, 364 note.
Lime-juice ordered by Dr Andrew Smith, vi. 139.
Limitation of Black Sea fleet, question of, at Vienna Conference, vii. 320 *et seq.*, 327.
Lindsay, Captain Robert, v. 250.
Lindsay, Colonel Charles, v. 223.
Lindsay's command of the detachment of Inkermann, iii. 491; iv. 33, 42 *et seq.*, 60, 69, 70, 72, 73, 80, 156 note, 177, 187, 189, 193, 210 note, 217 *et seq.*, 275, 277 note, 278—battalions on the Causeway Heights, 287—his questions regarding the exploit of the Light Brigade, 324, 329—the Allies acquiesce in his capture of the Turkish redoubts, 333, 336, 339, 343—results of his enterprise, v. 1 *et seq.*, 19, 25, 46, 49; vi. 3, 114, 262.
Listowel, Lord, ii. 361 note.
Lloyd, Lieutenant, iii. 420 note.
Lloyd, General, ii. 423.
Loaring, Captain, viii. 51.
Lobanoff-Rostoffsky, Colonel Prince, viii. 65, 77, 83.
Loch, Mr George, iii. 14 note, 23, 235 note.
Lockwood, Captain, iv. 210 note, 316—the supposed fate of, 317, 318.
Lockyer, General, vii. 211 note.
Lodgments, Russian, oppressive nature of, vii. 15.
London, the defence of, vi. 24 note.
Louis Napoleon Bonaparte, Prince, President of the French Republic, and the *coup d'état* of the 2d December 1851, vol. i. chap. xiv.—immediate effect of the *coup d'état* upon the tranquillity of Europe, 324—the policy which it necessitated, *ib.*—the French Government coerced the Sultan into measures offensive to Russia, and then sought an alliance with England, 325—personal feelings of the new Emperor, 326—the French Emperor's scheme for superseding the concord of the four Powers, 327—the nature of the understanding of midsummer 1853 between France and England, 332—his ambiguous scheme of action, 344—his ostensibly pacific diplomacy, 345—he engages England in naval movements tending to provoke war, *ib.*—he does nothing to thwart the success of the Vienna Note, 354—his means of putting a pressure upon the English Cabinet, 369—his violent urgency for an advance of the fleets to Constantinople, 371—his proposal, 386—its ambiguous character, 387—he presses upon the English Cabinet, 388—his letter to the Czar, 407—England's engagements with, 448—his relations with Lord Palmerston, 456—message from, to the Chambers, 471—effect of personal government by, 479.

He greets Lord Raglan in Paris, ii. 27—he checks St Arnaud's plottings, 38—course taken by, 69-124—his charge of timid counsels, 158—announces the rumoured fall of Sebastopol to troops, iii. 512—error committed by the Emperor under the excitement of the tidings, 518—publication of despatches and plans disparaging to the English, *ib.*—his imprudent letter to Madame St Arnaud, 527—its immediate consequences, *ib.*—questions as to the real meaning of the Emperor's allusion, 529—his interference in the conduct of the war, vii. chaps. v., vi., viii., ix., x., xi.; and viii. chaps. i., iii., ix.

Loukoul, Cape, ii. 227; iii. 132, 136 *et seq.*, 142 *et seq.*
Lourmel, General, iii. 309.
Lourmel's brigade, ii. 413, 520.
Lourmels, the, ii. 542.
Lovell, Captain, R.E., ii. 128.
Low, Major, iv. 297.
Low, Captain Alexander, iv. 230.
Lowry, Lieutenant, viii. 120.
Lucan, Lord, ii. 220 *et seq.*, 453, 492, 505—takes possession of Duvankŏi, iii. 28, 79 *et seq.*, 89, 160, 293—his command of the cavalry division, iv. 3—his want of experience in the field, *ib.*, 4, 7, 10, 14, 17—Lord Cardigan's attitude of antagonism to, 18—at battle of Balaclava, 41 *et seq.*, 46, 47, 50, 53, 56, 60, 62 note, 69, 84, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94—his suppression of Scarlett's despatch recommending Elliot for promotion, 130 note—his orders and instructions, 137, 138 note, 140, 155-158, 165—how Lord Cardigan mistook his orders, 169, 173, 174, 179, 180, 181, 183, 187, 190, 191, 194, 195, 202—his order to Lord Cardigan, 203, 205, 207, 218-231, 243 note, 255, 256 note, 265, 279, 281, 283—Lord Raglan's opinion as to the way in which Lord Lucan supported the Light Brigade, 285 note, 286, 318—his interview with Lord Raglan, 322, 335, 336, 338—explanatory statements laid before Mr Kinglake by, 359—papers relating to the recall of, 374—the animadversion of the Commissariat Commissioners on, vi. 369 *et seq.*
Luce, Lieutenant, iii. 446, 448 note.
Luder's, General, corps d'armée, i. 53.
Lushington, Admiral, on the Russian fire of grape, viii. 183 note.
Lushington, Captain, iii. 8 note, 9 *et seq.*, 297, 427 note, 490 note; v. 38.
Luxmore, Lieutenant, ii. 313.
Lyon, Mr William, vi. 393 note.
Lyons, Sir Edmund, Rear-Admiral, ii. 126—his knowledge of the 'Eastern Question,' 129, 132, 133 *et seq.*, 141, 142, 148, 157, 160, 172, 173 note, 177; iii. 14 *et seq.*, 45—reconnaissance by, 50, 72 *et seq.*, 101, 104—he recommends an assault of Sebastopol, 234—his renewed counsels, 239, 259, 284, 317 note, 320, 321, 326 note—approves of naval attack on the seaports, 327, 331—on the naval attack, 386, 392, 408, —on board his flag-ship Agamemnon attacking Fort Constantine, 414, 422 *et seq.*, 433—his measures for obtaining reinforcements, *ib.*—the effect of his measures, 434, 436 *et seq.*, 441, 443, 455—his responsibility for the attack on the stone forts, 464, *ib.*, 466; v. 27, 28, 84; vi. 372; vii. 41, 47—invited to attend conference, 77—commands expedition against Kertch, 257, 262, 265—turns back, 269; viii. 39—in command of the renewed Kertch Expedition, 69—his recommendation to attack Soudjak-Kale, 78—original suggester of the Kertch Expedition, 83, 249—he forces on the invasion, 255, 256—his grief at Lord Raglan's death, 290.
Lyons, Sir Edmund, Admiral, extract from a memorandum of a conversation held with, which was made by Mr George Loch, Feb. 10, 1856, iii. 539.
Lyons, Captain, viii. 46—takes the command of the united flotilla in the Sea of Azof, 60, 62, 63—he engages the fort of Arabat, 64 *et seq.*, 67, 68 *et seq.*
Lyons, Colonel, ii. 184 note, 195 note, 196 and note, 264 note.
Lyons, Colonel, ii. 308 note; viii. 132.

M'Creagh, Captain, iv. 140.
Macdonald, ii. 383; v. 273.
Macdonald, Alexander (Adj.), v. 253.
M'Donald, Captain A. M., ii. 313.
Macdonald, Captain, v. 347.
M'Donald, Lieutenant, adjutant of the 95th, at Inkerman, v. 501.
Macdonald, Major James, v. 205, 275 note.
Macdonald, Mr, and the 'Times' Fund, vi. 430, 432, 434.
M'Donnel (Sub.), iv. 140.
M'Gee, Major, v. 82 note, 383.
M'Gillop's, Lieutenant, exploits, viii. 44.
M'Grath, John, iii. 8.
M'Gregor, Sir James, vi. 34 note.
M'Gregor, Dr, vi. 427.
M'Intosh, Donald, v. 351.
Mackenzie, Brigade Major, v. 65, 83, 86 note.
Mackenzie's Farm, iii. 28, 37, 58—R[illegible] 59, 72, 79 *et seq.*—Lord Raglan m[illegible] towards, 85—used as a temporary ba[illegible]rack, 92, 113, 228-232; iv. 44; v. 49; viii. 24, 228.
Mackenzie Heights, the, iii. 159, 161 *et seq.*, 186, 218, 278 *et seq.*; iv. 41, 71; vi. 4 note, 94, 261—proposed storming of, vii. 239, 243, 385, 372; viii. 28, 256.
Mackenzie, Lieutenant, viii. 66, 71.
Mackenzie, Major, vi. 292 note, 348.
Mackenzie Range, Mentschikoff occupies the, iii. 300.
Mackie, his Scotch tenacity, v. 132.
M'Killop, Lieutenant, viii. 61.

Mackintosh, General, ii. 164 note—his account of the land defences of Sebastopol, iii. 52 and note, 53—on Balaclava, 103 note.
M'Mahon, Major, iv. 46, 281.
M'Murdo, Colonel, appointed to organise a land-transport service, vi. 320, 385—his zealous labours, 386.
M'Mahon, Marshal, vi. 44 note.
M'Neill, Sir John, and Colonel Tulloch on the road question, vi. 115 note.
M'Neill, Sir John, vi. 321, 368, 370, 374.
Madden, Mr, iii. 432.
Magnan, General, i. 235—his part in the midnight plot, 236, 237, 313.
Mainprise, Mr, iii. 407.
'Maison d'eau,' iii. 356 note.
Maitland, Major, v. 266—his daring exploit, 270.
Malady which occasioned deaths in hospital, note respecting the description of, vi. 472.
Malakoff Hill, the, iii. 166 note.
Malakoff, the knowledge regarding the, iii. 52, 216—Korniloff on its weakness, 217, 235—the approaches to the, 290, 342, 354, 366—guns on, dismounted, 368—Korniloff's visit to the, 380, 470-476—its ruined front, 496; v. 100—Burgoyne's insistence upon assailing, vii. 21, 22, 352, 353—closing gorge of, 11, 352—French war against, 31—disposition of troops, 36—works against, 37—frustration of designs regarding, 105—reluctance of French to attack, 128—new obstacle to siege of, 79; viii. 25, 95—impetuous advance of the French on the, 107, 109, 139, 151, 182—the French operations against, 193—the bombardment of, 194, 197, 208 *et seq.*—the still defiant, 271, 273, 302.
Malakoff Tower, the, iii. 123 *et seq.*, 126, 193 *et seq.*, 302, 309, 335; v. 83; vii. 185.
Malakoff Work, the, viii. 156, 158 *et seq.*
Malcolm, Lieutenant, v. 86 note.
Malmesbury, Earl of, i. 51 note.
Malta, English troops sent to, i. 404.
Malta, ii. 139; vi. 93.
Mamelon, proposed French attack of, vii. 30, 37, 73, 78, 79, 105, 354—Canrobert's reason for declining to seize the, 81, 82—memorandum as to occupation of, 83; viii. 103, 110, 202.
Mamelon Height, viii. 95.
Mamelon, the Green, viii. 90.
'Manchester, School of,' i. 190.
Manley (Greys), iv. 113.
Manley, Major, iv. 114, 132 *et seq.*
Man-of-war Harbour, iii. 195, 237, 277, 302 *et seq.*, 351, 376, 378, 395, 475.
Manteuffel, Baron, i. 438, 470, 489.
MARCH FROM THE ALMA TO THE BELBEC, AND COUNSELS OF THE ALLIES THERE PREVAILING: disposition and state of the Allied armies after the battle of the Alma, iii. 1—state of the field after the battle, 2—fate of the wounded Russians, 5—expediency of a prompt advance after the victory won by the Allies, 13—the halt on the Alma, 14—abandonment of the resolve to attack the North Fort, 14, 22—Lord Raglan and Sir E. Lyons of opinion it should at once be attacked; 23—the first of the 'lost occasions,' 25—advance to the Katcha, 26—Lord Raglan's cavalry at the Belbec, 28—the causes of the hesitation at the French Headquarters, 30—the advance of the Allies delayed at the request of St Arnaud, *ib.*—the advance resumed, 31—Sebastopol in sight, *ib.*—signs of the ruined condition of the Russian army, 32—the invaders descend into the valley of the Belbec, 33—reconnaissance by Lord Cardigan, *ib.*—the resolve to abandon the old plan of the invasion, 34—the design of operating against the defences of, from the north, 35—strength of the reasons for attacking the North Side, *ib.*—the time had now come for a final decision, 36—the Star Fort and its defences, 37 *et seq.*—the forces available for the defence, 42—policy of attacking the North Fort, 43—the objections against attacking the North Side, 45—the grounds of Sir John Burgoyne's conclusion, *ib.*—the objections to attack in the French Headquarters, 49—reconnaissance by Sir E. Lyons, 50—failure of the endeavour to persuade St Arnaud to resume the plan of attacking the Star Fort, 50—Lord Raglan well qualified to lessen the evil of a divided command, *ib.*—the dilemma of the Allies, 51—the available information regarding the land defences of Sebastopol, 52—information supplied by Colonel Macintosh and Mr Laurence Oliphant, 52 *et seq.*
Marches, losses by Russia in, vii. 325 and note.
'Marine Heights,' the, iii. 292.
Marine hospital, iii. 471, 475.
Marionpol, viii. 64—operations at, 73—the nature of the attack on, 304.
Markham, Captain, v. 5, 16.
Marmora, General de la, vi. 100—accession of troops under, vii. 213—cordiality of relations of, with Lord Raglan,

214, 371; viii. 259—his order of the day on the death of Lord Raglan, 291.
Marmora, the Sea of, i. 346; vi. 100.
Martimprey, General, ii. 132, 155, 524; iii. 1.
Martin, Cornet Wykeham, iv. 230 and note.
Martin's, Sir Theodore, 'Life of the Prince Consort' referred to, vi. 362 note; viii. 285 note.
Massa, Pasha, death of, ii. 52.
Massey's, Mr, 'History of England' referred to, vi. 92.
Maudes, Captain, Horse-artillery, iii. 85, 87 *et seq.*; iv. 38, 49, 50-55.
Mauleverer, Colonel, his advance with a wing of the 30th Regiment, v. 164, 165, 173, 182, 295, 297.
Maunsell, Captain, 354 note.
Maupas, i. 231, 232, 241, 312.
Maxse, Lieutenant, iii. 96; iv. 210, 225, 316, 317.
Maxwell, Mr, vi. 443 note.
Maycock, Lieutenant, ii. 313.
Mayow, Colonel, iv. 260—his charge, 261, 274, 276, 286, 288, 320.
Mayow, Major, iv. 211 note.
Mayrau, General, at night attack on Selinghinsk Redoubt, vii. 68, 70; viii. 151, 154, 155, 156, 158, 207, 210, 265.
Meat, fresh, and vegetables, the great difficulty in getting supplies of, vi. 102.
Mediterranean, the, i. 32, 346.
Medora, Captain of the, i. 377.
Melbourne's, Lord, Administration, i. 453.
Memorandum of the 21st of June, viii. 269.
Mends, Captain, ii. 146, 171 note, 173 note, 176 note.
Mensdorf, Count, i. 188, 482, 487.
Mentschikoff, Prince, appointment as ambassador to Constantinople, i. 96, 98—Turkish misgivings as to his mission, 99, 103, 122—commencement of struggle with Lord Stratford, 125, 126, 129, 132, 138, 141, 144, 146, 151, 152, 153—Turkish answer to the Russian demand, 161, 162, 163, 164, 166, 170—his departure, *ib.*, 171, 356, 360, 392, 417, 481, 484—at the Alma, vol. ii. chap. xvi.

His withdrawal to the south of Sebastopol, iii. 24, 29, 38—the state of his troops, 76, 84 note, 87, 106, 114, 121—his suggested works for the defence of Sebastopol, 124, 127, 129—he orders his army to assemble on the heights of Alma, 132, 133, 134, 136, 137, 138—he gives up his plan of attempting a stand on the Katcha, 139, 141, 144, 145—his resistance to Korniloff's appeals to change his plan, 147 *et seq.*, 149, 150, 156, 158, 159—his justification for the abandonment of Sebastopol, 159—encounter of his field army with Lord Raglan's force at Mackenzie Farm, 161, 162, 165, 168—state of seclusion of the Prince and his army, *ib.*, 169, 177—his promises of help to Sebastopol, 185, 189, 196, 198, 211, 213—Korniloff's opinion of his virtual retreat, 214, 220—his army, 221, 222—his tacit assent to Korniloff's assumption of command, *ib.*—his flank march, *ib.*—Todleben's explanation of his conduct, 224, 227, 228 note, 231—the evasion of his force from the town, 232—the probable strength of his forces, 242, 247 *et seq.*, 253, 261, 283—resumes the possession of the Mackenzie Heights, 300—he keeps the fate of Sebastopol in suspense, 332, 333, 335—sends reinforcements to succour the garrison, *ib.*, 339, 349—his movements on the morning of the first cannonade, 360, 374, 375, 376—his departure, 376, 384, 455, 508—he sends no despatch recounting the battle of the Alma, 530, iv. 27—his purpose of assailing the defences of Balaclava, 41, 334.

Reinforcements despatched to, v. 32, 45—his letter in cipher to the Governor of Warsaw, 46—establishes his headquarters near the ruins at Inkerman, 51, 57, 59 and note, 64—headquarters, 70, 97—northern half of Mount Inkerman left in his power, 100, 109, 110 note, 112, 177, 412 note, 414—his staff under distant artillery fire, 416, 428—his attempt to countermand the retreat, 433—his altercation with Dannenberg, 434—the Russian retreat undertaken without his being consulted, 454—his demonstration against Balaclava, 456—he decides to come out of Sebastopol and [illegible] the Russian dead, 459, 461, 468, 4[illegible] vi. 4 note—desertion of Sebastopol, 106 note, 243—orders attack of Eupatoria, vii. 48—relieved of command, 58, 108, 219—his order to sink the men-of-war, 227, 229, 256, 257.
Mentschikoff's negotiation, papers showing the causes which led to the rupture of, i. 507.
Menzies, Dr, vi. 150, 410 note, 433.
Merivale, Herman, vi. 13 note.
Metternich, Prince, and the defence of the Sultan, i. 31, 341.

Reynell, Lieutenant, v. 57 *et seq.*
Michael, Fort, iii. 11[illegible] *et seq.*
Michael, Grand-Duke, v. 60.
Michael, Mr, iii. 142 note.
Michael, Prince, ii. 242 note, 314 note, 337 note, 388 note, 422.
Mikriakoff Farm, v. 99, 107.
Mikriakoff Glen, v. 92, 126, 130, 132, 139, 147, 159, 175 *et seq.*, 318, 423.
Miller, Alexander, Adjutant of the Greys, iv. 148—his powerful voice, *ib.*
Miller, Lieutenant, iv. 113, 303 note; v. 139—his artillerymen have a singular conflict with the Russians, 140.
Milne's, Captain, ceaseless endeavours to charter vessels, vi. 46, 48.
Milner-Gibson, Mr, viii. 249.
'Minden yell,' the, v. 308 and note.
Minet, Captain, v. 391.
Mingrelia, ii. 90.
Mining and counter-mining operations, viii. 266.
Mining operations, skill of Todleben in, vii. 32, 354.
Mining, science of, Todleben's skill in, vii. 33.
Minor, Richard, v. 282, 286 note.
Minor, Sergeant, v. 251.
'Mission' of Niel, first knowledge of, received by Lord Raglan, vii. 222—paralysing effect of, 325 and note, 327.
Mist, the, at Inkerman, v. 475.
Mitchell, Captain, iii. 436.
'Mitrail,' the, iii. 204.
Mocquard, i. 238.
Moldavia, i. 184, 463; ii. 63.
Moldavia and Wallachia, protectorate by Russia over, vii. 317.
Möller, Lieutenant-General, iii. 134—commander of the land forces in Sebastopol, 160, 175, 191, 377, 384; v. 48 *et seq.*, 57 note, 68, 87, 110.
Monck, ii. 426.
Monet, General, v. 77—at night attack on Selinghinsk Redoubt, vii. 68, 369—receives several wounds, 70—visited by Lord Raglan, 71.
[illegible]ell, Mr, vi. 32.
Montagu, Lieutenant, ii. 382.
Montalembert, i. 290.
Montenegro, troubles in, i. 71—Count Leiningen's mission to the Porte, 72—Czar's mission to the Porte, *ib.*—disappearance of the Montenegro question, 125, 486.
Monteynard's brigade, viii. 148, 152 note.
Montgomery, Cornet, iv. 145, 222, 229, 317.
Monto, Colonel, iii. 99.
Morgan, v. 118, 464.
Morgan (Adj.), v. 151, 159.
Morgan (95th), v. 64 note.
Morgan, Hon. Godfrey Charles, iv. 171 note, 222.
Morgan, Lieutenant George, v. 334.
Morny, Count de, i. 225—a speculator rather than a politician, 228—appointed to the Home Office, 240, 243, 289 note; ii. 23.
Morris, v. 286 note.
Morris, Captain, iv. 41, 52—rebuffed by Lord Cardigan, 169 *et seq.*, 207, 213 note, 222—his left squadron confronted by Russian cavalry, 243—his charge, 244—wounded and taken prisoner, 246, 253 note, 258—the escape of, 311—he sees the body of Nolan, 312, 317; v. 183 note; viii. 315.
Morris, Captain C., R.A., in action with his battery at Inkerman, addendum to the Inkerman volume, and provisionally given at the close of vol. viii.—his discovery of Russians lying wounded, yet busily firing, *ib.*
Morris, General, French cavalry, iv. 94, 191, 264—his determination to support Lord Cardigan, 265, 269.
Mortar Battery, fight at the, vii. 98; viii. 153, 192.
Moscow, Bishop of, and the wooden image, ii. 341, 371.
Moseley, Mr, vi. 251.
Motterouge, General, vii. 206; viii. 19.
Mount Hasfort, iv. 278.
Mount Head, v. 91 note, 94, 166, 194 *et seq.*, 244, 265, 271 *et seq.*, 303, 363.
Mount Inkerman, v. 1 *et seq.*, 36—the defence of, 37—expected attack on, 38, 56 *et seq.*—defensive works on, vii. 5, 351—the redoubts on, viii. 94, 97 *et seq.*
Mount Rodolph, iii. 305, 309, 340 *et seq.*, 351, 353 note—signal shells sprung from, 354, 356—the fire from the batteries, 362, 370—French guns on, cease to fire, 373, 375 *et seq.*; v. 78; vii. 13.
Mowbray, Captain, v. 372.
Mundy, v. 85 note.
Mundy, Colonel, vii. 211 note, 212 note.
Murdoch, Clinton, vi. 13 note.
Murray, Lieutenant, viii. 165, 167—he is mortally wounded, *ib.*
Murray, viii. 180.
Mushroom Battery, the, iii. 363.
Mussenden, Cornet William, iv. 231.
Muttlebury (Sub.), iv. 140.

Nachimoff, Admiral, his command, i. 380; iii. 129, 142, 169, 187, 188, 191, 192, 364, 384; viii. 109.

Napier, Colonel, letter of, to Lord Fitzroy Somerset, ii. 584.
Napier, Sir Charles, Admiral, in the Baltic, iii. 510.
Napier, Sir Charles, General, ii. 327.
Napier's 'Peninsular War' referred to, vi. 39.
Napoleon, Prince, i. 312; ii. 225, 254, 259, 261, 264, 277—St Arnaud orders the advance of, 291 *et seq.*, 305, 390, 401, 403—his resemblance to his uncle in outward looks and in one of his intellectual attributes, *ib.*, 404, 406—the strength of his division, *ib.*, 409; v. 36, 77, 79, 514, 518, 535, 542—departure of, from Crimea, vii. 20 and note.
Napoleon and the Directory of 1796-97, allusion to, viii. 37.
Narrative, sources of the, i. p. xxv.
Nasmyth, Lieutenant, ii. 51, 52, 92.
Native auxiliaries, importance to England of, ii. 65.
Naval Brigade, operations of the, at Inkerman, v. 38.
Naval forces of the Allies, ii. 145.
Naval Library, iii. 118, 151—the English seen from the observatory on its summit, 186, 218; viii. 228.
Naval officers, skill of, in night attacks, vii. 90 and note.
Nesselrode's, Count, despatches, i. 46 note, 51, 102, 141, 171—his opinion of Lord Stratford de Redcliffe, 183, 185, 325 note, 340, 341, 352, 365, 375, 384, 390, 467, 468, 494 note, 500; vii. 313.
Neville, ii. 458 note; v. 220.
Neville, Cornet, iv. 145.
Newcastle, the Duke of, ii. 72 *et seq.*, 67 note—his draught instructions for the invasion of the Crimea, 95—these he submitted to his colleagues at Pembroke Lodge, *ib. et seq.*—the 'Sleeping Cabinet,' 96, 97—text of his instructions to Lord Raglan, 107 *et seq.*—his share of blame for the winter troubles, vi. 133, 134 note, 158, 164 note, 176—effect of Lord Raglan's despatches on, 226, 231, 240, 242—the Duke and Lord Raglan, the relations between, down to nearly the end of the year, 287, 288—his confidence in Lord Raglan, 290, 291, 292, 294, 295, 296, 299—disposing him to throw blame on Lord Raglan and the Headquarter Staff, 296 *et seq.*—the duties of departments, 303 note—the sinister course of action attempted by him and the Government, 299, 304, 305 and note, 336, 337—Ministers balked in their endeavour to sacrifice Lord Raglan's staff officers, 315, 316—their reason for not recalling him, *ib.*—the Duke as a statesman and administrator, 318, 320—his care of the sick, 409, 431, 441—his measures for accelerating telegraphic communication between Bulgaria and the Crimea, 289.
Newspaper correspondents in the Crimea, vi. 230, 231—the modern war correspondent, *ib.*, 235—how their gatherings in the Crimea found their way to St Petersburg, 236, 239—Lord Raglan's letter on the subject of the Press, 240—no cessation of the perilous disclosures, 244, 245, 257, 258—the general character of Russell's narratives, *ib.*
Nicholas I., the Emperor, i. 9—his career and character, 61 *et seq.*—conference with English statesmen, 67—his policy on the Eastern Question, 69—his plans in regard to the disturbance in Montenegro, 73—his views on the attitude of England towards Turkey, 84 *et seq.*—reception of his overtures by the English Government, 90—the Czar baffled, 91—result of Count Leiningen's mission, *ib.*—its effect upon the Czar, 92, 93, 95—proposal to put the Greek Church throughout Turkey under the protection of Russia, *ib.*—his choice of Prince Mentschikoff as ambassador, 96, 102—his rivalry with Sir Stratford Canning, 111—rage on finding himself encountered by Lord Stratford, 149, 171, 172, 182—his scheme for occupying the Danubian Principalities, 184 *et seq.*—his reliance upon the acquiescence of England, 189, 193, 195—state of, after knowing that the fleets of England and Russia were ordered to the mouth of the Dardanelles, 341, 342, 345—his proclamation, 363, 365—he prepares to invade Turkey, 395—his military error in occupying Wallachia, 396—his autumn and winter campaigns, 397, 398, 399—his reception of the 'English Peace Party,' 411, 418—he invades Turkey, 475, 477—the agony of the Czar after the battle of Giurgevo, ii. 63—rumoured change in the plans of, 131, 385—the Czar's state of expectancy, iii. 530—his reception of the tidings of the Alma, 530; vi. 169; vii. 58—effects of his discomfiture before Eupatoria, *ib.*—his death, 59—his fate an example of justice administered to highly placed criminal, 60—news of his death sent to Sebastopol, 107—effect of death of, on

prospects of peace, 312; viii. 219—his apparent want of knowledge concerning the glorious defence of Sebastopol, 226.
Nicholas, Fort, iii. 119 *et seq.*
Nicholas, Captain, v. 158.
Nicholas, Grand Duke, v. 60.
Nicholson, Captain, v. 155.
Nicolayeff, iii. 147 note, 366.
Niel, General, his 'Siège de Sebastopol' referred to, iii. 345, 373 note, 479 note—arrival of, in the Crimea, vii. 29—his mission, see the whole of chap. v.—at council of 4th March, 74, 115 *et seq.*—his position at French Headquarters, 116—his plan of campaign, 117, 118, 358—its execution, 120—change of plan caused by, 125, 128—assumes command of French Engineers, 198, 220, 221, 223, 227—proposes consideration of Emperor's plan, 277, 291, 298, 339—estimate of the Russian strength, viii. 7 note, 14, 27, 32—although representing the Emperor, he suffers an entire loss of power, 33, 85, 87, 88, 135—quoted, 148, 159 note—on the French loss on the 18th June, viii. 204 note, 238, 240, 241, 247, 270, 273, 274, 288—'Journal des Opérations du Génie' referred to, iii. 350.
Niel's 'Mission,' duration of harm done by, vii. 289.
Nightingale, Miss, her wholesome sway over the management of the military hospitals, vi. 418—the sources and growth of her power, 420—her devotion to a painful enterprise, 422, 424, 426, 429, 430—the result of her sway, 432.
Nikonoff Battery, the, viii. 139.
Noddall, Mr, iii. 407.
Nolan, Captain, ii. 197, 307, 308 note—his training, iv. 184—the bearer of Lord Raglan's 'fourth order' to Lord Lucan, 185—his arrival with the order,' 191—altercation with Lord Lucan, 195, 204—his appearance and eager gesture in front of Cardigan's brigade, 211—his probable object, 212—his fate, 214—question as to the degree in which blame justly attached to him, 215, 256—his letter to his mother, 313, 322, 338.
Norcott, Major, ii. 262 *et seq.*, 301, 316, 321 note, 324 note, 339 note, 347 note.
Norris, Troop-sergeant-major, iv. 145.
Northern fort, the, iii. 14 *et seq.*—the strength of the works, 22, 23, 43, 45.
North or Star Fort, the, viii. 255 *et seq.*
North side, iii. 220, 278 *et seq.*, 543; vi. 219; viii. 215.
North Side Lodge, iii. 222.
North Valley, iv. 32 *et seq.*—position of the Russian cavalry in the, 71, 74, 76, 83, 85, 165 note, 176, 180, 187 *et seq.*, 204 note, 212 *et seq.*—the fatal, 238.
Novolsilsky, Vice-Admiral, iii. 364.
Nugent, iv. 113.
Numbers at Inkerman, author's authority for his statements as to the, v. 510.

Ochterlonè, v. 444.
O'Connor, Sergeant Luke, wounded while carrying colours, ii. 347 note—receives thanks on the field, *ib.*, 439.
Odessa, ii. 135—the governor of, and the Russian wounded, iii. 10 *et seq.*, 159.
Officers and men, quality of the English, v. 479.
Officers killed and wounded at Inkerman, nominal return of, v. 506.
Ogilvy, Colonel, ii. 57 *et seq.*
O'Hara, Sergeant, iv. 259 note, 260, 275, 313 note.
Okhotsk Regiment, the, v. 179 *et seq.*
Old City Heights, v. 49 *et seq.*, 63, 119—proposed seizure of, vii. 242; viii. 24.
Oldershaw, Captain, arms No. VII. advanced battery, vii. 142—maintains in it afterwards the nearly five hours' fight of the 13th of April, 150, 155, 157, 161—his battery wrecked, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168—the touching request made to Oldershaw by the survivors of the fight, 169, 170, 177, 361, 364, 365, 367.
Oldfield, Captain, order of, at April bombardment, vii. 150, 165, 364—death of, 150 note, 364.
Old Fort, ii. 161, 169, 170, 173, 176, 206, 541; iii. 22, 245; vi. 237; viii. 291.
Oldham, Captain, iv. 207, 222, 229, 317.
Oliphant, Laurence, his instinctive power to see from afar where fields of action were opening, iii. 54—his report of the state of the land defences of Sebastopol, 55—the effect it produced, *ib.*—his 'Russian Shores of the Black Sea,' *ib.* note—Lord Raglan sees him, 56.
Oliphant, Mrs, her 'Chronicles of Carlingford' referred to, vi. 441 note.
Oltenitza, ii. 64.
Omar Pasha, i. 71—his forces in Montenegro, 72, 360 note—his opposition to Russia in Wallachia, 396; ii. 30—his army, 33, 40, 42, 44, 45, 50, 55, 61 note, 64, 105, 112, 132—in Eupatoria, vii. 47, 55, 75, 77—arrival of, at the Chersonese, 107—reconnaissance by,

212, 279, 284 — refusal of, to guard English trenches, 285; viii. 6, 89, 250 —feeling of, on the death of Lord Raglan, 291.
Opinion, the business of collecting, sorting, condensing, and selling, iii. 503.
Orange enthusiasm, warlike, iv. 111.
Orders of the day and other papers issued by Russian generals on the eve of Inkerman, v. 491.
Ordnance, Board of, vi. 45, 47 *et seq.*, 50 —Department, 14, 41 — the clerk of the, 26 note, 27.
'Ordnance,' the, vi. 27, 43.
Ordnance, pieces of taken from Canrobert's trenches, vii. 18, 352.
O'Reilly, Lieutenant Montagu, iii. 395.
Orion, Lieut.-Col. Larrony d', viii. 98, 99.
Orloff, Count, i. 96, 194, 435.
Orsova, i. 478.
Osborn, Commander Sherard, viii. 63— his operations at Arabat Spit, 73.
Osborne, Mr Sidney, vi. 436.
Osman Pasha, viii. 96.
Osmont, Major, governor of Eupatoria, vii. 49.
Osten-Sacken, General, vii. 18, 39, 71, 180.
Otarköi, the village of, iii. 29 note, 161 *et seq.*, 166, 168, 215.
Ottoman empire, see the 'Contents' table of vol. i.
Ouchakoff Ravine, viii. 99.
Ouroussoff, Colonel Prince, viii. 100 *et seq.*, 305.
'Ouvrages blancs,' the, vii. 67—great extension of, 104.
Overson, William, v. 251, 286 note.
Owen, Captain, vii. 211 note.
Owens, Ensign, v. 86 note.

Paget, Agnes, Lady George, vi. 436 note— at Lord Raglan's deathbed, viii. 280.
Paget, Lord George, ii. 214; iv. 46 *et seq.*, 207, 230, 231—his labour in regulating the advance, 232, 237 — advance of, with his Dragoons, 270, 272—further advance of, 273, 276, 294, 295, 296, 300, 307—he is one of the last to leave the valley, 308, 309, 321; v. 389, 431 note.
Pakenham, ii. 313.
Pakenham, Colonel, appointed successor to General Estcourt, viii. 263.
Palmer, Anthony, v. 247, 250.
Palmer, Lieut. Roger, iv. 230, 269, 296, 304.
Palmerston, Lord, i. 449-460, 503, 504— see also 67, 82, 337, 386, 388, 390, 450, 459; vi. 129 note, 318, 322, 347, 352, 378; vii. 237, 239, 349; viii. 237, 251.
Palus Mæotis (Sea of Azof), the, vii. 249.
Pamphiloff, Admiral, treatment of Lieut. Kelly by, vii. 96.
Panfiloff, Admiral, iii. 134.
Panmure, Lord, vi. 275—appointed Secretary of State for War, 321—his career and character, 323, 325, 327—his standard of morality, 328, 329—he was well provided with means for informing himself upon the business of the campaign, 330—his despatch of the 12th February, 331—the outrageous words it contained, 332, 333, 335—his reception of Lord Raglan's despatch of 3d March, 344 — his despatch in reply, 346 — eagerness of the Government, including Lord Panmure, to remove the Headquarter Staff, 347, 348, 349—adoption of General Simpson's report, 351, 385—instructions to the Sanitary Commissioners, 479—at Councils of War, vii. 237, 239—confidence of, in Lord Raglan, *ib.* 246, 298; viii. 236—his correspondence with Lord Raglan, 248 *et seq.*, 252, 263.
Panticapæum (town of Kertch), vii. 250.
Paratère, Abbe, iii. 112.
Paris, the, battery, iii. 119 *et seq.*, 148.
PARIS AND LONDON: state of expectancy, iii. 496 — arrival in London of the tidings of the battle of the Alma, 497 — and rumours announcing the fall of Sebastopol, 498 — the firing in London and the expectations thus raised, *ib.*—the cause of the firing, *ib.* —Royal and official gratitude to Lord Raglan and the army, 499—the venial character of the mistake as to the 'Fall of Sebastopol,' 512 — its origin, *ib.* — effect of intelligence upon the French War Office, *ib.*—reception in France of the tidings of the Alma, and the rumoured fall of Sebastopol, 517 —error committed by the French Emperor under the excitement of the tidings, 518—publication of despatches and plans disparaging to the English, *ib.*—the tendency of St Arnaud's despatch, 519—the participation of the English ignored, *ib.*—indignation of the English residents in Paris, 520—Lord Cowley's sound knowledge respecting the battle of the Alma, *ib.*—the Alliance apprehended to be in danger, 521 —Lord Cowley's remonstrance, 522— his interview with Drouyn de Lhuys, *ib.*—circumstance which allayed the indignation of the English, 523—tidings of St Arnaud's death, *ib.*—its effect, *ib.*—state of St Arnaud's military reputation in France, 526—the condol-

ence of the English Government, *ib.*—high opinion of the English army expressed by French officers, 527—the Emperor's imprudent letter to Madame St Arnaud, *ib.*—its immediate consequence, *ib.*—question as to the real meaning of the Emperor's allusion, 529—the Czar kept in a state of expectancy, *ib.*—his reception of the tidings of the Alma, *ib.*—change of plan on the part of the Allies, 534—determination to proceed by regular approaches, but at the same time to go on with the cannonade, *ib.*—cannonade of the 19th Oct., *ib.*—the six successive days of the cannonade which followed the 19th, 536—measures of the Russians to counteract the operations of the French against the Flagstaff Bastion, 538.

Parkinson, Mr, iii. 432.

Parliament, slowness of, i. 179—meeting and adjournment of, vi. 226—the beginning of grumbling heard, *ib.*

Paskievitch, the Czar seeks aid of, i. 399—his counsels, 400—he presses the siege of Silistria, ii. 50, 51, 64, 91; v. 46.

Pass, the main, at the Alma, ii. 230, 232 *et seq.*, 397, 421, 496, 527, 536—defence of the, v. 41; vi. 384.

Paté, General, viii. 18.

Patison, Captain, iv. 30 note.

Patriarchate of Constantinople, i. 171.

Patriotic Fund,' the, vi. 328 note.

Pattenden, Sergeant, iv. 144.

Patton, Colonel, ii. 392 note.

Patullo, Major, v. 297.

Paul batteries, the, viii. 43.

Paul, Fort, iii. 119 *et seq.*; viii. 57.

Paulet, Lord George, commanding Bellerophon, iii. 433—stands in to support the Agamemnon, 435.

Paulet, Lord William, at battle of Balaclava, iv. 46, 280, 282—in command at Scutari, vi. 421, 423 note, 437, 444.

Paul[illegible] General, at Inkerman, v. 48 *et* [illegible]57 *et seq.*, 109 *et seq.*—his troops, [illegible]0, 133, 176 *et seq.*—his forces, 439, 448, 468, 470 *et seq.*

Paynter, Captain, v. 183 note—his battery, 195 note, 198.

Peace negotiations, vii. chap. xii.

Peace negotiations with Russia, vii. 301 *et seq.*—union of Austria and Prussia with Western Powers, 301—defection of Prussia, 305—loyal course taken by Austria, 307—effect of Nicholas's death on prospects of peace, 312—peace negotiations at Vienna, 313—failure of peace negotiations, 327—the Austrian proposals, 328—dead-lock in front of Sebastopol, 332—difference in counsels of Western Powers, 339—resignation of De Lhuys, 342—unaccepted resignations of Lord John Russell, *ib.*—unanimity of English Cabinet, *ib.*—France and England once more in substantial accord, 343—vote of House of Commons, 347—change brought about by rejection of Austrian proposals, 348.

'Peace Party,' the, its mission to St Petersburg, 410—its share in bringing about the war, 79, 410-430, 482, 494 *et seq.*

Pearson, Captain, ii. 439.

Peel, Captain William, iii. 297 *et seq.*—feat of, 489; v. 273; viii. chap. vii.

Peel, General, vi. 361, 371 note.

Peel, Sir Robert, the Minister, his conference with Nicholas I., i. 67; vi. 430.

'Peelite' connection, the, vi. 318.

Peelite Ministers, secession of the four, vi. 351—their successors, 352—effect of the change, *ib.*

Pélissier, General, ii. 8, 532—appointed to command of 1st Corps d'Armée, vii. 39—his victorious fights for Cimetière Lodgments, 203—and the Sousdal Counter-guard, *ib.*, 206—command of Siege Army by, 242, 279, 281—his letter of 5th May and his growing ascendant, 282—requested by Canrobert, in conformity with Dormant Commission, to assume command, 290 and note—request declined by, *ib.* and note—command transferred to, 292, 299.

Pélissier, the new French commander, viii. 1—the nature of the man, 1-4—comes at once to complete accord with Lord Raglan, 4—his resolves, 10—by 'irrevocably' adopting and maintaining these resolves, he throws himself into a state of violent conflict with his Emperor, 12, 13—the fights that, at great cost of men, he victoriously maintains against some new counter-approaches, chap. ii.—the strife rages between him and Louis Napoleon, he maintaining his purposes rigidly against the Emperor, and silencing the Imperial emissary, that is, General Niel, chap. iii.—in defiance of the Emperor, he concurs with Lord Raglan in despatching the new Expedition to Kertch, and resists the prohibition by which his sovereign strove to prevent an attack upon Anapa, chap. iv.—in like defiance of the Emperor's will, he, in concert with Lord Raglan, executes the third

bombardment, and victoriously storms all the counter-approaches thrown out in the Karabelnaya, chap. v.—the rage and antagonism of his sovereign continuing, and inflicting upon him great torment, he loses during some days the full command of his powers, makes huge mistakes, and brings on himself the discomfiture of the 18th of June, chaps. vi. and vii.—though suffering under all circumstances a more than common load of distress, he meets the trial with courage, and proves himself great in adversity, 235 *et seq.*—he maintains himself in the confidence of Marshal Vaillant, the War Minister, and still, though with rather more caution than before his misfortune, fends off the irksome dictation attempted by Louis Napoleon, 238—thrown by Lord Raglan's death into a frenzy of grief, he records the event in his celebrated General Order addressed to the Army of the East, 282, 291.

Pennecuick's, Captain, battery, v. 122 note, 358—his guns, 161.

Pennefather, General, at the Alma, ii. 309, 311, 322, 343 note, 365 note, 419, 421, 453, 456, 462—at Inkerman, disposition of his troops before the battle, v. 38, 44, 57 *et seq.*—in charge of Mount Inkerman, 62, 64, 66, 71—the enemy's design to overpower, 73, 75—his line of pickets, 83, 94, 96, 100, 105, 106, 123—the plan of defence adopted by him, 125, 126—his control not superseded by Lord Raglan's presence on the field, 128—the Russian troops he had to encounter, 133, 138—the Under-Road column closing upon his camp, 141, 144—the decisive fighting on his left, 168, 171, 174, 180, 182, 183, 185, 189, 199, 209—his failure to get French troops to move, 212, 235, 239, 241, 261, 294, 297, 300, 306, 312—his losses on the Home Ridge, 314, 317 note, 319—he is assailed on his own ridge, 322, 329, 332 note, 335, 338—his disposition of the Anglo-French force, 339, 343, 347, 348, 352, 361, 367, 368, 381—the ruins of his camp, 382—and the 'Gap,' 385—message to Lord Raglan, 408—his interview with Lord Raglan and Canrobert, 409—his proposed advance, 432, 448—the strength thrown against his column, 448, 451—his tents, 463, 465, 471, 473 note.

Pennefather's report, extract from, to the quartermaster-general, dated the 6th October (morning November) 1854 v. 503.

Peninsula, the, viii. 256.

Pepys (Sub.), iv. 145.

Pera, vi. 147.

Percy, Colonel, ii. 381 note, 458; v. 223, 224, 256—his measures, 259—his return from the fight, 262, 272, 288.

Percy, Mr Joscelyne, vi. 436.

Percy Smith, Lieutenant, iv. 222.

Perekop, ii. 100—Isthmus of, 164, 237.

Péressip, the, iii. 117, 363, 378; viii. 163, 202.

Perrot, General, i. 233.

Persigny, i. 225—his intimacy with Louis Bonaparte, 233.

'Personal King,' the, vi. 55.

Personal Monarchy, the fall of, under George III. in 1809, vi. 462.

Persse, ii. 431.

Peto, Mr, and Mr Betts, the contractors, vi. 289 note, 385 note.

Philips, Lieutenant, ii. 313; iv. 231, 292.

Pickets of the Second Division, the arrangements under which the, were supplied at the Inkerman time, v. 490.

Pickets, table showing the numbers of the Second Division out on picket or skirmishing as picket supports, and computing approximately the number of collected troops remaining available for the second period of the fight, v. 500.

Piquet House, the, viii. 201.

Pisani, i. 61 note.

Pitt, Mr, vi. 43 note, 55, 57 *et seq.*, 66, 133 note.

Places, Holy, state of the dispute regarding the, i. 132, 135, 138.

Plevna, viii. 233.

Point Battery, viii. 154.

Poitevin, Lieutenant, ii. 514.

Poland, suggested invasion of, ii. 75.

Polhès, Colonel, viii. 106.

Polhill, ii. 342, 383.

Popoff, v. 113.

Portal, Captain, iv. 230.

Post-road, the, crossing the field of battle at Inkerman, v. 96 *et seq.*, 108, 135, *et seq.*, 211, 237, 259, 300, 305 note, 308, 319 note *et seq.*, 341, 356, 357, 362 *et seq.*, 384 *et seq.*, 405, 418, 436 *et seq.*, 453.

Powell, Colonel, v. 306 note; vi. 416 note.

Power, Mr, vi. 193 note.

Powers, concord of the, papers on the, i. 515.

Powers, the representatives of the four, assembled at Constantinople, i. 166—policy involved in the step, 167—unanimity of the four representatives, *ib.*—

their measures, *ib.*—Russia's ultimatum, 168—its rejection, 170—concord of the, 201—the French Emperor's scheme for superseding the action of the four, 327—treaty between the Sultan and the, 475.
Pozzo di Borgo, Count, ii. 71; iii. 119.
Pravadi, ii. 109.
Prendergast, Cornet, iv. 114, 149.
Prendergast, Dr, viii. 279, 280.
Prince Consort and the Government, vi. 355.
Principalities, the, i. 89.
Prindiville, John, v. 351.
Prisoners, English, generous treatment of, by the Russians, iv. 341—and in particular of Colonel Kelly, vii. 95 note.
Projectiles, weight of, in one salvo, vii. 133 note.
Prokesch, Baron, at Vienna Conference, vii. 313.
Prokophieff, Colonel, iii. 380.
Propontis, i. 347.
Prussia, King of, effect of personal government by the, i. 479—her share in causing the war, 488.
Prussia, personal government in, i. 9—foreign policy of, 31—defection of, 305, 306 note—exclusion of, from Conferences, 311 and note—Lord John Russell at Court of, 314.
Pruth, the, passed, i. 195, 342, 433, 444; ii. 107, 109; iii. 253.
Public opinion, iii. 505.
Publicity, danger arising from, vi. 224.
Pullen, John, v. 280, 283 *et seq.*
Pullen, Private, v. 252.

Quarantine Bastion, the, v. 78.
Quarantine Bay, the, iii. 125, 397 *et seq.*; v. 60 note, 463 note; viii. 17, 19.
Quarantine Fort, the, viii. 138.
Quarantine Sea-fort, iii. 119 *et seq.*, 390, 392—its defences, 396 *et seq.*, 448, 452, 464; v. 79.
Quarantine Station, the, at Kertch, viii. 56 note.
Quarries, the Work of the, viii. 87, 90 *et seq.*, 95, 110, 112, 113 *et seq.*, 166, 170, 178 *et seq.*
Quarry Ravine, the, v. 13 *et seq.*, 92 *et seq.*, 134 *et seq.*, 163 *et seq.*, 166 note, 178, 179, 191, 195, 198 *et seq.*, 215, 227, 257, 265 *et seq.*, 274, 283, 294, 298, 304 *et seq.*, 308 *et seq.*, 316 *et seq.*, 341, 357 *et seq.*, 362 *et seq.*, 391 *et seq.*, 418, 436 *et seq.*, 452.
Quarter-guard Point, v. 99, 145, 180.
Queen's Speech, the, August 1853, i. 338—Jan. 31st, 431.
Queen, the, her opinion on the proposed attack on Sebastopol, ii. 125—question why there was no 'Sir Herbert 'Taylor' to arrest the despatch of Lord Panmure's outrageous words to Lord Raglan? vi. 333—her Majesty's profound grief at Lord Raglan's death, viii. 280—her message to the army, 281—her private letter of condolence to Lady Raglan, 285.

Radcliffe, ii. 382.
Radziwill, Prince, iv. 251.
Raglan, Lord, commander of the British forces in the East. See vols. ii., iii., iv., v., vi., vii., and viii.
Railway, the, from Balaclava, vi. 385.
Rakovitch, Colonel, iv. 41.
Rassova, i. 398.
Rations, deficiencies in issue of, vi. 468—of the French soldier, 470.
Ravenshill, Lieutenant, iii. 238.
Rawlinson, Lieutenant, iv. 114.
Rawlinson, Mr, vi. 446, 447 note.
Ready, Jeremiah, v. 351.
Reconnaissances of the ememy's coast by Lord Raglan, viii. 254.
Recruiting, impulse given to, by the accounts of Inkerman, vi. 228.
Redan, Little, the, iii. 216—closing the gorge of, vii. 11, 352; viii. 139, 154, 156.
Redan, the, iii. 123 note, 126, 216, 237, 241, 302 *et seq.*—preparations to storm the, 312, 337, 342, 344—havoc wrought on, 368, 378 *et seq.*, 469, 471—great explosion in the, 473—retreat of the Russian infantry posted near the, 475—defenceless condition of, *ib.*—the opportunity there was for assaulting it, *ib.*—causes which prevented the Allies from seizing the opportunity, 476—the disabling of the, 483, 488, 534—cannonading, the, 536; vii. 12—pushing forward batteries against, 106—failure of English batteries against, 186—Niel's opinion as to attack of, 225; viii. 87, 90, 95, 110, 115, 139, 160 *et seq.*,—measures for assaulting the, 163, 166, 170-172, 176 *et seq.*—the heavy fire from, 192—the bombardment of the, 194—British losses resulting from the assaults on, *ib.*—the batteries of, 209 *et seq.*—the task of besieging, 269—objections to plans involving attacks on, 270—assaults on the, from a distance, out of harmony with the new French design, 271—General Niel on the proposed attack on the, 273, 275, 277, 288.
Redchid Pasha, viii. 39.

'Redoubt, Great,' at the Alma, ii. 238 *et seq.*, 257 — storming of the, 349 *et seq.*, 417, 421—the parapet of the, 434-444, 464 *et seq.* — Duke of Cambridge master of the, 472-535.
'Redoubt, Lesser,' ii. 239 *et seq.*
Redoubt Number Four, iv. 280.
'Red Tape,' the days of, iii. 498; vi. 357.
Regent, Prince, his moral plight, vi. 86—blame justly attaching to, and the Ministers, 89.
Reis Effendi, i. 121, 149.
Reshid Pasha, i. 165, 169, 185, 353, 357, 360 note, 485.
Retrospective inquiry, a, on the English war administration, vi. 55-91.
Reutlinger, Captain, viii. 119.
Reybell, i. 242.
Reyland, ii. 383.
Reynardson, Colonel, v. 197, 200.
Rhodes, vi. 147.
Richards, Captain, v. 193.
Rickman, Captain, defeats Zavalichine's column at Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 94.
Ridley, General, ii. 381 note, 437 note.
Rifaat Pasha, i. 104 *et seq.*, 146.
Rifle-pit, sinking of, vii. 14.
Road, English want of hands to make a, vi. 384—made at last by our men from Balaclava to Kadiköi, *ib.*—and by Bosquet's troops to the Col, *ib.*—between Balaclava and the camp, 462.
Road, imperial, the, viii. 42.
Road question, the, vi. 105 *et seq.*
Roadstead, the, v. 436 *et seq.*, 438; viii. 214—the French establish new batteries commanding the, 265.
Roadway between camp and port, vi. 105, 111, 120.
Roberts, Major H. B., iv. 156 note.
Roberts, Mr, ii. 133.
Roberts, Mr John, viii. 67, 73 *et seq.*
Robertson, Captain, iv. 140.
Robertson, Gilbert, iv. 145.
Robertson, Lieutenant, iv. 283.
Rochefort, Colonel, i. 271.
Rochfort, Lieutenant, vii. 212 note.
Rochow, Colonel, i. 188, 482, 489.
Rodolph Farm House, burning of the, by the Russians, iii. 345.
Rodolph, Mount, the silent guns on, iii. 468, 477—reconnaissance sent by the Russians to, 479, 483, 536, 538.
Roebuck, Mr J. A., vi. 317—his motion, 326 note — his committee, 352 — his peculiar position in the House of Commons, power and influence, 357, 362, 364.
Roger du Nord, i. 243.
Rogers, Assistant Commissary-General, vi. 4 note.
Rogers, Commander, iii. 427 *et seq.*
Rogers, Frederick, vi. 13 note.
Romaine, Mr, Judge-Advocate, his private MS. referred to, ii. 256 note, 269 note —saddle notes, 412 note, iii. 6, 236 note; v. 461; vi. 242, 394 note.
Rooper, Major, v. 367 note, 369.
Rose, Captain, v. 86 note, 165 note.
Rose, Colonel, i. 100—Rifiant Pasha's message to, 105—disclosures of the Turkish Ministers to Colonel Rose, 122, 484; ii. 45; iii. 329 note; viii. 106.
Rose, General, ii. 154; iii. 373 note, 374 note — on the discouragement of the French, 477, 515, 520.
Rose, Major, ii. 313.
Rose, Sir Hugh, vii. 111 note.
Rose's diary quoted, vi. 27 note.
Ross, ii. 348 note.
Ross, Captain, iv. 79; vi. 292 note, 343.
Ross, Sir Hew, vi. 31.
Roumelia, ii. 41, 45.
Rousset, M., a functionary of the French War Office, and a member of the Academy, his 'Histoire de la Guerre de Crimée' quoted, vi. 173 *et seq.*; vii. 195 note, 197 note, 297 and note; viii. 7 note, 28 note, 239 note, 230 note.
Routh's, Sir Randolph, 'Observations on Commissariat Service' referred to, vi. 99 note.
'Routine,' the days of, iii. 498.
Rowan, Lieutenant-General Sir William, vi. 371 note.
Rowlands, Captain, v. 121.
Rudiger, General, i. 98.
Rum, the value of, vi. 136 note.
Russell, Lord John, Prime Minister, i. 35; ii. 74 note; vi. 318, 352, 355, 389 note—at Vienna Conference, vii. 313, 314—his memory vindicated against the great attack made upon him in the summer of 1855, 322 *et seq.* See 328, 329, 337, 339, 342, 344, 345.
Russell, Mr Odo, vi. 211.
Russell, Mr W. H., of the 'Times,' vi. 237, 238, 255, 257—the general character of his narratives, 258, 283.
Russell, Sir Charles, v. 197, 247, 250, 262, 263.
Russia, personal government in, i. 9—power of, 12—natural ambition of, 54—its irresolute nature, 59—her share in bringing about the war, 480.
Russian army, the, the mechanic state of, iii. 153—sufferings of the, vi. 168.
Russian batteries, armament of those, which were opposed to the batteries of

he besiegers on the 17th of October, iii. 574.
Russian butchery of the wounded. See Addendum to the Inkerman volume, viii. 315—evidence of Captain Morris on the subject, *ib.*
Russian cavalry, strength of the, under General Ryjoff, which engaged General Scarlett's brigade, iv. 373.
Russian defence, the, during April bombardment, vii. 180—losses during, 181.
Russian Field Army, viii. 138.
Russian forces engaged in field operations during the battle of Inkerman, v. 486, 487, 488.
Russian seaport batteries, strength and armament of the three, which were engaged by the allied fleets, iii. 574.
Russian ships, sinking of, vii. 107.
Russian soldiers, their opinion of the English army, ii. 267.
Russian troops in Sebastopol, numbers of, vii. 351.
Russians, loss of the, by the fight on Mount Inkerman, v. 443.
Russians, strength of the, viii. 7.
Russians, the, decline to come out of Sebastopol and bury their dead, v. 459.
Rustchuk, ii. 56, 57.
Rustem Pasha, iv. 44, 60.
Ryan, James, v. 351.
Ryjoff, General, commander of the great mass of cavalry charged and routed by Scarlett in the plain of Balaclava, iv. 53, 74, 83, 84, 90, 91, 119, 158, 202, 277 note, 325.

Sacred costumes of the priests of the Greek Church, viii. 312.
Saddle-top Reach, the, v. 92 *et seq.*, 132 *et seq.*, 142, 146, 155, 159, 175, 180, 316, 373.
Sadowa Campaign, the, vi. 236.
Sailors, zeal and energy of the, ii. 186—losses borne by our, in April bombardment, vii. 178.
St Arnaud, Achille, Marshal, i. 230—is found in Algiers by Major Fleury, *ib.*—is suborned and made Minister of War, 231, 259—appointed commander of the French Army in the East, ii. 1, 8 *et seq.*, 22, 27, 28—his scheme for obtaining the command of the Turkish army, 32, 36—his scheme for obtaining the command of the English troops, 37—this defeated, *ib.*, 40, 45, 97—the force under him at Varna, 98—his information regarding the Russian forces in the Crimea, 101, 102, 107 *et seq.*, 112, 117, 123, 126, 131, 135, 141, 143, 144, 149-151, 154, 156, 158, 159, 163, 199—he confronts the Russians, 246, 248, 250, 251, 255, 259, 277 note, 290, 295—he pushes forward his reserves, 298, 306—his responsibility for the position of Prince Napoleon, 407—his position, 413—his situation at the Alma, 517, 519, 524, 533 *et seq.*—'marvels' done by his troops, 538, 539 note, 540 *et seq.*; iii. 13 *et seq.*, 25, 32—failure of the attempt to induce him to attack the Star fort, 50, 71—his serious illness, *ib.*, 76, 79, 107, 110—he ceases to command the French army, *ib.*—his death, 110, 112, 518, 522, 525, 526; vii. 245—his early intrigues, viii. 254, 255.
St Clair, Ensign, ii. 313.
St Clement's Gorge, v. 134, 178, 191, 198, 199 *et seq.*, 226, 229, 230—Russian column in, confronted by 95th, 257, 259, 289, 290, 393, 402, 410 note.
St Elias, the Church of, iv. 29.
St George, Monastery of, iii. 116.
St George's Brow, v. 91 *et seq.*, 108, 113 *et seq.*, 177—shot thrown to, 416.
St Georges, M., i. 237, 240.
St George's Ravine, v. 98, 133, 176, 433, 436 *et seq.*
St Nicholas, fort of, i. 384.
St Paul, Cape of, viii. 43.
St Vladimar, the Church of, iii. 508.
Saint Laurent, M., vii. 38.
Sak, ii. 197.
Salamis, the French fleet suddenly ordered to, i. 101.
Samsoon, i. 377, 380.
Sandbag Battery, iii. 287 note—at Inkerman, called by French troops the 'abattoir,' or slaughter-house, v. 104, 126, 134, 163, 166, 178, 182, 185, 187—the force near the, 188, 193, 194, 196 *et seq.*, 199, 201, 206 *et seq.*, 216—visit of Colonel Walker to the, 219, 220, 221, 224, 225, 226, 230, 232—the vice of the position maintained at, 238, 241, 247, 248, 254, 256, 265, 271, 272, 276, 278, 289, 290, 313, 363, 382, 385, 393 *et seq.*, 402—loss of the English at the, 444, 449, 450, 467.
Sandeman, iv. 145.
Sanitary Commissioners, appointment of, vi. 443, 447, 479.
Sankey, Captain, ii. 197.
Sankey, Quartermaster-General's Department, iii. 7.
Sapouné Heights, the, iii. 161; v. 53, 73; vii. 5.
Sapouné Mount, iii. 115.
Sapouné Ridge, the, iii. 60—286 *et seq.*; v.

36, 39—position of Cardigan's brigade on the, 42, 66 *et seq.*
Sappers' Road, the, v. 97 *et seq.*—the West Sappers' Road, *ib.*, 429—the East Sappers' Road, 98, 113 *et seq.*, 130, 133, 176, 470.
Sarandansky, M., viii. 217.
Sardinia, declaration of war by, vii. 213, 370.
Sardinian troops, arrival of, in the Crimea, vii. 215—relations between Lord Raglan and, *ib.*, 371—feeling of the, on the death of Lord Raglan, viii. 291.
Sargent, Captain, at the Alma, ii. 343, 383 — at Inkerman with the night pickets, and afterwards charging with a wing of the 95th in St Clement's Gorge, 64 note, 118, 257, 260, 314 note, 402, 404 note, 410 note.
Sassic, Lake, Russian troops at, vii. 53.
Saunders, ii. 383.
Saurin's brigade, viii. 155.
'Saxe-Weimar' hussars, iii. 87 note.
Sayer, ii. 382; v. 286 note.
Sayer, Hilton, v. 252.
Sayer's Collection quoted, viii. 297 note.
Scarlett, General, the command of the Heavy Dragoons, iv. 23 *et seq.*—is in march during the battle of Balaclava with a part of his brigade, when, a mass of Russian cavalry appearing on his left, he forms his plan of action, 87-90, 92—strength of the Russian force confronting him, 94, 98, 105 — his advance, 106-108, 114, 116, 120, 128, 130—English spectators of the charge with 300 of the Greys and Inniskillings, 136-140, 150—he cuts his way into, and through the Russian column, 154—result of the fight of his brigade with the Russian cavalry, 156—congratulations sent to, by Lord Raglan, 158, 160, 161—position afterwards of his heavy cavalry brigade, 191, 208, 255, 256 note, 283, 326 note, 337, 341, 372.
Schamyl, ii. 112.
Schaw, Captain, ii. 313.
Schilders, General, ii. 52, 65.
Schooli, iii. 215.
Schwartz Redoubt, iii. 125—havoc sustained by, vii. 188—lodgments in front of, 204—captured by French, 206.
Scots Fusilier Guards at the Alma, ii. 435, 436 and note, *et seq.*—note respecting the operations of the, 562—at Inkerman, v. 215 *et seq.*
Scots Greys, landing of the, iii. 27.
Scudery, General, iv. 43, 53.
Scurvy in the armies, vi. 183, 194.
Scutari, i. 347; vi. 4 note, 146, 149, 152, 293, 321, 338, 408-412, 418, 420 *et seq.*, 438, 444.
Sea of Azof, projected passage into the vii. 249 — importance of occupying, 252.
Seager, Lieutenant, iv. 231, 234, 288, 316.
SEBASTOPOL AFTER THE ENGAGEMENT OF 18TH JUNE: the veil between warring armies between Sebastopol and its besiegers, viii. 212—the garrison and its state of feeling towards the close of the engagement, 213—the Czar's infantry in grave need of encouragement, 215—whence apparently the fabrication of the 18th of June, *ib.*—thanksgivings, 216—just right of the garrison to indulge in self-gratulation, *ib.*—Todleben wounded, 217—and removed from Sebastopol, *ib.*—the part he still took, *ib.*—the way in which, until wounded, he had brought his power to bear, *ib.*—the difference caused by his removal, 218—no thanksgiving thenceforth for the Russians, *ib.*—but approaching defeat in the field, *ib.*—the position of Todleben in Sebastopol, 219—and in war generally, 220—the glory attaching to the early defence of Sebastopol, 224—this kept from the Russians themselves, *ib.*—words recalling the early defence of Sebastopol, 227—inferences to be drawn from the early defence of Sebastopol, 229—defence of Sebastopol after the 17th of October, 230—Todleben, *ib.*—his superlative part in the war, *ib.*—a popular maxim twice over refuted by the early defenders of Sebastopol, 231—Todleben's personal glory severed from the subsequent reverses of Russia, 232.
SEBASTOPOL AT BAY: the undertaking to defend it, iii. 114—state of the land defences, 115 — the sea defences, 119—nature of the ground on the land side of, 122—absence of land defences on the South Side, 124—the armament of the works, 126 — strength and disposition of the Russian forces in the Crimea, *ib.* — abundance of the Russian stores of ammunition and provisions, 131 — the Armada seen from Sebastopol, 132—progress of the works for the land defences, 134—strength of the garrison left in, 135—Sebastopol on the day of the Alma, 136 — Korniloff ordered to sink ships in the roadstead of Sebastopol, 138—tidings of the defeat reach the town, 141—Korniloff summons a coun-

[illegible]l of admirals and naval captains, 141 —he proposes to attack the allied fleet, 142—Captain Zorin's counter-proposal, 145—Mentschikoff orders the harbour to be closed by sinking ships, 147—Todleben's survey of the ground around Sebastopol, 148—continued retreat of Mentschikoff's army, 149—the doomed ships scuttled, 150—Korniloff's further effort to save the ships, *ib.* — ended career of the Black Sea fleet, 153—the policy of sinking the ships, 156—Mentschikoff's idea of a flank march for his field army, 158—his abandonment of Sebastopol, 159—its defence left mainly to sailors, *ib.*—the main army marches out of, 161—Mentschikoff's want of knowledge of the movements of the Allies, 165—his retreat to the Katcha, 168 — Mentschikoff's three vicegerents left to act in Sebastopol, 169—the perfect concord between Korniloff and Todleben, 184 — Korniloff assumes the command of the North Side, 184—his despair of being able to defend the North Side, 185—the Russian danger shifted from the North to the South Side, 187—the forces available for the defences of the South Side, *ib.*—Korniloff invested with the supreme command, 191—his use and extension of his power, 192—Korniloff and Todleben devote themselves to the defence of the South Side, 193—number of available foot in, 194—the town without tidings of Mentschikoff, 196—desperate position of the garrison in, *ib.*—solemnity enacted on the lines of defence, *ib.* — enthusiasm excited by Korniloff, 197—Todleben's opinion and plan, 202 — Korniloff and Todleben give orders to dismantle the fleet, and apply all its resources to the defence, 203—Todleben's plan for strengthening the defences, 204—the Allies might be swept down by mitrail, 205—or induced to delay their attack, 206—Todleben's way of adjusting the labour, 207—all resources brought to bear upon the business of defence, 208—Todleben's personal influence on the workers, 210—Korniloff's real impressions at this time, 211—28th Sept. still unattacked, 213 — communication at last from Mentschikoff, 213—his determination to take up a position on the Belbec, 214—this virtually a withdrawal from participation in the defence of, 215—29th, the Allies still refraining from an attack, *ib.*—encouragement of the garrison, 216—changes wrought in the defences, *ib.*—the general result which had been attained, 218—the garrison have now an entrenched position, but no army to man it, 219—for Mentschikoff still withholds succour, 220—communication received from the field army by Korniloff, *ib.*—its painful significance, 221 — the 30th, the Allies still abstaining from attack, *ib.*—the advanced-guard of the Russian army on the North Side, *ib.*—Mentschikoff's interview with Korniloff, 222—his intention still to hold aloof, and leaving Sebastopol to its own resources, *ib.*—Korniloff's remonstrances, 223—Todleben's explanation of Mentschikoff's course of action, 224—probable explanation of his conduct, 227—the defence of, during the last six days of September, 228—circumstances under which the Allies abstained from attacking, 231—their first reconnaissance of the defences on the South Side, *ib.* —the question which really needed solution, 233—the counsel of Sir Edmund Lyons, 234—the proposal for an assault and its rejection by the French, 236—determination to land the siege-trains, *ib.*—Sir George Cathcart's suggestions, 237—renewed counsels from Lyons, 239—Lord Raglan favours an attack, 240—unanimity of opinion among the French, 241—their opinion shared by Burgoyne, *ib.*—the argument against assaulting without first getting down the enemy's fire, *ib.* — argument in favour of assaulting at once, 244—second proposal for the assault of, submitted by Lord Raglan to the French, 259—its rejection, *ib.*—the opposition of Canrobert, 261 — Lord Raglan's knowledge of the instructions given to Canrobert, 263—the weight of authority by which Lord Raglan was opposed, 267—his reserve on the subject of the differences between the French and himself, 268—the effect of abstaining from an assault, 269—Airey's letter to Lord Hardinge, 270—Todleben's opinion on the opposition to the assault, 273—the third of the 'lost occasions,' 274—help of the Anglo-French fleet to the besiegers, 275—the limits of the dominion possessed by the fleet, 278—the Russians now secure on the North Side, 279—no investment practicable, 280—the lost opportunity of isolating Sebastopol, 281—change in the whole character of the enterprise, *ib.*—the

predicament of the Allies, 283—disposition of the allied armies at the commencement of the siege, 285—the defensive arrangements of the Allies, 286—works of circumvallation on the Sapouné Ridge, *ib.* — disposition of the French force charged with the defence of the Chersonese, 287 — position of the English army, 288 note—strength of the position on the Chersonese, 290—separate system of defence required for Balaclava, 291 —Lord Raglan's arrangements for the defence of, 292—appointment of Sir Colin Campbell to the command at, 293—the position of the French and English Headquarters, 294—the landing of the siege-train, 295—brigade of English seamen placed at the disposal of Lord Raglan, 297 — Mentschikoff occupies the Mackenzie Heights, 300—the garrison becoming bold, 301—the plan of attack adopted by the Allies, 302 — proposed closer investment of Sebastopol, 305—Lord Raglan assembles his divisional generals of infantry, *ib.*—their resistance to the proposed measure, 306—its effect, *ib.*—Sir John Burgoyne on the decision of the divisional generals, 307 — Lord Raglan's communication to the French, 308—batteries commenced by the English, *ib.* —French advanced position on Mount Rodolph, 309—they break ground, *ib.*—progress of the French works, 310—the enemy's sallies and cannonades, 311—difficulties encountered by the English, *ib.*—the English open their trenches, 312—desire that the fleets should take part in the attack upon, 314—he requests aid from Admiral Dundas, 321—Dundas consents to give the help asked, 325—naval conference, 326—the decision of the admirals, 327—the plan of naval attack determined upon, 329—the ill prospect it offered to the naval forces, *ib.* — Mentschikoff keeps the fate of Sebastopol in suspense by his reluctance to give it the aid of his field army, 332 — Korniloff writes a remonstrance, 334 — Mentschikoff gives way and supplies help, 335 — strength of the garrison, 6th October, 336—increased hopefulness of the endeavour to defend, 337—close of the period during which the place had been at the mercy of the Allies, 338—the French break ground, *ib.* — progress of the English works, 340—Russian view of the determination of the Allies, 341—sorties undertaken by the Russians, 345—great progress of the works, 346—increased strength of the land defences of, 347—the garrison aware that the bombardment is to commence on the 17th October, 348.

Attack of the 17th of October: considerations favourable to the prospects of the garrison, 349—the arrangements of the Allies for cannonading, 350—distribution of the Russian batteries, 353—opening of the fire, 354—nature of the duty in the Russian, French, and English batteries, 356—frail state of the Russian earthworks, 357—Admiral Korniloff's great activity, 360—the state of the conflict at this time, 366—skilfulness of Todleben's dispositions beginning to tell, 370—explosion in one of the French batteries, 371—second explosion in the French lines, 372—Mount Rodolph silenced, 373—messages from Canrobert to Lord Raglan, 374 — the opportunity not seized by the Russians, *ib.*—the English alone engaged with the enemy, 374 — Mentschikoff's interview with Korniloff, 375—his departure from the beleaguered town, 376—meeting of Korniloff and Todleben, *ib.* — Korniloff's visit to the fortifications, 379 — his death, 383—his death left Sebastopol under divided command, 384.

The naval attack: time originally fixed for, 386—postponed at the request of the French, 387—new plan of attack insisted upon by the French, 388—particulars of the new plan, 389—Dundas's reluctant acceptance of the new plan, 391—French plan condemned by the English captains, 392—arrangements for the attack, 394—the great sea-forts which could engage the fleets, 395 — the purpose involved in the French plan, 396—the French determine to attack the Quarantine Sea Fort, 398—the steam-power of the Allies, [illegible] —fire opened by the Russian forts, 40[illegible] —opening of the fire by the French, 401—the result of the attack, 403—attack by the French fleet on Fort Alexander and its results, *ib.* — the cause of its failure, 404—the works which were to be assailed by the inshore squadron, *ib.* — the Telegraph Battery and Fort Constantine, 405—the weak angle of the fort, 406—the composition of the in-shore squadron, 409—Dundas's paper of instructions, 410—fire delivered and received by the

ships in passing the cliff batteries, 413—advantage of Lyons's position, 414—explosion on Fort Constantine, 416—the whole fort silenced for a time, 417—engagement of British ships with the cliff batteries, *ib.*—the combined array of the French and English fleets, 419—the great cannonade delivered by the allied line of battle, 422—the resistance of hard masonry, *ib.*—comparative harmlessness of the sea cannonade, 424—the power of the cliff guns against the English ships, 426—havoc inflicted by the cliff guns, 429—persistence of Lyons, 433—his measures for obtaining reinforcements, *ib.*—reinforcements from quarters not specially appealed to by Lyons, 434—the Rodney aground, 438—the Agamemnon hauling off, 441—summary of what had been effected by Lyons with his in-shore squadron, 442—power of cliff batteries as against ships, 442—the French, and afterwards the English, fleet hauling off, 445—the Rodney hauled off, 447—comments, 448 *et seq.*

Continued bombardment: continuance of the bombardment carried on by the English batteries, 468—its effect, *ib.*—its effect upon the Redan and the defences in its rear, 471—great explosion in the Redan, 473—its effect, *ib.*—retreat of the Russian infantry posted near the Redan, 475—defenceless condition of the Redan, *ib.*—the opportunity there was for assaulting it, *ib.*—the state of the Redan, a fulfilment of Burgoyne's design, 476—causes which prevented the Allies from seizing the opportunity, *ib.*—prospects of the Allies, 478—reconnaissance sent by the Russians to Mount Rodolph, 479—conclusion of the cannonade for the day, *ib.*—its results, *ib.*—the rigidity which characterised the mixed counsels of the Allies, 481—embarrassment resulting from the duality of the allied armies, 483—the course to which Canrobert resorted, 484—the difference of opinion as to expediency of an assault, 485—the omission of the Allies to push home their advantage becoming one more of the lost occasions, 486—the great resources of the enemy disclosed, 488—the silence of the French batteries, *ib.*—the English cannonade of the 18th October, *ib.*—death of Colonel Hood, 489—feat of Captain Peel, *ib.*—a Russian force discerned at Tchorgoun, 490—warning regarding the Chersonese winter, 491—Lord Raglan's reception of the warning, 493—steps taken by Lord Raglan, *ib.*

Sebastopol, West Flank of, Fights on: strength of the troops about to be engaged, viii. 18—attack and capture of the Bay-head counter-approach, 19—the Cimetière counter-approach, *ib.*—power of the Central Bastion to take part in the fight, *ib.*—attack and first capture of the Work, 20—its recapture, *ib.*—the Central under fire of the French siege-guns, *ib.*—third capture of the Cimetière counter-approach, *ib.*—fourth capture of the Work, 21—fifth attack on the Work, *ib.*—and its recapture by the French, 22—course afterwards taken by the French, *ib.*—signals from the Volokoff tower, 23—their effect on Prince Gortchakoff's determination, *ib.*—his decision, 24—night of the 23d: the Cimetière counter-approach carried by the French, 24—and transformed into a siege work, *ib.*—losses on each side, 25—ground on which the sacrifices made by Pélissier were justified, *ib.*

Sebastopol campaign, state of the, in the beginning of November 1854, v. 31.

Sebastopol Committee, its immense disadvantage, vii. 376, 437.

Sebastopol fleet, the, i. 377—the port of the Crimea, ii. 70—the forts of, 71—the longing of the English to attack it, *ib.*—Duke of Newcastle's zeal for the destruction of, 75—demand for the destruction of, 88—the land defences of, 101—proposed siege of, 103 *et seq.*—the strength of, 108, 124—the Queen on the proposed attack on, 125—the guns of, 145—steps taken by French officers to stop the expedition to, 153, 156 *et seq.*—the English watching the harbour of, 177—nature of the advance towards, 199 *et seq.*—the retreat of the Russians from Alma towards, 530.

Sebastopol, front, operations on the, v. 77.

Sebastopol garrison, announcement of death of Nicholas to, vii. 108.

Sebastopol roadstead, v. 89—the priceless, viii. 220.

Sebastopol, Western, viii. 93.

Sédaiges, Captain, viii. 60, 63, 64, 67, 76.

Selby, Lieutenant, iv. 30.

Selim Pasha, death of, vii. 52.

Selinghinsk battalions, the, v. 179 *et seq.*

Selinghinsk Redoubt, purpose of the, vii. 64—formation of the, 66—French night

attack on the, 67, 68, 69, 71, 355, 356; viii. 91, 97 *et seq.*
Sellars, v. 252.
Semiakim, General, iv. 43, 53, 56.
Separate article, the, of Emperor's plan, vii. 120.
Seraskin, the, i. 156.
Servia, i. 89—privileges conferred on, vii. 317.
Service in the field, the test of actual, iv. 1—great advantage of England in this respect, 2—the choice of cavalry commanders by the Government, *ib.*, 20.
Severnaya, or North Side of Sebastopol, iii. 13 *et seq.*, 37, 46 *et seq.*—the French objection to attack the, 49, 62, 76, 115, 187, 222, 360, 376; v. 51; viii. 223, 232.
Seymour, Colonel Charles, at Inkerman, v. 266—he is killed by the side of Cathcart, 271.
Seymour, Colonel Francis, at the Alma, ii. 381 note—at Inkerman, succeeds to the command of the Scots Fusiliers, v. 220—in the midst of the battle, *ib.*—the measures he takes, *ib. et seq.*
Seymour, Lord, vi. 361, 362, 366 *et seq.*, 376.
Seymour, Sir Hamilton, i. 53—Minister at the Russian Court, 83, 84, 102, 141—Nesselrode's communication to, on the dispute regarding the Holy Places, 171, 188—his warnings to the Czar, 190, 375-392, 493.
Shadforth, Colonel, killed, viii. 172.
'Shadrach,' Lord Raglan's horse, ii. 393.
Shadwell, ii. 452 note, 483; iv. 79.
Shakespeare, Captain, iii. 90 note.
'Shegog,' iv. 103, 109.
Shell Hill, v. 3 *et seq.*, 63, 91 *et seq.*, 107 *et seq.*, 118, 121, 126, 129 *et seq.*, 131, 156, 161 *et seq.*, 176 *et seq.*, 199 *et seq.*, 215, 295, 306, 312, 316, 326 *et seq.*, 360 *et seq.*, 365 *et seq.*—engagement between Dickson's guns and the Batteries on the, 374, 377, 379, 411, 412 note, 418 *et seq.*—the position, advance by Armstrong over ground forming part of the, 427, 429, 430, 436—the batteries, 437—Lord Raglan's way of accelerating their withdrawal, *ib.*—last gun withdrawn from, *ib.*, 448, 452, 470, 473.
Shestakoff, iii. 377.
Shewell, Colonel, iv. 207, 231, 232, 269, 273, 274, 276, 286, 288—his charge, *ib.*—defeat and flight of the Russian Lancers, 290—his retreat, 291, 300, 316, 320.
Shiel, Sergeant-Major, iv. 151.
Shipley, Captain, v. 86 note.
Shirley, Colonel, viii. 96, 111—commended by Lord Raglan, 121.
Shoumula, the entrenched camp of, i. 401.
Shrines, Holy, i. 38—contest for the possession of the, 41, 42, 44, 46, 47, 48—delivery of the key and the star, 51.
Shumla, ii. 32, 50, 55.
Shute, Major, iv. 150.
Sick and wounded, the provision made by the French for the care of the, vi. 142—by the English, 143, 144.
Sick-list diminishing, vi. 391.
Siege batteries, the English, 17th of October, iii. 573.
Siege batteries, the French, 17th of October, iii. 572.
SIEGE, CHANGES IN THE PLAN OF THE, LORD RAGLAN'S INSISTANCE ON: Memorandum of the 11th of June, viii. 269—sent to the French Headquarters, *ib.*—objections to plans involving attacks on the Great Redan, 270—more especially if the Flagstaff Bastion were not to be assailed, 271—assaults on the Redan from a distance out of harmony with the new French design, *ib.*, 272-277.
Siege-gun ammunition, consumption of, vii. 178.
SIEGE OF SEBASTOPOL, *from the morrow of Inkerman to middle of the ensuing February:* The Allies now committed to what might prove a long siege, vii. 1—the task of defence now weighing upon their energies, 3—their defensive works, 5—the designs of the French, still pointing to the Flagstaff Bastion, 6—checked in carrying forward their approaches they resort to mining, 6—part taken at this time by the English in the work of the siege, 7—the great strain put on their fortitude, 8—advantages conferred on the enemy by giving him time, 9—Todleben's defences, 11—his measures for averting attack, 13—petty sorties, 17—novel contrivance of the Russians in these sorties, *ib.*—indignation of French army, 18—the enemy encroaching our guards of the trenches, 19—departure of Prince Napoleon, 20—natural reluctance of the French to alter their main plan of siege, 21—Canrobert's official letter to Lord Raglan, 24—their ultimately reverting to the decision of the 'Three,' 26—envoy sent by Lord Raglan to the French headquarters, 28—French plan approved by Lord Raglan, 30—import of change of plan, 31—French mining operations, 32—Todleben's skill and

power in the science of mining, 33—progress of mining and countermining operations, *ib.*—besieger's design shifting from Flagstaff Bastion to Malakoff, 35 — Canrobert's resolve to operate against the Malakoff, 36 — meditated attack on the Mamelon, 37—French reconnaissances, 39—result of conflict from Nov. 6, 1854, to middle of Feb., 41 — questions raised by scientific critics, 43.

Siege of Sebastopol from middle of Feb. 1855 *to second week of April*, 63 *et seq.*—morning of 22d Feb., 63—Todleben's inferences from what the Allies had been visibly doing, 64—his Selinghinsk redoubt, 65—French night attack on it, 67—false report of fight made to Canrobert, 71—the Volhynia redoubt, 72—effect of counterworks on Mount Inkerman, *ib.*—decisions of French on finding themselves thus confronted, 73—councils assembled, *ib.*, 76—Canrobert's endeavours to obtain Turkish reinforcements, 77—arrival of young Grand-Dukes Nicholas and Michael, *ib.*—the Mamelon, 78—work on the Mamelon, *ib.*—the Kamtchatka Lunette, 79—Todleben's armament of it, 80—Canrobert's reason for declining to seize the Mamelon, 81—his determination to abstain from assaulting the Lunette, 83—advance of French 'approaches' against it, 86—sorties effected against the English siege-works, 89—Col. Kelly's dispositions, 90—Zavalichine's flank movement, 92—Boudistcheff's attack, *ib.*—charge by Vicars, joined by Kelly and Gordon, 93—Col. Kelly wounded and taken prisoner, 96—attack under Astapoff, 97—fight at Mortar Battery, 98—Béruleff's surprise of advanced siege-works, 99—Russian troops for a while in two advanced batteries, 100—comments on great sortie effected against the French, 102—extension given by Todleben to his counter-approaches, 104—siege operations against the Redan and its neighbours, 106—arrival of Omar Pasha, 107—sinking of Russian ships, *ib.*—Prince M. Gortchakoff appointed commander, 108—Admiral Istomine killed, 109—departure of Sir John Burgoyne, *ib.*—preparations for a great cannonade, 112.

Secret terms of mission entrusted to General Niel, 114 *et seq.* — General Niel's opinions on the Crimean war, 115—his 'mission,' 116—his position at French headquarters, *ib.*—his task, 120—French Emperor's plan concealed from the English, 121—disloyalty of this concealment, 127.

The April bombardment, 130 *et seq.* —preparation for the cannonade, 132—counter-preparations by the Russians, 133—opening and continuation of bombardment, 135—incompleteness of some English preparatives, 139—order given to Captain Oldershaw, 142—advanced No. VII. battery completed, 143 — enemy's way of dealing with an advanced battery, 145 — advanced No. VIII., 150—Sir Gerald Graham, 152—losses sustained in Oldershaw's battery, 166—General Dacres, 167—Sir Gerald Graham's judgment of Oldershaw's fight, 171—engagement of No. VII. battery, 172—simultaneous engagement of No. VIII. battery, 174—losses of the Allies in artillery conflict, 178—the defenders of Sebastopol, 180—the fortitude needed for their task, *ib.*—heroism of their defence at this time, 181—the two White Redoubts crushed and silenced, 184—the Malakoff covered by counter-approaches, 185—the Kamtchatka Lunette brought to ruin, *ib.*—failure of English batteries against the Great Redan, 186—havoc sustained by Flagstaff Bastion, 187—great effort made to repair it, 189—its peril, *ib.*—cessation of general bombardment, 191 — Todleben's inquiry, 195.

Siege of Sebastopol, from April 9 to middle of May, 196 *et seq.*—Bizot mortally wounded, 196 — succeeded by Niel, 198—Todleben's encroachments in front of Central Bastion, 201—Pélissier fights for the Cimetière Lodgments, 203 — Todleben's project for a new work of counter-approach, 204 — the Sousdal Counter-guard, 205—losses in night combat of 1st May, 207—Egerton's achievement, 209—his death, 210—praises bestowed by Lord Raglan on troops, 211—losses caused our people, *ib.* — submarine telegraph connecting the Chersonese with Varna, 213—the Eupatoria cable, *ib.*—accession of 15,000 Sardinian troops, *ib.*

Troubled counsels of the French, 216—conference of 14th April, 218—Canrobert's state of mind, 220—conduct and bearing of Niel, *ib.*—agreement between Canrobert and Lord Raglan, 222 — warlike impatience of French army, 224 — preliminary conference,

226—agreement for general assault of Sebastopol, *ib.*—Canrobert resolved to put off assault, 228—interview between Niel and Lord Raglan, *ib.* — course taken by Lord Raglan, 229—uncertainty as to duration of postponement, 234.

Actively perturbing interference of Louis Napoleon in the war for Sebastopol, 236 *et seq.*—Napoleon's visit to England, 236—Council of War at Windsor Castle, 237—the Emperor's plan of campaign, 239—general purport of plan, 241—the Emperor abandons his intention of going to the Crimea, 242—his letter of instruction to Canrobert, *ib.* —the Generals in the Crimea acquainted with imperial plan, 245—frail basis on which it all rested, 247.

Interposition of French Emperor continuing and bringing about the recall of a joint expedition, 249 *et seq.*—project for opening a passage into the Sea of Azof, 249—the Peninsula of Kertch, 251—Baron Wrangel there in command, *ib.*—eagerness of English to have the attack set on foot, 254—Canrobert defers to Lord Raglan, 256—Sailing of expedition, *ib.*—the Submarine Cable, 257—telegrams from Paris, 259—course taken by Lord Raglan, 263 —latitude given to Sir George Brown, 265—return of expedition, 268—Canrobert's account of recall, 272—letter from French Emperor, 274.

The Emperor's dictation resisted, collapse of his plan, and resignation of Canrobert, 277 *et seq.*—Pélissier's letter of May 5, 279—his growing ascendant, 282 — expositions of Emperor's plan, 283—the three allied commanders in conference, 284—agreement as to plan of field operations, 285—Canrobert and Omar Pasha refuse to guard English trenches, *ib.* — rejection of plan, 286—Canrobert's endeavours to rid himself of command, 290 — his resignation tendered, 291—his command transferred to Pélissier, 292—feeling of French army towards him, 295.

SIEGE OPERATIONS CONTINUING: the French sapping more closely up to the works in the Karabelnaya, viii. 265—and preparing to establish new batteries on ground commanding the Roadstead, *ib.*—the English strengthening their hold of ground captured by Eyre, *ib.*—and afterwards handing it over to the charge of the French, 266 — continuance of the mining and countermining operations, *ib.* — the moral effect attributed by the Russians to their vigorous countermining, 267.

Siege Park, v. 371 note.

Silistria, i. 401, 402, 445 note; ii. 40, 42, 45—seige of, 49 *et seq.*, 61, 90, 107, 109, 133; iv. 41 note.

Sillery, Major, vi. 148, 151 and note, 437.

Simpheropol, ii. 208, 209, 237; iii. 92, 158, 226 note, 253, 282; viii. 28, 89, 130.

Simpson, General James, appointment of, vi. 349—his instructions, *ib.*—his report, 350—his course of action, *ib.*—Lord Panmure's adoption of the report, 351 — announces the death of Lord Raglan to the British army, viii. 282—he acutely felt the death of Lord Raglan, 287—he chooses Lord Raglan as a guide, 290.

Simpson, Lieutenant, at Aunt bombardment, vii. 152, 157, 367.

Sinclair, Lieutenant, v. 372, 375, 431.

Sinope, the disaster in, i. 376 *et seq.*—decision of the English Cabinet in regard to, 385, 392, 393, 489.

Siree, Captain, ii. 382.

Sivache, the inner waters of the, viii. 65.

Skariatine, Lieut., v. 442 *et seq.*; viii. 102 —one of the early defenders of Sebastopol, 306.

Sleeping Cabinet, the, ii. 95, 96.

Smith, Captain Hugh, iii. 96; v. 266.

Smith, Dr Andrew, vi. 32, 34 note, 139, 144, 410 note, 431.

Smith, Dr Fowle, viii. 262.

Smith, Mr Jervoise, vi. 394.

Smith, Mr Oswald, iii. 56.

Smith, Private George, iv. 313 note.

Smith, William, v. 351.

Smyrna, vi. 147 — improved hospital established at, 416.

Smyth, Colonel Henry, v. 82 note, 237 note, 244.

Snelkoff, Colonel, viii. 220.

Soimonoff, General, ii. 56, 58; v. 48 *et seq.*, 57 *et seq.*—his force, 84, 109—at battle of Inkerman, 112 *et seq.*, 114, 118, 129, 130, 131, 132-136, 138, 146, 149, 156, 169, 172 — his guns, 178, 180, 368 —his artillery falls back, 440, 443, 448, 449 — what if he had ascended the Inkerman heights by the Victoria Ridge? 468, 471—his enterprise, 476.

Soldier's nature, the mystery of the, vi. 477.

Soldiers, sickness and failing strength of many of the, ii. 215.

Somess, Lord, vi. 18 note.

Somerset's, Colonel, charger shelled, v. 333; viii. 280.
Sorties, Russian petty, vii. 17.
Soudjak-Kali, attack on, recommended, viii. 78—fall of, *ib.*, 81.
Sources of the narrative, i. p. xxvi.
Sousdal Counter-guard, the, attacked by Pélissier, vii. 204 *et seq.*—losses sustained in attack of, 207—conversion of, into a French work, 208—282—counter-guard, carrying of, by Pélissier, 297, viii. 25.
Southern coast, the, viii. 256.
'South Side,' viii. 11, 33, 245.
South Valley, the, iv. 33, 60, 83, 85, 87, 177, 336 *et seq.*
'Spanish marriages,' the, i. 455—note.
Sparke, Lieutenant, iv. 230, 316.
Spence, Dr, vi. 443 note.
Spencer, Lord, vi. 43 note.
Spratt, Captain, at Kertch expedition, vii. 269.
Spurs, the, v. 108.
'Staff at Headquarters,' vi. 22.
Stafford, Mr, vi. 436.
Stanley's apostrophe to the 57th Regiment at Inkerman, viii. 172 note, 173 note.
Stanley, Captain Edward, v. 82 note, 237 note, 306, 310, 401 note.
Stanley, Dean, work on the Greek Church, i. 55 note—on Russia and her church, 294 note—on the Greek Church, iii. 171 note—on dogma, v. 48 note.
Stanley, Miss, vi. 411—her life by her brother, Dean Stanley, referred to, *ib.*, note—her experiences, 412—her heroic devotion to the sick, 413.
Stanley, Mr Henry, iv. 36 note, 81 note.
Stanley, Mr Henry, the African traveller, vi. 232 note.
Stanncovitch, iii. 147.
Stanton, Captain, iv. 36 note.
Star Fort, the, iii. 13 note, 23—advantages of an attack on the, 37, 38—forces available for the defence of, 42—Sir John Burgoyne on the, 44, 56, 58 *et seq.*, 67, 70 *et seq.*, 84, 115, 120 *et seq.*, 142, 181, 186, 188, 202, 278.
Steele, Colonel, ii. 154, 166, 360, 443, 518; iii. 321, 326; v. 74; viii. 281.
Sterling, ii. 452.
Sterling, Colonel, his letters, iv. 75 note, 76.
Stetzenko, Lieutenant, iii. 213, 214.
Stevens, Colonel, his 'Crimean Campaign with the Connaught Rangers,' quoted, vi. 224 note.
Stevens, Lieutenant, iii. 430.
Stewart, Admiral Houston, viii. 43-299.
Stewart, Captain, iii. 427 note, 428.
Stirling, Colonel, iii. 293 note.
Stirling, Lieutenant, v. 193.
Stocks, Captain, iv. 145.
Stockwell, ii. 383.
Stokes, John, v. 351.
Stopford, Admiral, iii. 436 note.
Stopford, Lieutenant, vii. 41.
Storks, Colonel, vi. 416 note.
Straits of Kertch, the, vii. 249—enemy's endeavours to guard, 250.
Strangways, v. 186.
Strangways, General, mortally wounded, v. 333.
Strasburg attempt, the, i. 216.
Stratford de Redcliffe, Lady, vi. 436.
Stratford de Redcliffe, Lord, *vide* Sir Stratford Canning.
Straton, v. 151.
Straton, Major, v. 158.
Streleska Bay, iii. 285; v. 36, 56.
Stuart, Major Ramsay, v. 365 note, 366—the success obtained by, 367.
Sturt, Napier, v. 220.
Submarine cable, the, vii. 257, 374—telegrams by, 259 *et seq.*, 374.
Subterranean fights, viii. 267.
Sufferings, the, of the armies during the winter, vi. 168.
Sujak Kaleh, ii. 112.
Sullivan, Colour-Sergeant, v. 7.
Sultan, the, administration of foreign affairs under, i. 9—Metternich's attempt to form a league for the defence of the, 31, 163—the French Government coerce the, 325.
Sultan, allies of the, viii. 301.
Sultanoffka, viii. 42 *et seq.*
Sutherland, iv. 113.
Sutherland, Dr, vi. 446.
Sutherland Hillock—*vide* Dunrobin.
Suwarroff, iii. 205; v. 478.
Sviatoslow Battery, iii. 120 *et seq.*
Swabey, Lieutenant, v. 193.
Swinfin, Lieutenant, iv. 145.
Swinton's battery, v. 85.
Swords furnished by tailors, v. 233 note.
Swyney, Colonel, v. 82 note, 237 note, 319, 326, 354, 356.
Symonds, Captain, iii. 426.
Symonds, Mr Arthur, his 'Mechanics of Law Making,' referred to, iii. 466 note.
Symons, George, v. 372.
Syria, French influence in, i. 33.

Taganrog, viii. 64—operations at, 67 *et seq.*—its defence, 304.
Taguin, iv. 263.
Tailors' swords, v. 233 note.
Takli, Cape, viii. 39 *et seq.*

Talandier, Colonel, i. 218 *et seq.*
Talavera campaign, the, vi. 380 and note.
Talbot, Colonel, ii. 178.
Tarkan Cape, ii. 153, 160; iii. 132, 530.
Taroutine battalions, v. 133 *et seq.*, 464.
Tartar villagers, deputation of, to the English Headquarters, ii. 191, 198.
'Tartars,' the, at Kertch, viii. 303.
Tatham, Captain, i. 121; ii. 131 note; iv. 60 note.
Tatham, Captain, R.N., instructed to ship stores not in use, v. 26.
Tauric peninsula, the, vi. 199.
Taylor, Henry, vi. 13 note.
Taylor, James, gunner, v. 324.
Taylor, Lieutenant, v. 193.
Taylor, Mr Cavendish, v. 15.
Taylor, Sir Herbert, vi. 333.
Tchaplinsky, v. 434 note.
Tchatir Dagh, ii. 227—proposed movement of troops by the, vii. 240; viii. 11, 127.
Tchernaya river, the, iii. 116, 159, 161 *et seq.*, 187, 237; v. 39, 48, 57, 61, 70, 89, 94 note, 98, 115, 235; viii. 28, 34—occupation by the Allies of fresh ground towards the, 35, 89, 137, 201, 218, 256.
Tchernaya, the valley of the, iii. 68, 72, 80, 94 *et seq.*, 105 *et seq.*, 282 *et seq.*—Lord Lucan ordered to patrol the, 293, 300, 339; iv. 33, 42; v. 229-231, 240, 259, 263, 369, 414; vi. 4 note; viii. 10.
Tchitchagoff, i. 111.
Tchorgoun, iii. 339; iv. 28, 33, 42 *et seq.*, 50, 53, 261, 277 note, 286; v. 44, 49, 456.
Tchorgoun Ridge, the, iii. 490—appearance of Russians on, 490.
Telegraph Battery, iii. 395, 405 *et seq.*
Telegraph Battery, the—*vide* 'Kartaschewsky.'
Telegraph Height, ii. 229 *et seq.*—part of, exposed to fire of ships, 235, 239, 257—the batteries on the, 271, 276, 281, 286, 289, 292, 297, 299, 305, 387, 397, 507, 513—the French troops on the, 521.
Telegraph Hill, iii. 375; v. 73.
Telegraph, submarine, connecting the Chersonese and Varna, vii. 213.
Temple, Dr, vi. 372 note.
Temple Godman, Lieutenant, iv. 145.
Tenish, ii. 197.
Tents, the delay in supplying, to the army, vi. 98.
Thackeray, W. M., iv. 230 note.
Thackwell, Captain, v. 347, 353.
Thanksgivings, Russian, viii. 216.
Theatre Square, iii. 338 *et seq.*, 377 *et seq.*
Theodosia, landing-place near, vii. 252—troops at, 254; viii. 41.
Therapia, i. 352; ii. 32—the naval hospital at, vi. 413—Lord Stratford at, vii. 59.
Thiers, M., i. 243; viii. 241.
Third Parallel, viii. 103, 153, 192.
Thompson, Dr, his tender care of the wounded, iii. 8 *et seq.*
Thompson, Lieutenant, R. 317.
Thomson, Captain, ii. 313.
Thomson, Lieutenant, iv. 222, 229.
Thornton Grant, Major, v. 118.
Thorold, Lieutenant, v. 86.
'Three Talents' Administration, vi. 419 note.
Tierney's motion in 1816 and 1817, the debates on, vi. 89 note.
Tiflis, ii. 112.
'Times' Fund, the, vi. 393 note, 430 *et seq.*
'Times,' the, influence of, ii. 80 *et seq.*; iii. 500 *et seq.*; vi. 228, 243, 2[illegible]
Timovieff, General, v. 53 note, 77—his sortie, 78—vigorous sortie, 87—sortie, 455; viii. 92, 100.
Titoff, M., at Vienna Conference, vii. 313.
Todleben's, General, 'Défense de Sebastopol,' iii. 23, 24, 35 note, 37 *et seq.*, 74 note, 115 note, 118 note, 123, 126, 131—his ride to the battle-field of Alma, 136—his meeting with Mentschikoff, 137—he surveys the ground around Sebastopol, 140—his report of the survey, 148—his character, training, and services, 175—is recommended by Mentschikoff to quit the Crimea, 178—he remains and defends Sebastopol, *ib.*, 180, 184, 191—his opinion of an attempt to force the Russian lines, 195—plan of defence, 202—he joins in ordering the fleet to be dismantled, and applying its resources to the defence of Sebastopol, 203—his plan for strengthening the defences, 204—the two ways in which his works might produce a result, 205—his way of adjusting the labour, 207, 211 note—his opinion of the reconnaissance of the Allies, 213 note—on the strength of the line of works, 218—his great exertions in preparing entrenchments, [illegible], 223, 224, 228 note, 245 note, 257 note—his opinion of the defensive resources of Sebastopol, 273 note, 300—on the importance of certain bastions, 302—on the strength of the garrison, 337, 341, 342—he presses on the defences, 346—his distribution of batteries along the line, 353, 356, 370, 374, 378, 406, 415, 421—on the strength of the Allies in cannon, 423 note, 430, 445 note—on the French works, 468—he surveys the

Redan, 471—on the proposed assault of Sebastopol, 485—he watches the preparations of the French, 535—his defence of the place, 536, 568; iv. 42 note—on the British line of defence at Balaclava, 35 *et seq.*, 74 note—on the Russian loss at Balaclava, 156 note—his plan, 217 note—on the Light Cavalry charge, 277 note, 340 note; v. 1, 13 note—on the strength of the Crimean army before Inkerman, 32 note, 35, 43 note, 49 note *et seq.*, 87—his opinion on the action of the Russian artillery on Shell Hill, 92, 113—on Hamley's firing, 196 note, 268 note, 412—his frustration of Colonel Waddy's enterprise, 442, 448, 481 note; vi. 269—vast resources of, vii. 9—defence of Sebastopol by, 11 *et seq.*—counter-approaches on Mount Inkerman, 63 *et seq.*—skill of, in mining operations, 32—his counter-mines, 33—on effects of April bombardment, 192—on failure to follow up assault, 193—his perplexity as to this failure, 195, 301, 354—his new defences, viii. 15—his project, 16, 17, 20, 53, 91—on the fire of the allied batteries, 94, 99, 101 *et seq.*, 109, 110, 113, 126 note—he repairs the Malakoff, 149, 151—his policy, 171—on the Russian fire from the Redan, 184—on the Russian loss on 18th June, 204—on Pélissier's failure, 209—wounded, 217—and removed from Sebastopol, *ib.*, 218—but approaching defeat in the field, *ib.*, 219, 220—his mighty defences, 223—his 'continuous battle,' 224, 229, 230, 232—the ruins of his defences, 257—on the 'havoc and ruin' of the English fire, 305—his erroneous statements regarding General Eyre's conquest, 309.

Tomkinson, Captain, iv. 231, 234.

Tomsk regiments, the, v. 115, 131.

Torrens, General, ii. 263 note—his force, 527—strength of his brigade, v. 83 note, 237, 241, 243—charge of 400 men under him, 244, 264—appointed military commissioner at Paris, viii. 236.

Torrians, Lieutenant, in April bombardment, vii. 174, 176.

Toussaint's guns, v. 391 *et seq.*

Tower (Coldstreams), iv. 75.

Tower, Thomas (Crimean Army Fund), vi. 392 *et seq.*—Lord Raglan's high praise of his and Egerton's services 404.

Town front of Sebastopol, pressing siege operations against, vii. 105—effect of April bombardment on, 136

Townsend, ii. 263 note—battery, v. 81, 138—advance of, 139—three of the guns left exposed to the power of the Russian columns, 140—they are left in possession of the Russians, 141—his guns, 157—field-pieces, v. 182.

Tractir, iv. 299; v. 63.

Tractir bridge, the, iii. 81, 94 *et seq.*, viii. 35.

Tractir road, iv. 71 *et seq.*

Transport Office, vi. 32, 41, 48 *et seq.*

Transport, the means of, declining, vi. 120.

Treasury, the, vi. 41 *et seq.*

Treaties of 1840 and 1841 and the maintenance of the Sultan's dominion, i. 19 note.

Tremayne, iv. 222.

Trevelyan, Lieutenant, iv. 230, 316.

Trevelyan, Sir Charles, vi. 4 note—assistant secretary of the Treasury, 36, 37, 39 note, 131, 376, 378.

Troad, the, i. 347.

Trochu, Colonel, ii. 38, 39, 40, 41—calls on Lord Raglan, 45, 102, 103, 104, 128, 132, 154, 156, 157, 166, 249, 251; iii. 30, 41, 109—on the demeanour of British infantry, 298 note, 329 note, 386 note.

Troitsky, Cape, v. 90.

Troitsky, Lieutenant, iii. 402.

Troitsky Peak, v. 91 *et seq.*

Troitsky Ravine, the, viii. 91.

Trollope, Colonel, vii. 212 note.

Troops, number of, before Sebastopol, vi. 203.

Trophy, French attempt to annex an English, ii. 531.

Troubridge, Sir Thomas, ii. 429 note, 433; v. 84 note, 86 note.

Troy, Joseph, v. 251, 280, 283 *et seq.*

Tryon, Lieut., v. 320 note—his riflemen, 340—conspicuous exploit of, earning him the high praise of Canrobert as well as Lord Raglan, vii. 14.

Tulloch, Colonel, and Sir John M'Neill on the road question, vi. 115 note, 321, 368—their animadversions on officers, 369 *et seq.*—Tulloch considered a hero by the country, 374.

Turkey, the Czar prepares to invade, i. 395—Russian invasion of, 475—share of, in causing the war, 483.

Turkey, power of, i. 13—the inhabitants of, 14—Russian longing for, 19—grounds for foreign interference in, 407.

Turkish empire, aspect of Europe in reference to the, i. 30.

Turkish Ministry, change of, i. 163.

Turkish reinforcements, Canrobert's desire to obtain, vii. 75, 77.

Turner, Captain, ii. 309; v. 255, 276.
Turner, John, v. 173.
Turner, Lieutenant, v. 221.
Turner, William, v. 280, 283 *et seq.*
Turner's battery, ii. 414, 415, 462 note, 498; v. 4 note, 122 note, 160, 161—its effective fire, 299, 323, 329; vii. 212 note.
Tuzla, ii. 197.
'Twelve Apostles' Battery, iii. 119 *et seq.*, 148.
Twysden, Ensign, v. 356.
Tylden, Captain, vii. 211 note.
Tylden, Colonel, in night attack on Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 91, 97; viii. 96, 111, 116 *et seq.*, 167—intensity of the fire confronted by him, 168—he is quickly struck down, *ib.*
Tyrrell, James, v. 425.

Ulema, the corps of the, i. 362.
'Ulemah,' the, i. 366.
Ulukul Akles, ii. 229, 239 *et seq.*, 268, 283, 288; iii. 521 note.
Ulukul Tiouets, ii. 229, 284.
Unkiar Skilessi, the treaty of, i. 36, 66.
Upton, Colonel, v. 303—his attempt to close the 'Gap,' 304, 319, 337, 383 note.
Urosoff, v. 413 note, 434 note.
Usage, the, which tends to protect the weak against the strong, i. 20—instance of a wrong to which the usage did not apply, 22—instance in which the usage was applicable and was disobeyed, *ib.*—instances in which the usage was faithfully obeyed by Austria, Russia, and England, 23 *et seq.*—the practical working of, 27.
Uxbridge, Lord, iv. 90, 110 note.

Vaillant, Marshal, ii. 28—order for assembling troops near Constantinople by, vii. 120, 233, 237, 239, 297, 298, 341, 343, 360—the French Minister of War, viii. 13, 26—his correspondence with Pélissier, 28 *et seq.*, 33, 238—the power he exerted over the Emperor, 239, 240—success of his efforts to prevent a rupture, 241—his efforts to pacify Niel, *ib.*
Vaissier's battalion, v. 347, 349.
Valorous, the war-ship, vii. 50.
Vane, Lieutenant, v. 86 note.
Varna, ii. 38, 39, 40, 42, 44, 45, 46, 49, 50, 57—the Allies at, 98, 102 *et seq.*, 114, 122, 127, 131, 134—fire at, 136—troops and supplies left at, 147, 163, 188, 331 note; iii. 45; v. 21; vi. 100, 135, 157.
Vauban, viii. 25, 128.
Vaudrey, i. 216.
Vaughan, Lieutenant, iii. 422; v. 308, 343, 344, 353, 384.
Véloce, the French steamer, vii. 50, 53.
Verschoyle (Guards), iv. 75; v. 255, 278.
Vesey, ii. 184.
Viaduct, the, v. 50.
Vialls, v. 260, 314 note, 402, 410 note.
Vicars, Captain Hedley, opposes Boustcheff's attack at Woronzoff Ridge, vii. 92—charge by, 93—death of, 94.
Vico, ii. 519.
Victoria Bridge, the, viii. 152.
Victoria Fort, viii. 151, 155.
Victoria Ridge, v. 6 note, 37 *et seq.*, 82, 84, 86, 99, 107, 111, 400 note, 429, 441, 468, 469 *et seq.*—defence of, vii. 36; viii. 93, 97, 103.
'Victualling' Office, the, vi. 32, 41, 48 *et seq.*
Vienna Conference, the, i. 343.
Vienna Note, the, with the proposed Turkish modifications, i. 511.
'Vienna Note,' the, i. 353—its acceptance by the Powers and Russia, 354—Lord Stratford's opinion of, 357—the Turkish Government determines to reject it unless altered, 358—the text of the Note, and of the alterations suggested by the Turks, 359 note and appendix, 511, 512.
Vienna, peace negotiations at, vii. 313—debates in Conference, 317 *et seq.*—failure of negotiations, 327—Austrian proposals at, 328 *et seq.*—speeches at closing of, 347.
Vieyra, i. 233—his mutilation of the drums of the National Guard, 238.
Vigilance, the English soldier's want of, iv. 48.
Villebois, v. 443.
Villehois, General, v. 169.
Villiers, the Right Hon. Charles Pelham, vi. 373 note.
Vinck, Captain, iii. 200.
Vinoy, General, iv. 68; v. 27—position of his brigade before Inkerman, 41, 66, 67, 74; vi. 341.
'Violet Fane' quoted, vi. 373 note.
Viper, the gunboat, vii. 50, 53.
Vitet, M., i. 247.
Vivandière, the, viii. 104.
Vizier, the Grand, on Prince Mentschikoff's mission, i. 103—his communication to Lord Stratford de Redcliffe, 121—consults Lord Stratford, 149.
Vladimir steam-ship, v. 100.
Voirol, General, i. 217—despatch of, 219 note.

Volhynia redoubt, formation of the, vii. 72; viii. 91, 97 *et seq.*
Volokhoff Tower, the, iii. 120 *et seq.*, 405 note; viii. 23, 38.
Volovia gorge, the, v. 5, 96.
Volovia ravine, the, v. 133.
Von Roon, viii. 242 note.

Wabripon, i. 256.
Waddy's, Colonel, enterprise, v. 441, 442.
Wagman, Lieutenant, iv. 36 note.
Wagram campaign, the, vi. 30 note, 70.
Walcheren disaster, the, vi. 69.
Walcheren expedition, the, vi. 456.
Walcott, Captain, commands No. VIII. battery, iii. 175—their ineffective fire, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's high praise to, 176, 368.
Walewski, Count, his interview with Lord Aberdeen and Lord Clarendon, i. 371, 372—at Council of War, vii. 237.
Walker, Colonel, ii. 313; v. 197, 202, 203—he orders the Scots Fusiliers to charge, 204, 206—his two first wounds, 218—his third wound, 219—he gives over his command to Colonel Seymour, 220, vi. 205 note.
Walker, Lieutenant, vii. 210 note.
Walker, Major, v. 163, 166 note.
Wallachia, i. 184—military occupation of, by Russia, 396, 401, 437, 463; ii. 63.
Wallis, Captain, ii. 382.
Walsham, ii. 498.
War administration of England, the, vi. 12, 13, 15, 23—standing compromise between the Horse Guards and the Government, 28, 29, 30, 31—the victualling and the transport sub-departments of the Admiralty, 32—the Army Medical Service, *ib.*—the Commissariat, 36, 39—the old army officers without experience derived from recent campaigns, 41, 42—the Duke of Newcastle Secretary of State for War, *ib.*, 43—his capacity as a war administrator, 44, 45, 46—the way in which our dispersed system of war administration proved baneful, 51, 52, 53, 54—our system of war administration at the time of the great conflict with France, 56, 58—the Wellington era, 69, 73, 78, 80—the business of war administration compassed, 81, 82, 83—1816, 84, 85, 86, 88—long protracted continuance of the crippling policy, 90—result of the inquiry, 91.
War administration of France, the, vi. 6.
Warden, ii. 383.
War Department, the, vi. 45—no department in 1793, 56—one formed in 1794, *ib.*—in 1801 there is a Department of War and Colonies, 57.
War Department, papers relating to the health of the army and the care of the sick presented to the, by the Sebastopol Committee, vi. 367.
Wardlaw, Major, ii. 383; iv. 144.
War, English declaration of, i. 473.
Warlike impatience of French army, ebullition of, vii. 224.
'War Office,' the, vi. 14, 41.
Warre, Colonel, viii. 173 *et seq.*
Warren, Colonel, ii. 312, 313, 419, 429 note; v. 327, 332 note, 410 note.
Warren, Lieutenant, ii. 313; v. 334.
War-ships, Russian, the destruction of, at Kertch, viii. 303.
War, the mechanics of, the light the naval attack on Sebastopol threw on, iii. 467.
Wasp Tower, iii. 395, 404 *et seq.*
Watson, ii. 431.
Weare, ii. 391.
Weare, Miss, vi. 417 *et seq.*
Webb, Captain, iv. 140, 222, 229, 317.
Webber Smith, Colonel, ii. 383 note.
Weir, Lieutenant, iv. 114.
Wellesley, Sir Arthur (1809), vi. 29 note.
Wellington, the Duke of, in France, i. 26—his foreign policy, 36 note—his conference with Nicholas I., 67, 340—how he dealt with a Secretary of State, ii. 120 note—and the defence of London, vi. 24 note, 29 note, 55, 82 note, 133 note—his saying of Lord Fitzroy Somerset: 'By G—d! he has a better eye for placing troops than any man I know,' ii. xxi., fifth edition.
Wellington era, the, vi. 69—the Wellington reign, 73—its brief duration, *ib.*, 86.
Well-way, the, v. 90 *et seq.*, 141 *et seq.*, 146, 180 *et seq.*, 319, 449.
'West Cliff,' ii. 229, 234, 235 *et seq.*, 277, 281, 285, 289, 299, 302.
West Jut, v. 92, 158.
West, Lord, Colonel, v. 180, 181, 237, 320 note, 422—his course of action, 423; viii. 165—succeeds Sir John Campbell, 172, 174—his reluctance to believe that he was powerless to execute an attack, 175—his efforts and direction to Gerald Graham, *ib.*—the sole means at his disposal, 177—his vain efforts, 178—the communications that passed between him and his commander, Sir George Brown, *ib.*, 179.
Westmoreland, Lady, vi. 210 note, 271 note.
Westmoreland, Lord, instructions to, i. 469—at Vienna Conference, vii. 313.

West Sapper's Road, v. 436 *et seq.*
Wet Ditch, the, at Eupatoria, vii. 50, 56.
Wetherall, v. 439 note.
Wetherall, Captain, ii. 128; iv. 69 note; vi. 165, 195.
Wetherall, G. A., Adjutant-General, viii. 285.
Wetherall, Major, iii. 82 note, 89.
Wheatcroft, Lieutenant, iv. 150.
Whimper, ii. 313.
White Redoubts, the two, completion of, vii. 77—crushed and silenced, 184—assault of, not followed up, 185—again repaired, *ib.*; viii. 87; 90, 94, 97 *et seq.*, 108.
White, Captain Robert, iv. 222, 224, 229, 317.
'White Towers,' the, iii. 235, 241.
Widdin, i. 397, 398.
Wilbraham, Colonel, v. 347.
Wilkins, Richard, v. 251, 286 note.
Willes, Captain, iii. 36; iv. 113.
Williams, Mr George, viii. 46.
Williamson, Captain, vii. 212 note.
Willis, Captain, v. 154, 158.
Wilson, v. 314 note.
Wilson, Captain, v. 235.
Wilson (Coldstream Guards), v. 261, 402.
Wilson, Dr, 7th Hussars, v. 263 note.
Wilson, John, iv. 114.
Wilson, Private, v. 251.
Wilton, Colonel, v. 400 note.
Wimpfen, Colonel, v. 388, 389, 402, 404, 405; vi. 44 note—his brigade, viii. 106.
Windham, Colonel, iii. 96; v. 81 note, 266—despatch, 237 note.
Windmill Heights, v. 57.
Windmill, the, v. 71 *et seq.*, 74 *et seq.*, 81, 96, 128, 180, 312, 331, 414, 456, 469.
Windmill Ridge, the, v. 106.
Windsor Castle, Council of War at, vii. 237.
Wing, ii. 383.
Winter campaign, problem raised by the memory of the, vi. 449.
Winter, Captain, iv. 222, 229, 317.
Winter in the Crimea during 1854-55, vi. 170.
WINTER TROUBLES, THE: determination of the Allies to winter on the Chersonese Heights, vi. 2—their straitened position, 3—the resources of the country entirely at the command of the enemy, 4—the Allied armies wholly dependent upon supplies brought by sea, 5—the French system of war administration, 6—the English system of military administration as existing before the quarrel with Russia, 12—the Ministry of War and Colonies, 13—the War Office, *ib.*—causes which prevented England from having a real War Department, 15—the Horse Guards, 23—standing compromise between the Horse Guards and the 'Government,' 28—quaint expedient of the Letter of Service, 29—general effect of the standing compromise, 30—the Ordnance, 31—the Victualling and the Transport sub-departments of the Admiralty, 32—the Army Medical Service, *ib.*—the Commissariat, 36—Sir Charles Trevelyan's rapid creation of a Commissariat force for foreign service, 37—duties, powers, and status of a Commissariat force administering to an English army in the field, 39—the old army offices without experience derived from recent campaigns, 41—changes made in our system of war administration, 42—the Duke of Newcastle Secretary of State for War, *ib.*—the authority he exercised, *ib.*—general readiness of the old army offices to act under his guidance, 43—want of official machinery at the disposal of the Duke of Newcastle, *ib.*—his capacity as a war administrator, 44—further changes made in our administrative machinery, 45—the way in which the offices sought to perform the tasks of war administration, 46—the way in which our dispersed system of war administration proved baneful, 51—England's practice of foregoing the aid of her Indian officers and administrators in European war, 52—result of this, *ib.*—our troops tended upon the 'regimental' system, 53—one good service at least our offices had rendered—they had upheld in full vigour our famous time-honoured 'regiments' with the glory of the great days yet clinging to their names, their traditions, their colours, 54.

Our system of war administration at the time of the great conflict with France, 55-91.

The way in which France and England ministered to their armies in the East, 93—conditions under which the supply of the Allied armies proceeded, *ib.*—the phases of the Eastern campaign in their bearing upon the question of supply, *ib.*—the arrangements by which France and England at first undertook to supply their armies in the East, 95—change of measures to which they were subsequently driven, 96—the magnitude of their task, 97—

undue reliance upon the resources afforded by commerce, *ib.*—difficulty of promptly acquiring by purchase all the needed supplies, 98—insufficiency of merchant-vessels, and more especially of steamers, 99—confusion in the Bosphorus, 100—the flow of supplies to the seat of war not at once and completely effected, *ib.*—insufficiency of the steam-power, in its bearing upon the supply of fresh meat and vegetables, 102—the latter stages of supply, 103—as effected by the French, *ib.*—by the English, 104—extreme narrowness of the communication through Balaclava, *ib.*—construction of wharves at Balaclava, 105—roadway between camp and port, *ib.*—question of 'metalling' a road before the 17th October, *ib.*—question of 'metalling' a road after the 17th of October, 111—Lord Raglan's measures with respect to the road by the Col, 114—vain effort made to 'metal' it, 115—vital importance of having a 'metalled' road, 116—question as to how the peril occasioned by the breaking up of the road should have been met, *ib.*—the road between port and camp becoming almost impassable, 120—the means of land-transport declining, *ib.*—want of forage, 121—recourse to England for hay, 122—obstructions there encountered, 123—constitution of the Treasury, 132—the incidence of blame, *ib.*—state of the Allied armies before the hurricane, 134—the food of the French army, *ib.*—the food provided for the English army, 135—the shelter provided for the French army, 140—for the English, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's measures for hutting the troops, *ib.*—warm clothing, 141—provision made by the French for the care of their sick and wounded, 142—by the English, 143—insufficiency of their preparations for the care of the sick and wounded, 144—undue amount of work that perforce was cast upon the English soldiery, 155—their state of health, 157—the cyclone of the 14th of November, 160—Lord Raglan's sense of the disaster, 164—his measures, *ib.*—lasting effect of the hurricane upon the condition of our troops, 166.

The sufferings of the armies during the winter, 168—sufferings of the Russian army, *ib.*—sufferings of the Allied armies, 169—general characteristics of the winter of 1854-55 in the south-west of the Crimea, 170—and of the state of the ground on the Chersonese, *ib.*—the evils inseparable from an attempt to winter the Allied armies without due preparation, *ib.*—the calamity aggravated by 'avertible' evils, 171—the sufferings and losses sustained by the French army, *ib.*—shelter and warm clothing, 172—sufferings from cold, 173—want of fuel, 174—the horses of the French perishing fast from cold and want of food, *ib.*—their means of land-transport crippled, *ib.*—the food of the French army, 175—the advantages the French derived from their numerical strength, 176—difficulties obstructing fair comparison between the French and the English, 178—the French medical statistics, *ib.*—their defective state, 179—the information, however incomplete, which those statistics convey, 180—maladies recording the hardships endured by the French soldiers, 183—frost-bite and scurvy, *ib.*—the sufferings of the French troops caused in great measure by administrative failure, 185—extent to which their sufferings and losses became masked from observers, 186—the transport of the French sick and wounded by sea, 187—good state, at first, of the French hospitals on the Bosphorus, *ib.*—the sufferings of the English army, 188—grievous excess of work that perforce was imposed upon them, *ib.*—the failure of the land-transport power, 190—its effect in adding to the labours of our men, *ib.*—effect of the hurricane upon the plan of having reserves of food in camp, 191—deficiencies in the issue of supplies, *ib.*—the sailors camped on the Chersonese, 193—defective cookery, and its effect on the health of the men, 194—impossibility of hauling up the timber for huts, *ib.*—the warm clothing, 195—carcases of horses left above ground for want of hands to bury them, 198—the limit reached by Lord Raglan in exacting work from his troops, *ib.*—sufferings endured by our troops, 199—sickness of our army, 201—the fortitude of our army, 206—Lord Raglan at this period, 209—the complaints under which our army was suffering, 211—removal of the sick, 212—their sufferings on board the sick-transports, *ib.*—our hospitals in the Levant, 213—mortality in the hospitals on the Bosphorus, 215—the deaths

that took place in our hospitals, *ib.*—comparison impracticable between the effect of the winter on the French and on the English army, 216—recapitulation, *ib.*—the strategic decisions which resulted in obliging the Allies to winter on the Chersonese Heights, 219—critical state of the Allied army, 221—the expedient to which it resorted, 222—Canrobert's means of showing a good countenance to the enemy, *ib.*—Lord Raglan's, 223—danger arising from publicity, 224—character of Lord Raglan's correspondence with the Home Government, 225—effect of the despatches upon the Duke of Newcastle, 226—meeting and adjournment of Parliament, 227—the nation steadfast, 228—impulse given to recruiting by the accounts of Inkerman, *ib.*—action of the press upon the conduct of war, 229-285.

The relations between the Duke of Newcastle and Lord Raglan from February 1854 down to nearly the close of the year, 286—the approaching change, 291—unofficial accounts from the Crimea, *ib.*—their effect upon the Duke of Newcastle, *ib.*—effect of the public anger upon the Duke of Newcastle, 296—the temptations disposing him to throw blame on Lord Raglan and the Headquarter Staff, *ib.*—his colleagues assenting, 299—grounds on which the Government might have been expected to give Lord Raglan a loyal support, *ib.*—the need of finding some one to blame, 302—the process by which Ministers brought their minds to the notion of casting off the blame from themselves, *ib.*—and throwing it on Lord Raglan's Staff officers, *ib.*—the course of action attempted by the Government, 304—their fanciful plan, 305—the Duke of Newcastle executing his plan of attack, 307—the feeling of Lord Raglan upon finding himself and his Staff assailed by the Queen's Government, 309—his answers to the Duke of Newcastle, 310—Ministers balked in their endeavour to sacrifice Lord Raglan's Staff officers, 315—and throwing blame on Lord Raglan himself, *ib.*—yet not meditating his recall, 316—their reason for not recalling him, *ib.*—question why this was not a reason for giving him a loyal support, *ib.*

Motion in House of Commons for a Committee of Enquiry, 317—resignation of Lord Aberdeen's Government, *ib.*—formation of Lord Palmerston's Government, 318—the two displaced Ministers, *ib.*—Lord Aberdeen, *ib.*—the Duke of Newcastle, 319—general import of the change of Ministry, 320—the war measures of the new Government, *ib.*—continued anger of our people, 322—fear that they might usurp a control over the military power, *ib.*—question how the new Government should satisfy the public anger, *ib.*—their determination, *ib.*—Lord Panmure, 323—he is well provided with means for informing himself upon the business of the campaign, 330—his despatch of the 12th February addressing outrageous words to Lord Raglan, 331—can it happily be shown that the Queen did not sanction this document? 333—private letter accompanying the despatch, 335—Lord Raglan's despatch in answer, 337—the injury done to the public service by tasking a general engaged with the enemy to defend himself against his own Government, 343—Lord Panmure's reception of the despatch of 3d March, 344—his despatch in reply, *ib.*—errors marking the despatch, 346—eagerness of the Government, including Lord Panmure, to remove the Headquarter Staff, 347—the difficulty that stood in their way, 348—General Airey, *ib.*—he had become Lord Raglan's 'right-hand man,' 349—course taken by Lord Panmure, *ib.*—appointment of General Simpson, *ib.*—his instructions, *ib.*—his report, 350—his course of action, *ib.*—Lord Panmure's adoption of the report, 351—his letter on the subject to Lord Raglan, *ib.*—the danger thus at length warded off, *ib.*

Secession of the four 'Peelite' Ministers, *ib.*—their successors, 352—effect of the change, *ib.*—the late vote of the Commons, *ib.*—the apprehended dangers of a Committee, 353—the House unwilling to rescind its vote, *ib.*—the Committee appointed, 354—the import of this measure, *ib.*—our Government system brought under reproach, *ib.*—the feeling not appeased by the reassembly of Parliament, 355—violence of the language used in the House of Commons, 356—Mr Roebuck, 357—other prominent members of the Committee, 361—rejection of the motion to make the Committee a 'secret' one, 362—the labours of the Committee, *ib.*—its re-

port, 364—reports concerning the health of the army and care of the sick and wounded, 367—papers of great value on the same subjects presented to our War Department, *ib.*

Proceedings and Report of M'Neill and Sullock, the Commissariat Commissioners, 368—their 'animadversions' used as a ground for reviving the attacks of the previous year, 370.

Enquiry demanded and granted, *ib.*—constitution of the Court of Enquiry, 371—its proceedings at Chelsea, *ib.*—the report of the Board on the 'animadversions,' 375—and on the question of the road, *ib.*—the now cleared and narrowed state of the controversy respecting the cause of the 'avertible' sufferings, 376—the wide import of a question which in terms only challenged Mr Filder, 377—the part of the Report in which the Board showed the cause of the 'avertible' sufferings, *ib.*

Acquiescence of the State in this decision, 378—vast accumulation of authentic materials for forming a judgment as to the cause of the sufferings, 379.

The Allied armies after mid-winter recovering health and strength, 383—the French losses much more than compensated by reinforcements, *ib.*—the English, 384—their long continued want of the hands required for making a road, *ib.*—road made at last by our men from Balaclava to Kadiköi, *ib.*—and by Bosquet's troops to the Col, *ib.*—the railway, 385—the land-transport train under M'Murdo, *ib.*—our army at last relieved by the French from some portion of its toil, 388—supplies of warm clothing, 389—the endeavour to place our army under huts, 390—this proved to be for the time a mistaken measure, *ib.*—other wants supplied, 391—symptoms of improvement discerned by Lord Raglan and others, *ib.*—the Crimean Army Fund, 392—administered by Tower and Egerton, *ib.*—after 22d February, decisive improvement in the health of our army, 405—restored health and strength of our army, 406.

Sequel of the dispositions made by the French and English for the care of their sick and wounded, 407—the French hospitals, *ib.*—allusion to the causes of maladministration in the English hospitals, *ib.*—the nature of the task in hand, *ib.*—accession of a new power, 408—the aid proffered by Woman, and accepted by the State, *ib.*—Miss Stanley, 411—the hospital at Kullali, 413—the one at Smyrna, 416—hospitals in the Crimea, *ib.*—the reinforcement of brain-power brought by Woman, 417—her accession on the 4th of November 1854, 418—the Lady-in-Chief, *ib.*—the sources and growth of her power, 420—the aid she received from Mr Macdonald and the 'Times' fund, 430—the untiring zeal of our medical officers, 435—their power to heal and to cure greatly strengthened by the authority of the Lady-in-Chief, 436—the result of her sway, 438—undesigned trial of brain-power and speed between Man and Woman, 439—the mortality in our hospitals not yet, however, forced down, 445—the sanitary commissioners, 446—the change they wrought, 447—thoughts that memory ought not to shun, 448—problem raised by the memory of the winter campaign, 449.

Wodehouse's, Captain, battery, v. 485.

Wolff, Lieutenant, iv. 76.

Wollocombe, Lieutenant, ii. 313.

Wolseley, Captain, now General Viscount, viii. 117, 118—in the attack of 'the Quarries,' his ceaseless exertions (though wounded), first in Engineer work, and then in combat, 122, 123—toiling at the side of his chief, Colonel Campbell, to maintain that bare show of resistance which (aided by fortune) proved victorious, *ib.*—his prostrate state after the fight, 124, 125.

Wolseley (brother of the Captain), at Inkerman, his improvised charge, v. 276, 280 note—the survivors of his charge, 287.

Wombell, Cornet, iv. 222.

Wombwell, Sir George, iv. 210, 225—the escape of, 310, 316.

Wood, Colonel David, v. 139.

Wood, Mr, his account of the scene of the Bay of Baljik, ii. 149 note.

Woodford, General Sir Alexander, vi. 671.

Woodhouse, Captain, v. 183 note.

Workmen, number of, employed by Russians, vii. 10—by Allies, *ib.*, 351.

Woronzoff Gorge, viii. 163, 194.

Woronzoff Height, the, iii. 303, 305, 312, 351, 368, 469, 472.

Woronzoff, Prince, iv. 4 note.

Woronzoff, Ridge, sorties against English siege works on, vii. 89—Colonel Kelly's

dispositions to meet attack, 90—charge by Captain Vicars, 93—defeat of the Russians, *ib.*—fighting renewed, 95—Colonel Kelly takes his measures, *ib.*—is wounded and taken prisoner, 96—means of resistance collected, 97—fights at the Mortar Battery, 98—the enemy defeated, *ib.*, 102, 103, 110 *et seq.*, 114, 153, 161.
Woronzoff road, the, iii. 97, 286 *et seq.*; iv. 32, 63, 66, 83, 178 note, 333, 340; v. 19, 25, 39, 97; vi. 3, 109, 114, 219, 262.
Worthington, Captain, ii. 382.
Wrangel, General Baron, forces in neighbourhood of Eupatoria under, vii. 46—in his stead Khrouleff afterwards ordered to attack Eupatoria, 49—his command in the Kertchine Peninsula, 251, 252; viii. 40—his retreat, 42—his destruction of his coast batteries, 43—his destruction of food, 44, 57, 82.
Wright, Archdeacon, chaplain of the forces at Lord Raglan's death, viii. 280.
Wulff, Rear-Admiral, viii. 44—he burns some vessels of his squadron, 45—he moves away to the Sea of Azof, 46, 64, 82.
Wynn, ii. 382.
Wynne, Captain, v. 245.

Yates, Captain, v. 4 note.
Yea, Lacy, Colonel, ii. 312—his Fusileers, 335 *et seq.*—the Kazan column fights with his Fusileers, 339, 384, 389 note, 421—his obstinate conflict, 422—his traits as an officer, 423 *et seq.*—Russian denial of Yea conflict, 432 note; v. 85 note; vi. 196; viii. 164, 181—strength of the column moving with him, 182—the fire incurred by this column, *ib.*—his advance to the abattis, 186—his death, 187—the loss of, 189—Lord Raglan's despatch on the loss of, 190.
Yelverton, Captain, v. 358.
Yeni Kale, viii. 43, 45, 47, 49 *et seq.*, 58.
Yetsa, ii. 155.
Yonge, Duke D., iii. 442.
Yorke, Colonel, iv. 144, 282, 283 note.
Young, ii. 382.
Young, Mr, vi. 165 note.
Yusuf, General, iii. 108 note.

Zabalkansky Battery, viii. 91, 94, 97, 99, 102.
Zarogodnaia Ravine, the, viii. 20 *et seq.*
Zavalichine, Enseigne, in Khrouleff's night attack vii. 88—French firmness in attack of, 89 and note—flank movement by, at Woronzoff Ridge, 92—defeat of, 94.
Zorin, Captain, iii. 145.
Zouave regiments, the character of, ii. 406—at the Alma, 405, 406, 407—Prince Napoleon abandoned in the midst of the battle by his, 406—at Inkerman, brave truants from one of the, charging and recapturing English guns, v. 325—the impetuous, warlike demeanour of one coming into the battle, 390—its triumphant charge, 403 *et seq.*—the sway they held over opinion amongst the French soldiery, viii. 295—their faith Lord Raglan was the true man of them they would choose to lead them in battle, *ib.*

THE END.

PRINTED BY WILLIAM BLACKWOOD AND SONS.

00029993

V
(HK).
29793

Digitized with financial assistance from
Hemendra Kothari
on 06 November, 2019